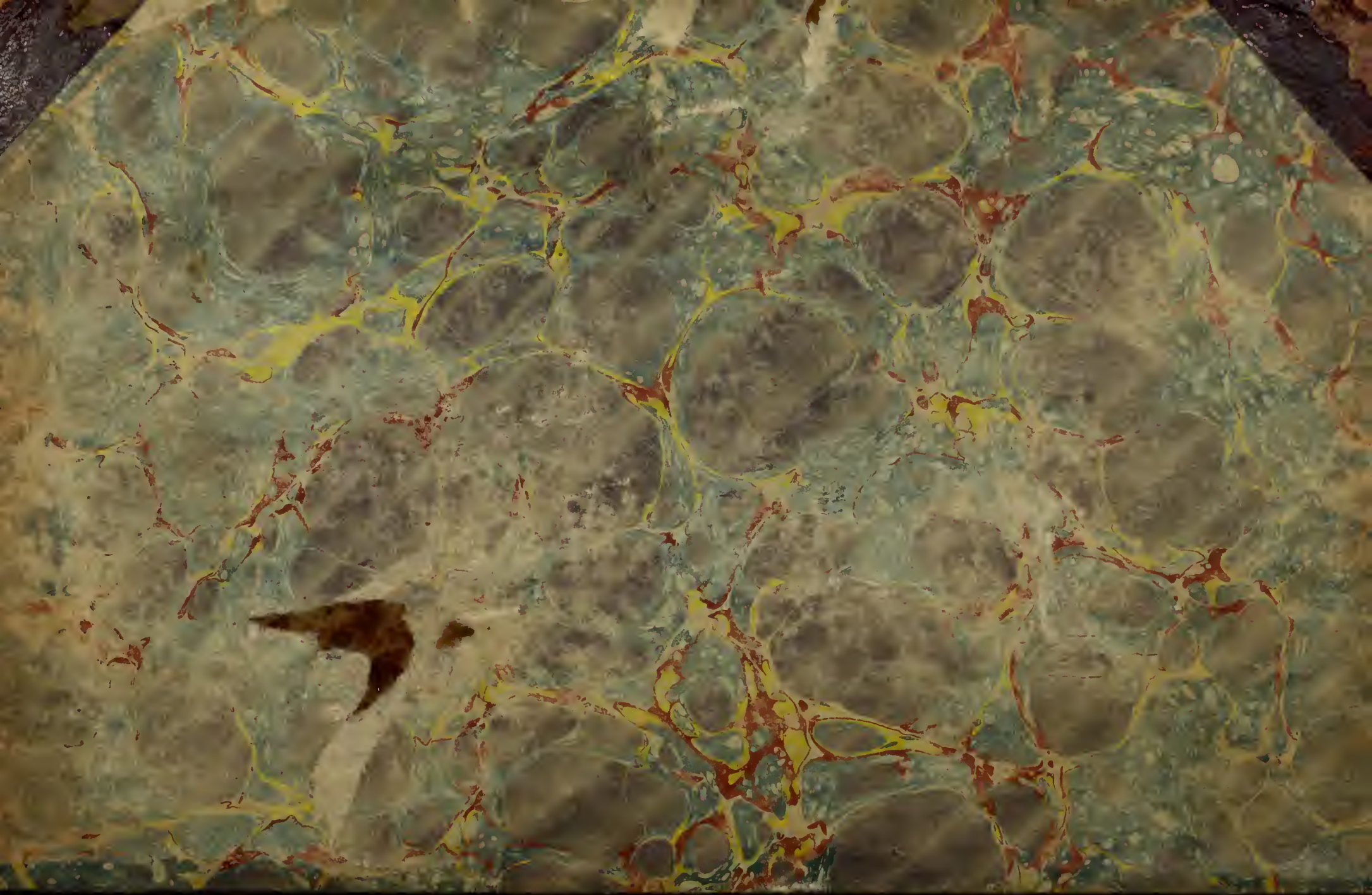


Harry Bulteel Harris.

Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2014

https://archive.org/details/worksofshakespea04shak_4

THE

WORKS

OF

Mr *WILLIAM SHAKESPEAR.*

VOLUME *the* FOURTH.

CONSISTING OF

HISTORICAL PLAYS.

LONDON:

Printed for JACOB TONSON in the *Strand.*

M DCC XXIII.

Shakesp
PR
2752
P6
1723
v. 4

PLAYS *contain'd in this Volume.*

KING *HENRY* VI. Part I.
KING *HENRY* VI. Part II.
KING *HENRY* VI. Part III.
KING *RICHARD* III.
KING *HENRY* VIII.

The First Part of

HENRY

THE

SIXTH.

Dramatis Perſonæ.

KING Henry VI.
Duke of Glouceſter, *Uncle to the King, and Protector.*
Duke of Bedford, *Uncle to the King, and Regent of* France.
Cardinal Beaufort, *Biſhop of* Wincheſter, *and Uncle likewiſe to the King.*
Duke of Exeter.
Duke of Somerſet.
Earl of Warwick.
Earl of Salisbury.
Earl of Suffolk.
Lord Talbot.
Young Talbot, *his Son.*
Richard Plantagenet, *afterwards Duke of* York.
Mortimer, *Earl of* March.
Woodvile, *Lieutenant of the* Tower.
Lord Mayor of London.
Vernon, *of the* White Roſe, *or* York *Faction.*
Baſſet, *of the* Red Roſe, *or* Lancaſter *Faction.*

Charles, *Dauphin, and afterwards King of* France.
Reignier, *Duke of* Anjou, *and Titular King of* Naples.
Duke of Burgundy.
Duke of Alanſon.
Baſtard of Orleans.
An old Shepherd, Father to Joan la Pucelle.

Margaret, *Daughter to* Reignier, *and afterwards Queen to King* Henry.
Joan la Pucelle, *a Maid pretending to be inſpir'd from Heaven, and ſetting up for the Championeſs of* France.
Counteſs of Auvergne.

Lords, Captains, Soldiers, Meſſengers, and ſeveral Attendants both on the Engliſh *and* French.

The SCENE *is partly in* England, *and partly in* France.

The

The First Part of King *HENRY* VI.

ACT I. SCENE I.

Dead March. Enter the Funeral of King Henry *the Fifth, attended on by the Duke of* Bedford, *Regent of* France; *the Duke of* Glouceſter, *Protector*; *the Duke of* Exeter, *and the Earl of* Warwick, *the Biſhop of* Wincheſter, *and the Duke of* Somerſet.

BEDFORD.

UNG be the heav'ns with black, yield day to night!
Comets, importing change of times and ſtates,
Brandiſh your cryſtal treſſes in the ſky,
And with them ſcourge the bad revolting ſtars
That have conſented unto *Henry*'s death:
Henry the Fifth, too famous to live long,
England ne'er loſt a King of ſo much worth.

Glou. England ne'er had a King until his time:
Virtue he had, deſerving to command.
His brandiſh'd ſword did blind men with its beams;
His arms ſpread wider than a Dragon's wings;
His ſparkling eyes repleat with awful fire
More dazled and drove back his enemies
Than mid-day ſun fierce bent againſt their faces.

What

What ſhould I ſay? his deeds exceed all ſpeech:
He never lifted up his hand but conquer'd.

Exe. We mourn in black, why mourn we not in blood?
Henry is dead, and never ſhall revive:
Upon a wooden coffin we attend;
And death's diſhonourable victory
We with our ſtately preſence glorifie,
Like captives bound to a triumphant car.
What? ſhall we curſe the planets of miſhap,
That plotted thus our glory's overthrow?
Or ſhall we think the ſubtle-witted *French*
Conj'rers and ſorc'rers, that afraid of him
By magick verſe have thus contriv'd his end?

Win. He was a King, bleſt of the King of Kings.
Unto the *French*, the dreadful judgment-day
So dreadful will not be as was his ſight.
The battels of the lord of hoſts he fought;
The church's pray'rs made him ſo proſperous.

Glou. The church? where is it? had not church-men pray'd,
His thread of life had not ſo ſoon decay'd.
None do you like but an effeminate Prince,
Whom like a ſchool-boy you may over-awe.

Win. *Glo'ſter*, whate'er we like, thou art Protector.
And lookeſt to command the Prince and realm;
Thy wife is proud, ſhe holdeth thee in awe,
More than God or religious church-men may.

Glou. Name not religion, for thou lov'ſt the fleſh,
And ne'er throughout the year to church thou go'ſt,
Except it be to pray againſt thy foes.

Bed. Ceaſe, ceaſe theſe jars, and reſt your minds in peace:
Let's to the altar: heralds, wait on us;
Inſtead of gold we'll offer up our arms,
Since arms avail not now that *Henry*'s dead.

Poſterity await for wretched years,
When at their mothers moiſt eyes babes ſhall ſuck,
Our iſle be made a [a] mariſh of ſalt tears,
And none but women left to 'wail the dead.
Henry the Fifth! thy ghoſt I invocate;
Proſper this realm, keep it from civil broils,
Combat with adverſe planets in the heavens;
A far more glorious ſtar thy ſoul will make
Than *Julius Cæſar*, or bright----- †

SCENE II.

Enter a Meſſenger.

Meſſ. My honourable lords, health to you all;
Sad tidings bring I to you out of *France*,
Of loſs, of ſlaughter, and diſcomfiture;
Guienne, *Champaign*, and *Rheims*, and *Orleans*,
Paris, *Guyſors*, *Poictiers*, are all quite loſt.

Bed. What ſay'ſt thou man, before dead *Henry*'s coarſe?
Speak ſoftly, or the loſs of thoſe great towns
Will make him burſt his lead, and riſe from death.

Glou. Is *Paris* loſt, and *Roan* yielded up?
If *Henry* were recall'd to life again,
Theſe news would cauſe him once more yield the ghoſt.

Exe. How were they loſt? what treachery was us'd?

Meſſ. No treachery, but want of men and mony.
Amongſt the ſoldiers this is muttered,
That here you maintain ſev'ral factions;
And whilſt a field ſhould be diſpatch'd and fought,

You

[a] *nouriſh.*

† *I can't gueſs the occaſion of the Hemyſtic, and imperfect ſenſe, in this place; 'tis not impoſſible it might have been fill'd up with*—Francis Drake—*tho' that were a terrible Anachroniſm (as bad as* Hector's *quoting* Ariſtotle *in* Troil. *and* Creſs.*) yet perhaps, at the time that brave Engliſhman was in his glory, to an* Engliſh-*hearted audience, and pronounced by ſome favourite Actor, the thing might be popular, though not judicious; and therefore by ſome Critick, in favour of the author, afterwards ſtruck out. But this is a meer ſlight conjecture.*

You are disputing of your generals.
One would have lingring wars with little cost;
Another would fly swift, but wanteth wings:
A third man thinks, without expence at all
By guileful fair words peace may be obtain'd.
Awake, awake, *English* nobility,
Let not sloth dim your honours, new-begot;
Crop'd are the Flower-de-luces in your arms,
Of *England*'s coat one half is cut away.

Exe. Were our tears wanting to this funeral,
These tidings would call forth † her flowing tides.

Bed. Me they concern, Regent I am of *France*;
Give me my steeled coat, I'll fight for *France*.
Away with these disgraceful, wailing robes;
Wounds I will lend the *French*, instead of eyes,
To weep their intermissive miseries.

SCENE III.

Enter to them another Messenger.

2 *Mess.* Lords, view these letters, full of bad mischance.
France is revolted from the *English* quite,
Except some petty towns of no import.
The Dauphin *Charles* is crowned King in *Rheimes*,
The bastard *Orleans* with him is join'd:
Reignier Duke of *Anjou* doth take his part,
The Duke of *Alanson* flies to his side. [*Exit.*

Exe. The Dauphin crowned King? all fly to him?
O, whither shall we fly from this reproach?

Glou. We will not fly but to our enemies throats.
Bedford, if thou be slack, I'll fight it out.

Bed. Glo'ster, why doubt'st thou of my forwardness?
An army have I muster'd in my thoughts,
Wherewith already *France* is over-run.

SCENE

† *England*'s.

SCENE IV.

Enter a Third Meſſenger.

3 *Meſſ.* My gracious lords, to add to your laments
Wherewith you now bedew King *Henry*'s hearſe,
I muſt inform you of a diſmal fight
Betwixt the ſtout lord *Talbot* and the *French*.

Wm. What! wherein *Talbot* overcame? is't ſo?

3 *Meſſ.* O no; wherein lord *Talbot* was o'erthrown.
The circumſtance I'll tell you more at large.
The tenth of *Auguſt* laſt, this dreadful lord
Retiring from the ſiege of *Orleans*,
Having ſcarce full ſix thouſand in his troop,
By three and twenty thouſand of the *French*
Was round encompaſſed and ſet upon.
No leiſure had he to enrank his men;
He wanted pikes to ſet before his archers;
Inſtead whereof ſharp ſtakes pluckt out of hedges
They pitched in the ground confuſedly,
To keep the horſemen off from breaking in.
More than three hours the fight continued;
Where valiant *Talbot* above human thought
Enacted wonders with his ſword and lance.
Hundreds he ſent to hell, and none durſt ſtand him,
Here, there, and every where, enrag'd he flew.
The *French* exclaim'd, the devil was in arms,
All the whole army ſtood agaz'd on him.
His ſoldiers ſpying his undaunted ſpirit,
A *Talbot! Talbot!* cried out amain,
And ruſh'd into the bowels of the battel.
Here had the conqueſt fully been ſeal'd up,
† If Sir *John Falſtaff* had not play'd the coward,

† *See the note on the fifth Scene of Act* 3.

He being in the vaward, (plac'd behind
With purpoſe to relieve and follow them)
Cowardly fled, not having ſtruck one ſtroak.
Hence grew the gen'ral wrack and maſſacre;
Encloſed were they with their enemies.
A baſe *Walloon*, to win the Dauphin's grace,
Thruſt *Talbot* with a ſpear into the back,
Whom all *France* with their chief aſſembled ſtrength
Durſt not preſume to look once in the face.

Bed. Is *Talbot* ſlain then? I will ſlay my ſelf,
For living idly here in pomp and eaſe;
Whilſt ſuch a worthy leader wanting aid,
Unto his daſtard foe-men is betray'd.

3 *Meſſ.* O no, he lives, but is took priſoner,
And lord *Scales* with him, and lord *Hungerford*;
Moſt of the reſt ſlaughter'd or took likewiſe.

Bed. His ranſom there is none but I ſhall pay.
I'll hale the Dauphin headlong from his throne,
His crown ſhall be the ranſom of my friend:
Four of their lords I'll change for one of ours.
Farewel my maſters, to my task will I;
Bonfires in *France* forthwith I am to make,
To keep our great St. *George*'s feaſt withal.
Ten thouſand ſoldiers with me I will take,
Whoſe bloody deeds ſhall make all *Europe* quake.

3 *Meſſ.* So you had need, for *Orleans* is beſieg'd,
The *Engliſh* army is grown weak and faint:
The Earl of *Salisbury* craveth ſupply,
And hardly keeps his men from mutiny,
Since they ſo few watch ſuch a multitude.

Exe. Remember lords your oaths to *Henry* ſworn:
Either to quell the Dauphin utterly,
Or bring him in obedience to your yoak.

Bed.

Bed. I do remember it, and here take leave,
To go about my preparation. [*Exit* Bedford.
Glou. I'll to the *Tower* with all the haſte I can,
To view th' artillery and amunition,
And then I will proclaim young *Henry* King. [*Ex.* Glouceſter.
Exe. To *Eltam* will I, where the young King is,
Being ordain'd his ſpecial governor,
And for his ſafety there I'll beſt deviſe. [*Exit.*
Win. Each hath his place and function to attend:
I am left out; for me nothing remains:
But long I will not be thus out of office:
The King from *Eltam* I intend to ſend,
And ſit at chiefeſt ſtern of publick weal. [*Exit.*

SCENE V.

FRANCE.

Enter Charles, Alanſon, *and* Reignier, *marching with a drum and Soldiers.*

Char. MARS his true moving, ev'n as in the heav'ns
So in the earth to this day is not known.
Late did he ſhine upon the *Engliſh* ſide:
Now we are victors, upon us he ſmiles.
What towns of any moment but we have?
At pleaſure here we lye near *Orleans:*
[b] Tho' ſtill the famiſh'd *Engliſh* like pale ghoſts
Faintly beſiege us one hour in a month.
Alan. They want their porridge, and their fat Bull-beeves,
Either they muſt be dieted like mules
And have their provender ty'd to their mouths,
Or piteous they will look like drowned mice.

[b] *Otherwhiles.*

Talbot is taken, whom we wont to fear:
Remaineth none but mad-brain'd *Salisbury*,
And he may well in fretting spend his gall,
Nor men nor mony hath he to make war.

Char. Sound, sound alarum: we will rush on them:
Now for the honour of the forlorn *French:*
Him I forgive my death that killeth me;
When he sees me go back one foot or fly. [*Exeunt.*

[*Here alarm, they are beaten back by the* English, *with great loss.*

Enter Charles, Alanson, *and* Reignier.

Char. Who ever saw the like? what men have I?
Dogs, cowards, dastards! I would ne'er have fled,
But that they left me 'midst my enemies.

Reig. *Salisbury* is a desp'rate homicide,
He fighteth as one weary of his life:
Two other lords, like Lions wanting food,
Do rush upon us as their hungry prey.

Alan. *Froysard* a countryman of ours records,
England all *Olivers* and *Rowlands* bred,
During the time *Edward* the Third did reign:
More truly now may this be verified;
For none but *Sampsons* and *Goliasses*
It sendeth forth to skirmish; one to ten!
Lean raw-bon'd rascals! who would e'er suppose
They had such courage and audacity!

Char. Let's leave this town, for they are hair-brain'd slaves,
And hunger will enforce them be more eager:
Of old I know them; rather with their teeth
The walls they'll tear down, than forsake the siege.

Reig. I think by some odd † gimmals or device
Their arms are set like clocks, still to strike on;
Else they could ne'er hold out so as they do:

By

† Gimmals, *are rings of double rounds, from* gemelli. *Wheels one within another.*

By my conſent we'll e'en let them alone.

Alan. Be it ſo.

Enter the Baſtard of Orleans.

Baſt. Where's the Prince Dauphin? I have news for him.

Dau. Baſtard of *Orleans*, thrice welcome to us.

Baſt. Methinks your looks are ſad, your chear appal'd.
Hath the late overthrow wrought this offence?
Be not diſmay'd, for ſuccour is at hand:
A holy maid hither with me I bring,
Which by a viſion ſent to her from heav'n
Ordained is to raiſe this tedious ſiege,
And drive the *Engliſh* forth the bounds of *France*.
The ſpirit of deep propheſie ſhe hath,
Exceeding the nine *Sibyls* of old *Rome:*
What's paſt and what's to come ſhe can deſcry.
Speak, ſhall I call her in? believe my words,
For they are certain and infallible.

Dau. Go call her in; but firſt to try her skill,
Reignier ſtand thou as Dauphin in my place;
Queſtion her proudly, let thy looks be ſtern:
By this means ſhall we ſound what skill ſhe hath.

SCENE VI.

Enter Joan la Pucelle.

Reig. Fair maid, is't thou wilt do theſe wond'rous feats?

Pucel. Reignier, is't thou that thinkeſt to beguile me?
Where is the Dauphin? come, come from behind,
I know thee well, though never ſeen before.
Be not amaz'd: there's nothing hid from me:
In private will I talk with thee apart:
Stand back, you lords, and give us leave awhile.

Reig.

Reig. She takes upon her bravely at first dash.

Pucel. Dauphin, I am by birth a shepherd's daughter,
My wit untrain'd in any kind of art:
Heav'n, and our Lady gracious hath it pleas'd
To shine on my contemptible estate.
Lo, whilst I waited on my tender lambs,
And to suns parching heat display'd my cheeks,
God's mother deigned to appear to me.
And in a vision full of majesty
Will'd me to leave my base vocation,
And free my country from calamity:
Her aid she promis'd, and assur'd success.
In compleat glory she reveal'd her self;
And whereas I was black and swart before,
With those clear rays which she infus'd on me,
That beauty am I blest with which you see.
Ask me what question thou canst possible,
And I will answer unpremeditated.
My courage try by combat, if thou dar'st,
And thou shalt find that I exceed my sex.
Resolve on this, thou shalt be fortunate
If thou receive me for thy warlike mate.

Dau. Thou hast astonish'd me with thy high terms:
Only this proof I'll of thy valour make,
In single combat thou shalt buckle with me;
And if thou vanquishest, thy words are true,
Otherwise I renounce all confidence.

Pucel. I am prepar'd; here is my keen-edg'd sword,
Deck'd with fine Flow'r-de-luces on each side,
The which at *Tourain* in St. *Katharine*'s church
Out of a deal of old iron I chose forth.

Dau. Then come a God's name, for I fear no woman.

Pucel. And while I live, I'll ne'er fly from a man.

Here

Here they fight, and Joan de Pucelle *overcomes.*

Dau. Stay, ſtay thy hands, thou art an *Amazon*,
And fighteſt with the ſword of *Debora*.

Pucel. Chriſt's mother helps me, elſe I were too weak.

Dau. Who-e'er helps thee, 'tis thou that muſt help me:
Impatiently I burn with thy deſire,
My heart and hands thou haſt at once ſubdu'd,
Excellent *Pucelle*, if thy name be ſo,
Let me thy ſervant and not Soveraign be,
'Tis the *French* Dauphin ſueth to thee thus.

Pucel. I muſt not yield to any rites of love,
For my profeſſion's ſacred from above:
When I have chaſed all thy foes from hence,
Then will I think upon a recompence.

Dau. Mean time look gracious on thy proſtrate thrall.

Reig. My lord methinks is very long in talk.

Alan. Doubtleſs he ſhrives this woman to her ſmock,
Elſe ne'er could he ſo long protract his ſpeech.

Reig. Shall we diſturb him ſince he keeps no mean?

Alan. He may mean more than we poor men do know:
Theſe women are ſhrewd tempters with their tongues.

Reig. My lord, where are you? what deviſe you on?
Shall we give over *Orleans* or no?

Pucel. Why no, I ſay; diſtruſtful recreants.
Fight 'till the laſt gaſp; for I'll be your guard.

Dau. What ſhe ſays I'll confirm; we'll fight it out.

Pucel. Aſſign'd I am to be the *Engliſh* ſcourge.
This night the ſiege aſſuredly I'll raiſe:
Expect Saint *Martin*'s ſummer, *Halcyon* days,
Since I have enter'd thus into theſe wars.
' Glory is like a circle in the water;
' Which never ceaſeth to enlarge it ſelf,
' 'Till by broad ſpreading it diſperſe to nought.

With

With *Henry*'s death the *English* circle ends,
Dispersed are the glories it included:
Now am I like that proud insulting ship,
Which *Cæsar* and his fortune bore at once.

Dau. Was *Mahomet* inspired with a Dove?
Thou with an Eagle art inspired then.
Helen the mother of great *Constantine*,
Nor yet St. *Philip*'s daughters, were like thee.
Bright star of *Venus* fall'n down on the earth,
How may I reverently worship thee?

Alan. Leave off delays, and let us raise the siege.

Reig. Woman, do what thou canst to save our honours,
Drive them from *Orleans*, and be immortaliz'd.

Dau. Presently try: come, let's away about it.
No prophet will I trust if she proves false. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

Changes to London.

Enter Gloucester, *with his Serving-men.*

Glou. I Am this day come to survey the *Tower*;
Since *Henry*'s death I fear there is conveyance:
Where be these warders, that they wait not here?
Open the gates. 'Tis *Gloucester* that calls.

1 *Ward.* Who's there that knocks so imperiously?

1 *Man.* It is the noble Duke of *Gloucester*.

2 *Ward.* Who e'er he be, you may not be let in.

1 *Man.* Villains, answer you so the Lord Protector?

1 *Ward.* The Lord protect him, so we answer him,
We do no otherwise than we are will'd.

Glou. Who willed you? or whose will stands but mine?

There's

There's none Protector of the realm but I.
Break up the gates, I'll be your warrantize;
Shall I be flouted thus by dunghil grooms?

Glouceſter's *men ruſh at the* Tower *gates, and* Woodvile *the Lieutenant ſpeaks within.*

Wood. What noiſe is this? what traitors have we here?
Glou. Lieutenant, is it you whoſe voice I hear?
Open the gates, here's *Glo'ſter* that would enter.
Wood. Have patience, noble Duke; I may not open;
The cardinal of *Wincheſter* forbids;
From him I have expreſs commandment,
That thou, nor none of thine ſhall be let in.
Glou. Faint-hearted *Woodvile*, prizeſt him 'fore me?
Arrogant *Wincheſter*, the haughty prelate,
Whom *Henry* our late Soveraign ne'er could brook?
Thou art no friend to God or to the King:
Open the gate, or I'll ſhut thee out ſhortly.
Serv. Open the gates there to the Lord Protector,
We'll burſt them open if you come not quickly.

Enter to the Protector at the Tower *gates,* Wincheſter *and his men in tawny coats.*

Win. How now ambitious umpire, what means this?
Glou. † Piel'd Prieſt, doſt thou command me be ſhut out?
Win. I do, thou moſt uſurping proditor,
And not protector of the King or realm.
Glou. Stand back thou manifeſt conſpirator,
Thou that contriv'd'ſt to murder our dead lord,
Thou that giv'ſt † whores indulgencies to ſin;
I'll canvaſs thee in thy broad Cardinal's hat,

† Peel'd, *alluding to his ſhaven crown, a metaphor from a peel'd orange.*
† *The publick ſtews were formerly under the diſtrict of the Biſhop of* Wincheſter.

If thou proceed in this thy insolence.

Win. Nay, stand thou back, I will not budge a foot:
This be † *Damascus*, be thou cursed *Cain*,
To slay thy brother *Abel* if thou wilt. *

Here Gloucester's *men beat out the Cardinal's; and enter in the hurly-burly the Mayor of* London, *and his officers.*

Mayor. Fie, lords, that you being supreme magistrates,
Thus contumeliously should break the peace.

Glou. Peace Mayor, for thou know'st little of my wrongs:
Here's *Beauford* that regards not God nor King,
Hath here distrain'd the *Tower* to his use.

Win. Here's *Glo'ster* too, a foe to citizens,
One that still motions war, and never peace,
O'er-charging your free purses with large fines;
That seeks to overthrow religion,
Because he is Protector of the realm;
And would have armour here out of the *Tower*,
To crown himself King, and suppress the Prince.

† Damascus. *N. B. About four miles from* Damascus *is a high hill, reported to be the same on which* Cain *slew his brother* Abel. Maundr. *Trav. p.* 131.

*——— if thou wilt.

Glou. I will not slay thee, but I'll drive thee back:
Thy scarlet robes, as a child's bearing cloth,
I'll use to carry thee out of this place.

Win. Do what thou dar'st, I beard thee to thy face.

Glou. What? am I dar'd, and bearded to my face?
Draw men for all this privileged place.
Blue coats to tawny. Priest, beware thy beard,
I mean to tug it, and to cuff you soundly.
Under my feet I'll stamp thy Cardinal's hat:
In spight of Pope or dignities of church,
Here by the cheeks I'll drag thee up and down.

Win. Glo'ster, thou'lt answer this before the Pope.

Glou. Winchester Goose, I cry a rope, a rope.
Now beat them hence, why do you let them stay?
Thee I'll chase hence, thou Wolf in Sheep's array.
Out tawny coats, out scarlet hypocrite.
Here Gloucester's ———

Glou.

Glou. I will not anſwer thee with words, but blows.
[*Here they skirmiſh again.*

Mayor. Nought reſts for me in this tumultuous ſtrife,
But to make open proclamation.
Come, officer, as loud as e'er thou canſt.

All manner of men aſſembled here in arms this day, againſt God's peace and the King's, we charge and command you in his Highneſs name, to repair to your ſeveral dwelling places, and not to wear, handle, or uſe any ſword, weapon, or dagger henceforward, upon pain of death.

Glou. Cardinal, I'll be no breaker of the law:
But we ſhall meet, and tell our minds at large.
Win. Glo'ſter, we'll meet to thy dear coſt be ſure;
Thy heart-blood I will have for this day's work.
Mayor. I'll call for clubs, if you will not away:
This Cardinal is more haughty than the devil.
Glou. Mayor, farewel: thou doſt but what thou may'ſt.
Win. Abominable *Glo'ſter*, guard thy head,
For I intend to have it ere be long. [*Exeunt.*
Mayor. See the coaſt clear'd, and then we will depart.
Good God! that nobles ſhould ſuch ſtomachs bear!
I my ſelf fight not once in forty year. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VIII.

Changes to Orleans, *in* France.

Enter the Maſter-gunner of Orleans, *and his Boy.*

M. Gun. SIRRA, thou know'ſt how *Orleans* is beſieg'd,
And how the *Engliſh* have the ſuburbs won.
Boy. Father I know, and oft have ſhot at them,
How e'er unfortunate I miſs'd my aim.

M. Gun. But now thou ſhalt not. Be thou rul'd by me:
Chief Maſter-gunner am I of this town,
Something I muſt do to procure me grace.
The Prince's 'ſpials have informed me,
The *Engliſh* in the ſuburbs cloſe intrench'd
Went through a ſecret grate of iron bars,
In yonder tow'r, to over-peer the city,
And thence diſcover how with moſt advantage
They may vex us, with ſhot or with aſſault.
To intercept this inconvenience,
A piece of ord'nance 'gainſt it I have plac'd,
And fully ev'n theſe three days have I watch'd
If I could ſee them. Now, boy, do thou watch.
If thou ſpy'ſt any, run and bring me word,
And thou ſhalt find me at the governor's. [*Exit.*

Boy. Father, I warrant you take you no care,
I'll never trouble you if I may ſpy them.

SCENE IX.

Enter Salisbury *and* Talbot *on the turrets, with others.*

Sal. Talbot, my life, my joy, again return'd?
How wert thou handled, being priſoner?
Or by what means got'ſt thou to be releas'd?
Diſcourſe I pr'ythee on this turret's top.

Tal. The Earl of *Bedford* had a priſoner,
Called the brave lord *Ponton de Santraile*,
For him was I exchang'd and ranſomed.
But with a baſer man of arms by far,
Once, in contempt, they would have barter'd me:
Which I diſdaining ſcorn'd, and craved death,
Rather than I would be ſo [c] vilde eſteem'd.
In fine, redeem'd I was as I deſir'd.

But

[c] *pil'd.*

But O, the treach'rous *Falſtaff* wounds my heart,
Whom with my bare fiſts I would execute,
If I now had him brought into my pow'r.
Sal. Yet tell'ſt thou not how thou wert entertain'd.
Tal. With ſcoffs and ſcorns, and contumelious taunts,
In open market place produc'd they me,
To be a publick ſpectacle to all.
Here, ſaid they, is the terror of the *French*,
The Scare-crow that affrights our children ſo.
Then broke I from the officers that led me,
And with my nails digg'd ſtones out of the ground,
To hurl at the beholders of my ſhame.
My griſly countenance made others fly,
None durſt come near for fear of ſudden death.
In iron walls they deem'd me not ſecure:
So great a fear my name amongſt them ſpread,
That they ſuppos'd I could rend bars of ſteel,
And ſpurn in pieces poſts of adamant.
Wherefore a guard of choſen ſhot I had;
They walk'd about me ev'ry minute-while;
And if I did but ſtir out of my bed,
Ready they were to ſhoot me to the heart.
Sal. I grieve to hear what torments you endur'd,
But we will be reveng'd ſufficiently.
Now it is ſupper time in *Orleans:*
Here through this grate I can count every one,
And view the *Frenchmen* how they fortifie:
Let us look in, the ſight will much delight thee.
Sir *Thomas Gargrave*, and Sir *William Glanſdale*,
Let me have your expreſs opinions,
Where is beſt place to make our batt'ry next?
Gar. I think at the north gate, for there ſtand lords.
Glan. And I here, at the bulwark of the bridge.

Tal.

Tal. For ought I ſee this city muſt be famiſh'd,
Or with light skirmiſhes enfeebled.

[*Here they ſhoot, and* Salisbury *falls down.*

Sal. O lord have mercy on us, wretched ſinners.

Gar. O lord have mercy on me, woful man.

Tal. What chance is this that ſuddenly hath croſt us?
Speak, *Salisbury*; at leaſt if thou canſt ſpeak;
How far'ſt thou, mirror of all martial men?
One of thy eyes and thy cheeks ſide ſtruck off!
Accurſed tow'r, accurſed fatal hand
That hath contriv'd this woful tragedy!
In thirteen battels *Salisbury* o'ercame:
Henry the Fifth he firſt train'd to the wars.
Whilſt any trump did ſound, or drum ſtruck up,
His ſword did ne'er leave ſtriking in the field.
Yet liv'ſt thou, *Salisb'ry?* though thy ſpeech doth fail,
One eye thou haſt to look to heav'n for grace. *
Heav'n be thou gracious to none alive,
If *Salisbury* wants mercy at thy hands!
Bear hence his body, I will help to bury it.
Sir *Thomas Gargrave*, haſt thou any life?
Speak unto *Talbot*, nay look up to him.
O *Salisb'ry*, chear thy ſpirit with this comfort,
Thou ſhalt not die, while-----
----He beckons with his hand, and ſmiles on me,
As who ſhould ſay, *when I am dead and gone,*
Remember to avenge me on the French.
Plantagenet, I will; and *Nero*-like,
Play on the lute, beholding the towns burn:
Wretched ſhall *France* be only in my name.

[*Here an alarm, and it thunders and lightens.*

* ——— to heav'n for grace.
The ſun with one eye vieweth all the world.
Heav'n be thou, *&c.*

What ſtir is this? what tumult's in the heav'ns?
Whence cometh this alarum and this noiſe?

Enter a Meſſenger.

Meſſ. My lord, my lord, the *French* have gather'd head.
The *Dauphin* with one *Joan la Pucelle* join'd,
A holy propheteſs new riſen up,
Is come with a great pow'r to raiſe the ſiege.
[*Here* Salisbury *lifteth himſelf up and groans.*

Tal. Hear, hear how dying *Salisbury* doth groan,
It irks his heart he cannot be reveng'd.
Frenchmen, I'll be a *Salisbury* to you. *
Convey brave *Salisbury* into his tent,
And then we'll try what daſtard *Frenchmen* dare. [*Alarum.* [*Exit.*

SCENE X.

Here an alarum again; and Talbot *purſueth the Dauphin, and driveth him: then enter* Joan la Pucelle, *driving* Engliſhmen *before her. Then enter* Talbot.

Tal. Where is my ſtrength, my valour and my force?
Our *Engliſh* troops retire, I cannot ſtay them:
A woman clad in armour chaſeth them.

Enter Pucelle.

Here, here ſhe comes. I'll have a bout with thee;
Devil, or devil's dam, I'll conjure thee:
Blood will I draw on thee, thou art a witch,
And ſtraitway give thy ſoul to him thou ſerv'ſt.

*——a *Salisbury* to you.
Puzel or *Puſſel*, *Dolphin* or *Dog-fiſh*,
Your hearts I'll ſtamp out with my Horſes heels,
And make a quagmire of your mingled brains.
Convey brave, *&c.*

Pucel.

Pucel. Come, come, 'tis only I that muſt diſgrace thee.
[*They fight.* *

Talbot farewel, thy hour is not yet come,
I muſt go victual *Orleans* forthwith.
A ſhort alarum. Then enter the town with ſoldiers.
O'ertake me if thou canſt, I ſcorn thy ſtrength.
Go, go, chear up thy hunger-ſtarved men,
Help *Salisbury* to make his teſtament:
This day is ours, as many more ſhall be. [*Exit* Pucelle.
Tal. My thoughts are whirled like a potter's wheel.
I know not where I am, nor what I do:
A witch, by fear not force, like *Hannibal*
Drives back our troops, and conquers as ſhe liſts:
So Bees with ſmoak, and Doves with noiſom ſtench,
Are from their hives and houſes driv'n away.
They call'd us for our fierceneſs *Engliſh* dogs,
Now like their whelps we crying run away. [*A ſhort alarum.*
Hark countrymen, either renew the fight,
Or tear the Lions out of *England*'s coat;
Renounce your ſoil, give Sheep in Lions ſtead:
Sheep run not half ſo [d] tim'rous from the Wolf,
Or Horſe or Oxen from the Leopard,
As you fly from your oft-ſubdued ſlaves.
[*Alarum. Here another skirmiſh.*
It will not be: retire into your trenches:
You all conſented unto *Salisbury*'s death,
For none would ſtrike a ſtroke in his revenge.
Pucelle is enter'd into *Orleans*,

* —— [*They fight.*
Tal. Heavens, can you ſuffer hell ſo to prevail?
My breaſt I'll burſt with ſtraining of my courage,
And from my ſhoulders crack my arms aſunder,
But I will chaſtiſe this high-minded ſtrumpet.
Pucel. Talbot farewel, *&c.*

[d] *treacherous.*

In ſpight of us, or ought that we could do.
O would I were to die with *Salisbury!*
The ſhame hereof will make me hide my head. [*Exit* Talbot.
[*Alarum, Retreat, Flouriſh.*

SCENE XI.

Enter on the wall, Pucelle, Dauphin, Reignier, Alanſon, *and Soldiers.*

Pucel. Advance our waving colours on the walls,
Reſcu'd is *Orleans* from the *Engliſh* Wolves:
Thus *Joan la Pucelle* hath perform'd her word.
Dau. Divineſt creature, bright *Aſtrea*'s daughter,
How ſhall I honour thee for this ſucceſs!
Thy promiſes are like *Adonis*' garden,
That one day bloom'd, and fruitful were the next.
France, triumph in thy glorious propheteſs;
Recover'd is the town of *Orleans*;
More bleſſed hap did ne'er befal our ſtate.
Reig. Why ring not out the bells throughout the town?
Dauphin, command the citizens make bonfires,
And feaſt and banquet in the open ſtreets,
To celebrate the joy that God hath giv'n us.
Alan. All *France* will be replete with mirth and joy,
When they ſhall hear how we have play'd the men.
Dau. 'Tis *Joan*, not we, by whom the day is won:
For which I will divide my crown with her,
And all the prieſts and friers in my realm
Shall in proceſſion ſing her endleſs praiſe.
A ſtatelier pyramid to her I'll rear,
Than *Rhodope*'s or *Memphis* ever was!
In memory of her, when ſhe is dead,
Her aſhes, in an urn more gracious

Than the rich jewel'd coffer of *Darius*,
Transported shall be at high festivals,
Before the Kings and Queens of *France*.
No longer on St. *Dennis* will we cry,
But *Joan la Pucelle* shall be *France*'s Saint.
Come in, and let us banquet royally,
After this golden day of victory. [*Flourish. Exeunt.*

ACT II. SCENE I.

Continues in Orleans.

Enter a Serjeant of a Band, with two Centinels.

SERJEANT.

SIRS take your places, and be vigilant:
If any noise or soldier you perceive
Near to the wall, by some apparent sign
Let us have knowledge at the court of guard.

Cent. Serjeant, you shall. Thus are poor servitors
(When others sleep upon their quiet beds)
Constrain'd to watch in darkness, rain and cold.

Enter Talbot, Bedford, *and* Burgundy, *with scaling ladders. Their drums beating a dead march.*

Tal. Lord Regent, and redoubted *Burgundy*,
By whose approach the regions of *Artois*,
Walloon, and *Picardy* are friends to us:
This happy night the *Frenchmen* are secure,
Having all day carous'd and banquetted.

Embrace

Embrace we then this opportunity,
As fitting beſt to quittance their deceit,
Contriv'd by art and baleful ſorcery.
Bed. Coward of *France*, how much he wrongs his fame,
Deſpairing of his own arms fortitude,
To join with witches and the help of hell!
Bur. Traitors have never other company.
But what's that *Pucelle* whom they term ſo pure?
Tal. A maid, they ſay.
Bed. A maid? and be ſo martial?
Bur. Pray God ſhe prove not maſculine ere long,
If underneath the ſtandard of the *French*
She carry armour as ſhe hath begun.
Tal. Well, let them practiſe and converſe with ſpirits,
God is our fortreſs, in whoſe conqu'ring name
Let us reſolve to ſcale their flinty bulwarks.
Bed. Aſcend, brave *Talbot*, we will follow thee.
Tal. Not all together: better far I gueſs,
That we do make our entrance ſeveral ways:
That if it chance the one of us do fail,
The other yet may riſe againſt their force.
Bed. Agreed; I'll to yon corner.
Bur. I to this.
Tal. And here will *Talbot* mount, or make his grave.
Now *Salisbury!* for thee and for the right
Of *Engliſh Henry*, ſhall this night appear
How much in duty I am bound to both.
Cent. Arm, arm; the enemy doth make aſſault.
[*Cry*, *St.* George! *A* Talbot!

SCENE II.

The French *leap o'er the walls in their ſhirts. Enter ſeveral ways,* *Baſtard,* Alanſon, Reignier, *half ready and half unready.*

Alan. How now, my lords? what all unready ſo?
Baſt. Unready? I am glad we 'ſcap'd ſo well.
Reig. 'Twas time, I trow, to wake and leave our beds,
Hearing alarums at our chamber doors.
Alan. Of all exploits ſince firſt I follow'd arms,
Ne'er heard I of a warlike enterprize
More venturous, or deſperate than this.
Baſt. I think this *Talbot* is a fiend of hell.
Reig. If not of hell, the heav'ns ſure favour him.
Alan. Here cometh *Charles*, I marvel how he ſped.

Enter Charles *and* Joan.

Baſt. Tut, holy *Joan* was his defenſive guard.
Cha. Is this thy cunning, thou deceitful dame?
Didſt thou at firſt, to flatter us withal,
Make us partakers of a little gain;
That now our loſs might be ten times ſo much?
Pucel. Wherefore is *Charles* impatient with his friend?
At all times will you have my pow'r alike?
Sleeping or waking muſt I ſtill prevail?
Or will you blame and lay the fault on me?
Improvident ſoldiers, had your watch been good,
This ſudden miſchief never could have faln.
Char. Duke of *Alanſon*, this was your default,
That being captain of the watch to-night,
Did look no better to that weighty charge.
Alan. Had all our quarters been as ſafely kept,
As that whereof I had the government,

We

We had not been thus ſhamefully ſurpriz'd.
Baſt. Mine was ſecure.
Reig. And ſo was mine, my lord.
Char. And for my ſelf, moſt part of all this night
Within her quarter and mine own precinct
I was employ'd in paſſing to and fro,
About relieving of the centinels.
Then how or which way ſhould they firſt break in?
Pucel. Queſtion, my lord, no further of the caſe,
How or which way; 'tis ſure they found ſome part
But weakly guarded, where the breach was made:
And now there reſts no other ſhift but this,
To gather ſoldiers, ſcatter'd and diſperſt,
And lay new platforms to endamage them. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

Alarum. Enter a Soldier crying, a Talbot! a Talbot! *they fly, leaving their cloaths behind.*

Sol. I'll be ſo bold to take what they have left:
The cry of *Talbot* ſerves me for a ſword,
For I have loaden me with many ſpoils,
Uſing no other weapon but his name. [*Exit.*

Enter Talbot, Bedford, *and* Burgundy.

Bed. The day begins to break, and night is fled,
Whoſe pitchy mantle over-veil'd the earth.
Here ſound retreat, and ceaſe our hot purſuit. [*Retreat.*
Tal. Bring forth the body of old *Salisbury*,
And here advance it in the market place,
The middle centre of this curſed town.
Now have I pay'd my vow unto his ſoul.
For ev'ry drop of blood was drawn from him,

There

There have at leaſt five *Frenchmen* dy'd to-night.
And that hereafter ages may behold
What ruin happen'd in revenge of him,
Within the chiefeſt temple I'll erect
A tomb, wherein his corps ſhall be interr'd:
Upon the which, that every one may read,
Shall be engrav'd the ſack of *Orleans*,
The treach'rous manner of his mournful death,
And what a terror he had been to *France*.
But, lords, in all our bloody maſſacre,
I muſe we met not with the Dauphin's grace,
His new-come champion, virtuous *Joan* of *Arc*,
Nor any of his falſe confederates.

Bed. 'Tis thought, lord *Talbot*, when the fight began,
Rous'd on the ſudden from their drowſie beds,
They did amongſt the troops of armed men
Leap o'er the walls, for refuge in the field.

Bur. My ſelf, as far as I could well diſcern
For ſmoak and duſty vapours of the night,
Am ſure I ſcar'd the Dauphin and his trull;
When arm in arm they both came ſwiftly running,
Like to a pair of loving Turtle Doves,
That could not live aſunder day or night.
After that things are ſet in order here,
We'll follow them with all the pow'r we have.

Enter a Meſſenger.

Meſſ. All hail, my lords; which of this Princely train
Call ye the warlike *Talbot*, for his acts
So much applauded through the realm of *France*?

Tal. Here is the *Talbot*, who would ſpeak with him?

Meſſ. The virtuous lady, Counteſs of *Auvergne*,
With modeſty admiring thy renown,
By me intreats, great lord, thou would'ſt vouchſafe

To viſit her poor caſtle where ſhe lyes;
That ſhe may boaſt ſhe hath beheld the man
Whoſe glory fills the world with loud report.
Bur. Is it ev'n ſo? nay, then I ſee our wars
Will turn into a peaceful comick ſport,
When ladies crave to be encounter'd with.
You can't, my lord, deſpiſe her gentle ſuit.
Tal. Ne'er truſt me then; for when a world of men
Could not prevail with all their oratory,
Yet hath a woman's kindneſs over-rul'd:
And therefore tell her, I return great thanks,
And in ſubmiſſion will attend on her.
Will not your honours bear me company?
Bed. No, truly that is more than manners will:
And I have heard it ſaid, unbidden gueſts
Are often welcomeſt when they are gone.
Tal. Well then, alone, ſince there's no remedy,
I mean to prove this lady's courteſie.
Come hither captain, you perceive my mind. [*Whiſpers.*
Capt. I do, my lord, and mean accordingly. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

The Counteſs of Auvergne's *Caſtle.*

Enter the Counteſs and her Porter.

Count. PORTER, remember what I gave in charge,
And when you've done ſo, bring the keys to me.
Port. Madam, I will. [*Exit.*
Count. The plot is laid: if all things fall out right,
I ſhall as famous be by this exploit,
As *Scythian Tomyris* by *Cyrus'* death.
Great is the rumour of this dreadful Knight,

And

And his atchievements of no leſs account:
Fain would mine eyes be witneſs with mine ears,
To give their cenſure of theſe rare reports.

Enter Meſſenger and Talbot.

Meſſ. Madam, according as your ladyſhip
By meſſage crav'd, ſo is lord *Talbot* come.
Count. And he is welcome; what? is this the man?
Meſſ. Madam, it is.
Count. Is this the ſcourge of *France?*
Is this the *Talbot* ſo much fear'd abroad,
That with his name the mothers ſtill their babes?
I ſee report is fabulous and falſe.
I thought I ſhould have ſeen ſome *Hercules*,
A ſecond *Hector*, for his grim aſpect,
And large proportion of his ſtrong-knit limbs.
Alas! this is a child, a ſilly dwarf:
It cannot be, this weak and writhled Shrimp
Should ſtrike ſuch terror in his enemies.
Tal. Madam, I have been bold to trouble you:
But ſince your ladyſhip is not at leiſure,
I'll ſort ſome other time to viſit you.
Count. What means he now? Go ask whither he goes.
Meſſ. Stay, my lord *Talbot*, for my lady craves
To know the cauſe of your abrupt departure.
Tal. Marry, for that ſhe's in a wrong belief,
I go to certifie her, *Talbot*'s here.

Enter Porter with keys.

Count. If thou be he, then art thou priſoner.
Tal. Pris'ner? to whom?
Count. To me, blood-thirſty lord:
And for that cauſe I train'd thee to my houſe.

Long time thy ſhadow hath been thrall to me,
For in my gallery thy picture hangs:
But now the ſubſtance ſhall endure the like,
And I will chain theſe legs and arms of thine,
That haſt by tyranny theſe many years
Waſted our country, ſlain our citizens,
And ſent our ſons and husbands captivate.

Tal. Ha, ha, ha.

Count. Laugheſt thou wretch? thy mirth ſhall turn to moan.

Tal. I laugh to ſee your ladyſhip ſo fond,
To think that you have ought but *Talbot*'s ſhadow
Whereon to practice your ſeverity.

Count. Why? art not thou the man?

Tal. I am indeed.

Count. Then have I ſubſtance too.

Tal. No, no, I am but ſhadow of my ſelf:
You are deceiv'd, my ſubſtance is not here;
For what you ſee is but the ſmalleſt part
And leaſt proportion of humanity:
I tell you, Madam, were the whole frame here,
It is of ſuch a ſpacious lofty pitch,
Your roof were not ſufficient to contain it.

Count. This is a riddling merchant for the nonce,
He will be here, and yet he is not here:
How can theſe contrarieties agree?

Tal. That will I ſhew you preſently.

Winds his horn, drums ſtrike up, a peal of Ordnance:
Enter Soldiers.

How ſay you, Madam? are you now perſuaded
That *Talbot* is but ſhadow of himſelf?
Theſe are his ſubſtance, ſinews, arms and ſtrength,
With which he yoaketh your rebellious necks,

Razeth your cities and ſubverts your towns,
And in a moment makes them deſolate.

Count. Victorious *Talbot*, pardon my abuſe;
I find thou art no leſs than fame hath bruited,
And more than may be gather'd by thy ſhape.
Let my preſumption not provoke thy wrath,
For I am ſorry that with reverence
I did not entertain thee as thou art.

Tal. Be not diſmay'd, fair lady, nor miſconſtrue
The mind of *Talbot*, as you did miſtake
The outward compoſition of his body.
What you have done hath not offended me:
Nor other ſatisfaction do I crave,
But only with your patience that we may
Taſte of your wine, and ſee what cates you have,
For ſoldiers ſtomachs always ſerve them well.

Count. With all my heart, and think me honoured
To feaſt ſo great a warrior in my houſe. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

Changes to London, *in the* Temple *garden.*

Enter Richard Plantagenet, Warwick, Somerſet, Suffolk, *and others.*

Plan. GReat lords and gentlemen, what means this ſilence?
Dare no man anſwer in a caſe of truth?

Suf. Within the Temple hall we were too loud,
The garden here is more convenient.

Plan. Then ſay at once if I maintain'd the truth:
Or elſe was wrangling *Somerſet* in th' error?

Suf. Faith I have been a truant in the law,

I never yet could frame my will to it,
And therefore frame the law unto my will.
Som. Judge you, my lord of *Warwick*, then between us.
War. Between two hawks, which flies the higher pitch;
Between two dogs, which hath the deeper mouth;
Between two blades, which bears the better temper;
Between two horſes, which doth bear him beſt;
Between two girls, which hath the merrieſt eye,
I have perhaps ſome ſhallow ſpirit of judgment:
But in theſe nice ſharp quillets of the law,
Good faith I am no wiſer than a daw.
Plan. Tut, tut, here is a mannerly forbearance:
The truth appears ſo naked on my ſide,
That any pur-blind eye may find it out.
Som. And on my ſide it is ſo well apparell'd,
So clear, ſo ſhining, and ſo evident,
That it will glimmer through a blind man's eye.
Plan. Since you are tongue-ty'd, and ſo loth to ſpeak,
In dumb ſignificance proclaim your thoughts:
Let him that is a true-born gentleman
And ſtands upon the honour of his birth,
If he ſuppoſe that I have pleaded truth,
From off this briar pluck a white roſe with me.
Som. Let him that is no coward, and no flatterer,
But dare maintain the party of the truth,
Pluck a red roſe from off this thorn with me.
War. I love no colours; and without all colour
Of baſe inſinuating flattery,
I pluck this white roſe with *Plantagenet.*
Suf. I pluck this red roſe with young *Somerſet*,
And ſay withal I think he held the right.
Ver. Stay, lords and gentlemen, and pluck no more,
'Till you conclude that he upon whoſe ſide

The feweſt roſes are crop'd from the tree,
Shall yield the other in the right opinion.
Som. Good maſter *Vernon*, it is well objected;
If I have feweſt, I ſubſcribe in ſilence.
Plan. And I.
Ver. Then for the truth and plainneſs of the caſe,
I pluck this pale and maiden bloſſom here,
Giving my verdict on the white roſe ſide. *
Som. Well, well, come on, who elſe?
Lawyer. Unleſs my ſtudy and my books be falſe,
The argument you held was wrong in you; [*To* Somerſet.
In ſign whereof I pluck a white roſe too.
Plan. Now *Somerſet*, where is your argument?
Som. Here in my ſcabbard, meditating that
Shall dye your white roſe to a bloody red. *
Plan. Now by this maiden bloſſom in my hand,

* ——— the white Roſe ſide.
Som. Prick not your finger as you pluck it off,
Leſt bleeding you do paint the white roſe red,
And fall on my ſide ſo againſt your will.
Ver. If I, my lord, for my opinion bleed,
Opinion ſhall be ſurgeon to my hurt,
And keep me on the ſide where ſtill I am.
Som. Well, well, *&c.*

* ——— a bloody red.
Plan. Mean time your cheeks do counterfeit our Roſes,
For pale they look with fear, as witneſſing
The truth on our ſide.
Som. No, *Plantagenet*,
'Tis not for fear but anger, that thy cheeks
Bluſh for pure ſhame to counterfeit our Roſes,
And yet thy tongue will not confeſs thy error.
Plan. Hath not thy Roſe a canker, *Somerſet?*
Som. Hath not thy Roſe a thorn, *Plantagenet?*
Plan. Ay, ſharp and piercing to maintain his truth,
Whiles thy conſuming canker eats his falſhood.
Som. Well, I'll find friends to wear my bleeding Roſes,
That ſhall maintain what I have ſaid is true,
Where falſe *Plantagenet* dare not be ſeen.
Plan. Now by this maiden ———

I ſcorn thee and thy [a] paſſion, peeviſh boy.
Suf. Turn not thy ſcorns this way, *Plantagenet.*
Plan. Proud *Pool*, I will and ſcorn both him and thee.
Suf. I'll turn my part thereof into thy throat.
Som. Away, away, good *William de la Pool*;
We grace the Yeoman by converſing with him.
War. Now by God's will thou wrong'ſt him, *Somerſet.*
His grandfather was *Lyonel* Duke of *Clarence*,
Third ſon to the third *Edward* King of *England*:
Spring creſtleſs Yeomen from ſo deep a root?
Plan. He bears him on the place's privilege,
Or durſt not for his craven heart ſay thus.
Som. By him that made me, I'll maintain my words
On any plot of ground in Chriſtendom.
Was not thy father, *Richard*, Earl of *Cambridge*,
For treaſon headed in our late King's days?
And by his treaſon ſtand'ſt not thou attainted,
Corrupted and exempt from ancient gentry?
His treſpaſs yet lives guilty in thy blood,
And 'till thou be reſtor'd, thou art a yeoman.
Plan. My father was attached, not attainted,
Condemn'd to die for treaſon, but no traitor;
And that I'll prove on better men than *Somerſet*,
Were growing time once ripen'd to my will.
For your partaker *Pool*, and you your ſelf,
I'll note you in my book of memory,
To ſcourge you for this apprehenſion;
Look to it well, and ſay you are well warn'd.
Som. Ah, thou ſhalt find us ready for thee ſtill;
And know us by theſe colours for thy foes:
For theſe my friends in ſpight of thee ſhall wear.
Plan. And by my ſoul, this pale and angry roſe,
As cognizance of my blood-drinking hate,

Will

[a] *faſhion.*

Will I for ever and my faction wear,
Until it wither with me to my grave,
Or flourish to the height of my degree.
Suf. Go forward, and be choak'd with thy ambition:
And so farewel until I meet thee next. [*Exit.*
Som. Have with thee, *Pool:* farewel, ambitious *Richard.*
[*Exit.*
Plan. How I am brav'd, and must perforce endure it!
War. This blot that they object against your house,
Shall be wip'd out in the next parliament,
Call'd for the truce of *Winchester* and *Gloucester:*
And if thou be not then created *York,*
I will not live to be accounted *Warwick.*
Mean time in signal of my love to thee,
Against proud *Somerset* and *William Pool,*
Will I upon thy party wear this rose.
And here I prophesie; this brawl to-day,
Grown to this faction in the Temple garden,
Shall send between the red rose and the white
A thousand souls to death and deadly night. *

SCENE VI.

Enter Mortimer, *brought in a chair, and jailors.*

Mor. KIND keepers of my weak decaying age,
Let dying *Mortimer* here rest himself.

* —— death and deadly night.
Plan. Good master *Vernon* I am bound to you,
That you on my behalf would pluck a flow'r.
Ver. In your behalf still will I wear the same.
Lawyer. And so will I.
Plan. Thanks, gentle Sir.
Come, let us four to dinner; I dare say
This quarrel will drink blood another day. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE——

Ev'n like a man new haled from the rack,
So fare my limbs with long impriſonment:
And theſe grey locks, the purſuivants of death,
Neſtor-like aged in an age of care,
Argue the end of *Edmund Mortimer*.
Theſe eyes like lamps whoſe waſting oil is ſpent
Wax dim, as drawing to their exigent.
Weak ſhoulders over-born with burthening grief,
And pithleſs arms, like to a wither'd vine
That droops his ſapleſs branches to the ground:
Yet are theſe feet whoſe ſtrengthleſs ſtay is numb,
(Unable to ſupport this lump of clay)
Swift-winged with deſire to get a grave,
As witting I no other comfort have.
But tell me, keeper, will my nephew come?

Keep. *Richard Plantagenet*, my lord, will come;
We ſent unto the Temple, to his chamber,
And anſwer was return'd that he will come.

Mor. Enough; my ſoul then ſhall be ſatisfy'd.
Poor gentleman, his wrong doth equal mine.
Since *Henry Monmouth* firſt began to reign,
(Before whoſe glory I was great in arms,)
This loathſom ſequeſtration have I had;
And ev'n ſince then hath *Richard* been obſcur'd,
Depriv'd of honour and inheritance.
But now the arbitrator of deſpairs,
Juſt death, kind umpire of men's miſeries,
With ſweet enlargement doth diſmiſs me hence.
I would his troubles likewiſe were expir'd,
That ſo he might recover what was loſt.

Enter Richard Plantagenet.

Keep. My lord, your loving nephew now is come.

Mor.

Mor. *Richard Plantagenet*, my friend, is he come?
Plan. I, noble uncle, thus ignobly us'd,
Your nephew, late deſpiſed *Richard*, comes.
Mor. Direct mine arms, I may embrace his neck,
And in his boſom ſpend my lateſt gaſp.
Oh tell me when my lips do touch his cheeks,
That I may kindly give one fainting kiſs.
And now declare, ſweet ſtem from *York*'s great ſtock,
Why didſt thou ſay of late thou wert deſpis'd?
Plan. Firſt lean thine aged back againſt mine arm,
And in that eaſe I'll tell thee my diſpleaſure.
This day, in argument upon a caſe,
Some words there grew 'twixt *Somerſet* and me:
Amongſt which terms he us'd his laviſh tongue,
And did upbraid me with my father's death;
Which obloquy ſet bars before my tongue,
Elſe with the like I had requited him.
Therefore, good uncle, for my father's ſake,
In honour of a true *Plantagenet*,
And for alliance ſake, declare the cauſe
My father Earl of *Cambridge* loſt his head.
Mor. This cauſe, fair nephew, that impriſon'd me,
And hath detain'd me all my flow'ring youth
Within a loathſome dungeon there to pine,
Was curſed inſtrument of his deceaſe.
Plan. Diſcover more at large what cauſe that was,
For I am ignorant and cannot gueſs.
Mor. I will, if that my fading breath permit,
And death approach not ere my tale be done.
Henry the Fourth, grandfather to this King,
Depos'd his couſin *Richard*, *Edward*'s ſon,
The firſt begotten, and the lawful heir
Of *Edward* King, the third of that deſcent.

During

During whoſe reign the *Piercies* of the north,
Finding his uſurpation moſt unjuſt,
Endeavour'd my advancement to the throne.
The reaſon mov'd theſe warlike lords to this,
Was, for that young King *Richard* thus remov'd
Leaving no heir begotten of his body,
I was the next by birth and parentage:
For by my mother I derived am
From *Lyonel* Duke of *Clarence*, the third ſon
To the Third *Edward*; whereas *Bolingbroke*
From *John* of *Gaunt* doth bring his pedigree,
Being but the fourth of that heroick line.
But mark; as in this haughty great attempt
They laboured to plant the rightful heir,
I loſt my liberty, and they their lives.
Long after this, when *Henry* the Fifth
After his father *Bolingbroke* did reign,
Thy father, Earl of *Cambridge*, (then deriv'd
From famous *Edmund Langley* Duke of *York*,
Marrying my ſiſter that thy mother was;)
Again in pity of my hard diſtreſs
Levied an army, weening to redeem
And re-inſtal me in the diadem:
But as the reſt, ſo fell that noble Earl,
And was beheaded. Thus the *Mortimers*,
In whom the title reſted, were ſuppreſt.

Plan. Of which, my lord, your honour is the laſt.

Mor. True; and thou ſeeſt that I no iſſue have,
And that my fainting words do warrant death:
Thou art my heir; the reſt I wiſh thee gather:
But yet be wary in thy ſtudious care.

Plan. Thy grave admoniſhments prevail with me:
But yet methinks my father's execution

Was nothing leſs than bloody tyranny.

Mor. With ſilence, nephew, be thou politick:
Strong fixed is the houſe of *Lancaſter*,
And like a mountain, not to be remov'd.
But now thy uncle is removing hence,
As Princes do their courts when they are cloy'd
With long continuance in a ſettled place.

Plan. O uncle, would ſome part of my young years
Might but redeem the paſſage of your age!

Mor. Thou doſt then wrong me, as that ſlaughter doth
Which giveth many wounds when one will kill.
Mourn not, except thou ſorrow for my good;
Only give order for my funeral.
And ſo farewel; and fair be all thy hopes,
And proſp'rous be thy life, in peace and war. [*Dies.*

Plan. And peace, no war, befal thy parting ſoul!
In priſon haſt thou ſpent a pilgrimage,
And like a hermit over-paſt thy days.
Well I will lock his counſel in my breaſt,
And what I do imagine let that reſt.
Keepers convey him hence, and I my ſelf
Will ſee his burial better than his life.
Here dies the dusky torch of *Mortimer*,
Choak'd with ambition of the meaner ſort.
And for thoſe wrongs, thoſe bitter injuries
Which *Somerſet* hath offer'd to my houſe,
I doubt not but with honour to redreſs.
And therefore haſte I to the Parliament;
Either to be reſtored to my blood,
Or make my will th'advantage of my good. [*Exit.*

ACT III. SCENE I.

The Parliament.

Flouriſh. Enter King Henry, Exeter, Glouceſter, Wincheſter, Warwick, Somerſet, Suffolk, *and* Richard Plantagenet. Glouceſter *offers to put up a bill:* Wincheſter *ſnatches it, and tears it.*

WINCHESTER.

COM'ST thou with deep premeditated lines,
With written pamphlets ſtudiouſly devis'd?
Humphrey of *Glo'ſter*, if thou can'ſt accuſe
Or ought intend'ſt to lay unto my charge,
Do it without invention ſuddenly;
As I with ſudden and extemporal ſpeech
Purpoſe to anſwer what thou canſt object.

Glou. Preſumptuous Prieſt, this place commands my patience,
Or thou ſhould'ſt find thou haſt diſhonour'd me.
Think not, although in writing I prefer'd
The manner of thy vile outragious crimes,
That therefore I have forg'd, or am not able
Verbatim to rehearſe the method of my pen.
No, Prelate, ſuch is thy audacious wickedneſs,
Thy leud, peſtif'rous, and diſſentious pranks,
The very infants prattle of thy pride.
Thou art a moſt pernicious uſurer,
Froward by nature, enemy to peace,
Laſcivious, wanton, more than well beſeems
A man of thy profeſſion and degree.
And for thy treach'ry what's more manifeſt?

In that thou laid'ſt a trap to take my life,
As well at *London-Bridge*, as at the *Tower*.
Beſide I fear me, if thy thoughts were ſifted,
The King thy Soveraign is not quite exempt
From envious malice of thy ſwelling heart.
Win. *Glo'ſter* I do defie thee. Lords, vouchſafe
To give me hearing what I ſhall reply.
If I were covetous, perverſe, ambitious,
As he will have me; how am I ſo poor?
How haps it then I ſeek not to advance
Or raiſe my ſelf? but keep my wonted calling.
And for diſſention, who preferreth peace
More than I do? except I be provok'd.
No, my good lords, it is not that offends,
It is not that which hath incens'd the Duke:
It is becauſe no one ſhould ſway but he;
No one but he ſhould be about the King;
And that engenders thunder in his breaſt,
And makes him roar theſe accuſations forth.
But he ſhall know I am as good------
Glou. As good?
Thou baſtard of my grandfather.
Win. Ay, lordly Sir; for what are you I pray,
But one imperious in another's throne?
Glou. Am not I then Protector, ſawcy prieſt?
Win. And am not I a prelate of the church?
Glou. Yes, as an out-law in a caſtle keeps,
And uſeth it to patronage his theft.
Win. Unrev'rend *Glo'ſter*.
Glou. Thou art reverend
Touching thy ſpiritual function, not thy life.
Win. This *Rome* ſhall remedy.
War. Go thither then.

My

My lord it were your duty to forbear.

Som. Ay, ſee the biſhop be not over-born:
Methinks my lord ſhould be religious,
And know the office that belongs to ſuch.

War. Methinks his lordſhip ſhould be humbler then,
It fitteth not a prelate ſo to plead.

Som. Yes, when his holy ſtate is touch'd ſo near.

War. State holy or unhallow'd, what of that?
Is not his grace Protector to the King?

Rich. Plantagenet I ſee muſt hold his tongue,
Leſt it be ſaid, 'Speak ſirrah when you ſhould,
'Muſt your bold verdict enter talk with lords?
Elſe would I have a fling at *Wincheſter*.

K. *Henry*. Uncles of *Glo'ſter* and of *Wincheſter*,
The ſpecial watchmen of our *Engliſh* weal;
I would prevail, if prayers might prevail,
To join your hearts in love and amity.
Oh what a ſcandal is it to our crown,
That two ſuch noble peers as ye ſhould jar!
Believe me, lords, my tender years can tell
Civil diſſention is a vip'rous worm,
That gnaws the bowels of the common-wealth.

[*A noiſe within*; Down with the tawny coats.

K. *Henry*. What tumult's this?

War. An uproar, I dare warrant,
Begun through malice of the biſhop's men.

[*A noiſe again*, Stones, Stones.

SCENE II.

Enter Mayor.

Mayor. Oh my good lords, and virtuous *Henry*,
Pity the city *London*, pity us,

The

The Biſhop and the Duke of *Glo'ſter*'s men,
Forbidden late to carry any weapon,
Have fill'd their pockets full of peble ſtones;
And banding themſelves in contrary parts,
Do pelt ſo faſt at one another's pates,
That many have their giddy brains knock'd out:
Our windows are broke down in ev'ry ſtreet,
And we for fear compell'd to ſhut our ſhops.

Enter in skirmiſh with bloody pates.

K. *Henry.* We charge you on allegiance to our ſelves,
To hold your ſlaught'ring hands and keep the peace:
Pray uncle *Glo'ſter* mitigate this ſtrife.

1 *Serv.* Nay, if we be forbidden ſtones we'll fall to it with our teeth.

2 *Serv.* Do what ye dare, we are as reſolute.

[*Skirmiſh again.*

Glou. You of my houſhold leave this peeviſh broil,
And ſet this unaccuſtom'd fight aſide.

3 *Serv.* My lord, we know your grace to be a man
Juſt and upright; and for your royal birth
Inferior to none but to his Majeſty:
And ere that we will ſuffer ſuch a Prince,
So kind a father of the common-weal,
To be diſgraced by an Inkhorn mate,
We and our wives and children all will fight,
And have our bodies ſlaughter'd by thy foes.

1 *Serv.* Ay and the very parings of our nails
Shall pitch a field when we are dead. [*Begin again.*

Glou. Stay, ſtay I ſay,
And if you love me as you ſay you do,
Let me perſwade you to forbear awhile

K. *Henry.* O how this diſcord doth afflict my ſoul!

Can

Can you, my lord of *Wincheſter*, behold
My ſighs and tears, and will not once relent?
Who ſhould be pitiful, if you be not?
Or who ſhould ſtudy to prefer a peace,
If holy churchmen take delight in broils?

War. My lord Protector yield: yield *Wincheſter*;
Except you mean with obſtinate repulſe
To ſlay your Soveraign and deſtroy the realm.
You ſee what miſchief and what murther too
Hath been enacted through your enmity:
Then be at peace, except ye thirſt for blood.

Win. He ſhall ſubmit, or I will never yield.

Glou. Compaſſion on the King commands me ſtoop;
Or I would ſee his heart out, ere the prieſt
Should ever get that privilege of me.

War. Behold, my lord of *Wincheſter*, the Duke
Hath baniſh'd moody diſcontented fury,
And by his ſmother'd brows it doth appear.
Why look you ſtill ſo ſtern and tragical?

Glou. Here *Wincheſter* I offer thee my hand.

K. *Henry.* Fie, uncle *Beauford*: I have heard you preach,
That malice was a great and grievous ſin:
And will not you maintain the thing you teach,
But prove a chief offender in the ſame?

War. Sweet King! the biſhop hath a kindly gird:
For ſhame my lord of *Wincheſter* relent;
What, ſhall a child inſtruct you what to do?

Win. Well Duke of *Glo'ſter* I will yield to thee,
Love for thy love, and hand for hand I give.

Glou. Ay but I fear me with a hollow heart.
See here my friends and loving countrymen,
This token ſerveth for a flag of truce
Betwixt our ſelves and all our followers:

So

So help me God as I diſſemble not.

Win. [*Aſide.*] So help me God as I intend it not.

K. *Henry.* Oh loving uncle, gentle Duke of *Glo'ſter*,
How joyful am I made by this contract!
Away my maſters, trouble us no more,
But join in friendſhip as your lords have done.

1 *Serv.* Content, I'll to the ſurgeon's.

2 *Serv.* So will I.

3 *Serv.* And I'll ſee what phyſick the tavern affords. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

War. Accept this ſcrowl, moſt gracious Soveraign,
Which in the right of *Richard Plantagenet*
We do exhibit to your Majeſty.

Glou. Well urg'd my lord of *Warwick*; For, ſweet Prince,
And if your grace mark ev'ry circumſtance,
You have great reaſon to do *Richard* right:
Eſpecially for thoſe occaſions
At *Eltham* place I told your Majeſty.

K. *Henry.* And thoſe occaſions, uncle, were of force:
Therefore my loving lords our pleaſure is,
That *Richard* be reſtored to his blood.

War. Let *Richard* be reſtored to his blood,
So ſhall his father's wrongs be recompens'd.

Win. As will the reſt, ſo willeth *Wincheſter*.

K. *Henry.* If *Richard* will be true, not that alone
But all the whole inheritance I give
That doth belong unto the houſe of *York*,
From whence you ſpring by lineal deſcent.

Rich. Thy humble ſervant vows obedience
And faithful ſervice 'till the point of death.

K. *Henry.* Stoop then, and ſet your knee againſt my foot.

And

And in reguerdon of that duty done,
I gird thee with the valiant ſword of *York*.
Riſe, *Richard*, like a true *Plantagenet*,
And riſe created Princely Duke of *York*.

Rich. And ſo thrive *Richard*, as thy Foes may fall.
And as my duty ſprings, ſo periſh they
That grudge one thought againſt your Majeſty.

All. Welcome, high Prince, the mighty Duke of *York*.

Som. Periſh, baſe Prince, ignoble Duke of *York*. [*Aſide*.

Glou. Now will it beſt avail your Majeſty
To croſs the ſeas, and to be crown'd in *France*:
The preſence of a King engenders love
Amongſt his ſubjects and his loyal friends,
As it diſanimates his enemies.

K. *Henry*. When *Glo'ſter* ſays the word King *Henry* goes,
For friendly counſel cuts off many foes.

Glou. Your ſhips already are in readineſs. [*Exeunt*.

Manet Exeter.

Exe. Ay we may march in *England* or in *France*,
Not ſeeing what is likely to enſue;
This late diſſention grown betwixt the peers
Burns under feigned aſhes of forg'd love,
And will at laſt break out into a flame.
As feſter'd members rot but by degrees,
'Till bones and fleſh and ſinews fall away;
So will this baſe and envious diſcord breed.
And now I fear that fatal propheſy,
Which in the time of *Henry* nam'd the Fifth
Was in the mouth of ev'ry ſucking babe;
That *Henry* born at *Monmouth* ſhould win all,
And *Henry* born at *Windſor* ſhould loſe all:
Which is ſo plain, that *Exeter* doth wiſh
His days may finiſh ere that hapleſs time. [*Exit*.

SCENE IV.

Changes to Roan *in* France.

Enter Joan la Pucelle *disguis'd, and four Soldiers with sacks upon their backs.*

Pucel. THESE are the city gates, the gates of *Roan*,
Through which our policy must make a breach.
Take heed, be wary how you place your words;
Talk like the vulgar sort of market-men
That come to gather mony for their corn.
If we have entrance, as I hope we shall,
And that we find the slothful watch but weak,
I'll by a sign give notice to our friends,
That *Charles* the Dauphin may encounter them.

Sol. Our sacks shall be a mean to sack the city,
And we be lords and rulers over *Roan*,
Therefore we'll knock. [*Knocks.*

Watch. *Qui va la?*

Pucel. *Paisans pauvres gens de France.*
Poor market folks that come to sell their corn.

Watch. Enter, go in, the market bell is rung.

Pucel. Now *Roan* I'll shake thy bulwarks to the ground.
[*Exeunt.*

Enter Dauphin, Bastard, and Alanson.

Dau. St. *Dennis* bless this happy stratagem,
And once again we'll sleep secure in *Roan*.

Bast. Here enter'd *Pucelle* and her practisants:
Now she is there, how will she specifie
Where is the best and safest passage in?

Reig. By thrusting out a torch from yonder tow'r,
Which

Which once diſcern'd, ſhews that her meaning is
No way to that (for weakneſs) which ſhe enter'd.

Enter Joan la Pucelle *on the top, thruſting out a torch burning.*

Pucel. Behold this is the happy wedding torch,
That joineth *Roan* unto her countrymen,
But burning fatal to the *Talbonites.*

Baſt. See noble *Charles* the beacon of our friend,
The burning torch in yonder turret ſtands.

Dau. Now ſhines it like a comet of revenge,
A prophet to the fall of all our foes.

Reig. Defer no time, delays have dangerous ends,
Enter and cry, *The Dauphin,* preſently,
And then do execution on the watch.

[*An alarm,* Talbot *in an excurſion.*

Tal. France, thou ſhalt rue this treaſon with thy tears,
If *Talbot* but ſurvive thy treachery.
Pucelle, that witch, that damned ſorcereſs,
Hath wrought this helliſh miſchief unawares,
That hardly we eſcap'd the pride of *France.* [*Exit.*

SCENE V.

An alarm: excurſions. Bedford *brought in ſick in a chair. Enter* Talbot *and* Burgundy *without; within* Joan la Pucelle, *Dauphin, Baſtard, and* Reignier *on the walls.*

Pucel. Good morrow gallants, want ye corn for bread?
I think the Duke of *Burgundy* will faſt,
Before he'll buy again at ſuch a rate.
'Twas full of darnel; do you like the taſte?

Burg. Scoff on, vile fiend and ſhameleſs curtizan:
I truſt ere long to choak thee with thine own,
And make thee curſe the harveſt of that corn.

Dau. Your grace muſt ſtarve perhaps before that time.

Bed. Oh let not words but deeds revenge this treaſon.

Pucel. What will you do, good grey beard? break a lance,
And run a tilt at death within a chair?

Tal. Foul fiend of *France* and hag of all deſpight,
Incompaſs'd with thy luſtful paramours,
Becomes it thee to taunt his valiant age,
And twit with cowardiſe a man half dead?
Damſel I'll have a bout with you again,
Or elſe let *Talbot* periſh with his ſhame.

Pucel. Are you ſo hot? yet *Pucelle* hold thy peace,
If *Talbot* do but thunder, rain will follow.
[*They whiſper together in counſel.*
God ſpeed the parliament; who ſhall be the ſpeaker?

Tal. Dare ye come forth and meet us in the field?

Pucel. Belike your lordſhip takes us then for fools,
To try if that our own be ours or no.

Tal. I ſpeak not to that railing *Hecate*,
But unto thee *Alanſon*, and the reſt.
Will ye like ſoldiers come and fight it out?

Alan. Seignior no.

Tal. Seignior hang: baſe muleteers of *France*,
Like peaſant foot-boys do they keep the walls,
And dare not take up arms like gentlemen.

Pucel. Captains away, let's get us from the walls,
For *Talbot* means no goodneſs by his looks.
God be wi' you, my lord; we came Sir but to tell you
That we are here. [*Exeunt from the walls.*

Tal. And there will we be too ere it be long,
Or elſe reproach be *Talbot*'s greateſt fame.
Vow *Burgundy*, by honour of thy houſe,
Prick'd on by publick wrongs ſuſtain'd in *France*,
Either to get the town again or die.

And

And I as ſure as *Engliſh Henry* lives,
And as his father here was conqueror,
As ſure as in this late betrayed town
Great *Cœurdelion*'s heart was buried;
So ſure I ſwear to get the town or die.

Burg. My vows are equal partners with thy vows.

Tal. But ere we go, regard this dying Prince,
The valiant Duke of *Bedford:* come my lord,
We will beſtow you in ſome better place,
Fitter for ſickneſs and for crazy age.

Bed. Lord *Talbot* do not ſo diſhonour me:
Here I will ſit before the walls of *Roan*,
And will be partner of your weal and woe.

Burg. Couragious *Bedford*, let us now perſwade you.

Bed. Not to be gone from hence: for once I read,
That ſtout *Pendragon* in his litter ſick
Came to the field and vanquiſhed his foes.
Methinks I ſhould revive the ſoldiers hearts,
Becauſe I ever found them as my ſelf.

Tal. Undaunted ſpirit in a dying breaſt!
Then be it ſo: heav'ns keep old *Bedford* ſafe.
And now no more ado, brave *Burgundy*,
But gather we our forces out of hand,
And ſet upon our boaſting enemy. [*Exit.*

An alarm: excurſions: †*Enter Sir* John Falſtaff, *and a captain.*

Cap. Whither away, Sir *John Falſtaff*, in ſuch haſte?

Fal. Whither away? to ſave my ſelf by flight.
We are like to have the overthrow again.

Cap. What! will you fly and leave lord *Talbot?*

Fal. Ay, all the *Talbots* in the world to ſave my life. [*Exit.*

† Falſtaff *is here introduced again, who was dead in* Henry *the Fifth*; *Act* 2, *Scene* 3; *the occaſion whereof is, that this Play was written by* Shakeſpear *before* Hen. 4. *or* Hen. 5. *See the laſt lines of* Hen. 5.

Cap.

Cap. Cowardly Knight, ill fortune follow thee. [*Exit.*

Retreat: excursions. Pucelle, Alanson, *and Dauphin fly.*

Bed. Now quiet soul depart when heav'n shall please,
For I have seen our enemies overthrow.
What is the trust or strength of foolish man?
They that of late were daring with their scoffs,
Are glad and fain by flight to save themselves.
[*Dies, and is carried off in his chair.*

SCENE VI.

An alarm: Enter Talbot, Burgundy, *and the rest.*

Tal. Lost and recover'd in a day again,
This is a double honour, *Burgundy*;
Yet heav'ns have glory for this victory.
Burg. Warlike and martial *Talbot*, *Burgundy*
Inshrines thee in his heart, and there erects
Thy noble deeds as valour's monuments.
Tal. Thanks, gentle Duke; but where is *Pucelle* now?
I think her old familiar is asleep.
Now where's the bastard's braves, and *Charles* his † glikes?
What, all a-mort? *Roan* hangs her head for grief,
That such a valiant company are fled.
Now we will take some order in the town,
Placing therein some expert officers,
And then depart to *Paris* to the King,
For there young *Henry* with his nobles lyes.
Burg. What wills lord *Talbot*, pleaseth *Burgundy.*
Tal. But yet before we go let's not forget
The noble Duke of *Bedford*, late deceas'd,
But see his exequies fulfill'd in *Roan.*
A braver soldier never couched launce,
A gentler heart did never sway in court. But

† *glikes* or *scoffs.*

But Kings and mightieſt potentates muſt die,
For that's the end of human miſery. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

Enter Dauphin, Baſtard, Alanſon, *and* Joan la Pucelle.

Pucel. Diſmay not, Princes, at this accident,
Nor grieve that *Roan* is ſo recovered.
Care is no cure, but rather corroſive,
For things that are not to be remedy'd.
Let frantick *Talbot* triumph for awhile,
And like a Peacock ſweep along his tail,
We'll pull his plumes and take away his train,
If Dauphin and the reſt will be but rul'd.

Dau. We have been guided by thee hitherto,
And of thy cunning had no diffidence.
One ſudden foil ſhall never breed diſtruſt.

Baſt. Search out thy wit for ſecret policies,
And we will make thee famous through the world.

Alan. We'll ſet thy ſtatue in ſome holy place,
And have thee reverenc'd like a bleſſed Saint.
Employ thee then, ſweet virgin, for our good.

Pucel. Then thus it muſt be, this doth *Joan* deviſe:
By fair perſwaſions mixt with ſugar'd words,
We will entice the Duke of *Burgundy*
To leave the *Talbot*, and to follow us.

Dau. Ay marry ſweeting if we could do that,
France were no place for *Henry*'s warriors;
Nor ſhall that nation boaſt it ſo with us,
But be extirped from our provinces.

Alan. For ever ſhould they be expuls'd from *France*,
And not have title of an Earldom here.

Pucel. Your honours ſhall perceive how I will work,

To

To bring this matter to the wished end. [*Drum beats afar off.*
Hark, by the sound of drum you may perceive
Their powers are marching unto *Paris* ward.
[*Here beat an* English *march.*
There goes the *Talbot* with his colours spread,
And all the troops of *English* after him. [French *march.*
Now in the rereward comes the Duke and his:
Fortune in favour makes him lag behind.
Summon a parley, we will talk with him.
[*Trumpets sound a parley.*

SCENE VIII.

Enter the Duke of Burgundy *marching.*

Dau. A parley with the Duke of *Burgundy.*
Burg. Who craves a parley with the *Burgundy?*
Pucel. The Princely *Charles* of *France*, thy countryman.
Burg. What say'st thou, *Charles?* for I am marching hence.
Dau. Speak *Pucelle*, and enchant him with thy words.
Pucel. Brave *Burgundy*, undoubted hope of *France*,
Stay, let thy humble hand-maid speak to thee.
Burg. Speak on, but be not over-tedious.
Pucel. Look on thy country, look on fertile *France*,
And see the cities and the towns defac'd
By wasting ruin of the cruel foe.
As looks the mother on her lowly babe,
When death doth close his tender dying eyes;
See, see the pining malady of *France.*
Behold the wounds, the most unnat'ral wounds,
Which thou thy self hast giv'n her woful breast.
Oh turn thy edged sword another way,
Strike those that hurt, and hurt not those that help:
One drop of blood drawn from thy country's bosom

Should

Should grieve thee more than ſtreams of common gore;
Return thee therefore with a flood of tears,
And waſh away thy country's ſtained ſpots.

Burg. Either ſhe hath bewitch'd me with her words,
Or nature makes me ſuddenly relent.

Pucel. Beſides, all *French* and *France* exclaim on thee,
Doubting thy birth and lawful progeny.
Whom join'ſt thou with, but with a lordly nation
That will not truſt thee but for profit's ſake?
When *Talbot* hath ſet footing once in *France*,
And faſhion'd thee that inſtrument of ill;
Who then but *Engliſh Henry* will be lord,
And thou be thruſt out like a fugitive?
Call we to mind and mark but this for proof;
Was not the Duke of *Orleans* thy foe?
And was not he in *England* priſoner?
But when they heard he was thine enemy,
They ſet him free without his ranſom paid,
In ſpight of *Burgundy* and all his friends.
See then thou fight'ſt againſt thy countrymen,
And join'ſt with them will be thy ſlaughter-men.
Come, come, return, return thou wand'ring lord,
Charles and the reſt will take thee in their arms.

Burg. I'm vanquiſhed. Theſe haughty words of hers
Have batter'd me like roaring cannon-ſhot,
And made me almoſt yield upon my knees.
Forgive me, country and ſweet countrymen;
And lords accept this hearty kind embrace.
My forces and my pow'r of men are yours.
So farewel *Talbot*, I'll no longer truſt thee.

Pucel. Done like a *Frenchman:* turn, and turn again.

Dau. Welcome brave Duke, thy friendſhip makes us freſh.

Baſt. And doth beget new courage in our breaſts.

Alan. *Pucelle* hath bravely play'd her part in this,
And doth deserve a coronet of gold.

Dau. Now let us on, my lords, and join our powers,
And seek how we may prejudice the foe. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IX.

PARIS.

Enter King Henry, Glouceſter, Winchester, York, Suffolk, Somerset, Warwick, Exeter: *To them*, Talbot *with his ſoldiers.*

Tal. MY gracious Prince and honourable peers,
Hearing of your arrival in this realm,
I have awhile giv'n truce unto my wars,
To do my duty to my Soveraign.
In ſign whereof, this arm that hath reclaim'd
To your obedience fifty fortreſſes,
Twelve cities, and ſev'n walled towns of ſtrength,
Beſide five hundred priſoners of eſteem;
Lets fall the ſword before your highneſs' feet:
And with ſubmiſſive loyalty of heart
Aſcribes the glory of his conqueſt got,
Firſt to my God, and next unto your grace.

K. *Henry.* Is this the fam'd lord *Talbot*, uncle *Glo'ſter*,
That hath ſo long been reſident in *France*?

Glou. Yes, if it pleaſe your Majeſty, my Liege.

K. *Henry.* Welcome brave captain and victorious lord.
When I was young (as yet I am not old)
I do remember how my father ſaid,
A ſtouter champion never handled ſword.
Long ſince we were reſolved of your truth,
Your faithful ſervice and your toil in war;
Yet never have you taſted our reward,

Or

Or been reguerdon'd with ſo much as thanks,
Becauſe 'till now we never ſaw your face:
Therefore ſtand up, and for theſe good deſerts,
We here create you Earl of *Shrewsbury*,
And in our coronation take your place. [*Exeunt.*

Manent Vernon *and* Baſſet.

Ver. Now Sir to you that were ſo hot at ſea,
Diſgracing of theſe colours that I wear
In honour of my noble lord of *York*;
Dar'ſt thou maintain the former words thou ſpak'ſt?

Baſ. Yes, Sir, as well as you dare patronage
The envious barking of your ſawcy tongue
Againſt the Duke of *Somerſet*.

Ver. Sirrah, thy lord I honour as he is.

Baſ. Why what is he? as good a man as *York*.

Ver. Hark ye; not ſo: in witneſs take you that. [*Strikes him.*

Baſ. Villain, thou know'ſt the law of arms is ſuch
That whoſo draws a ſword 'tis preſent death,
Or elſe this blow ſhould broach thy deareſt blood.
But I'll unto his Majeſty, and crave
I may have liberty to venge this wrong,
When thou ſhalt ſee I'll meet thee to thy coſt.

Ver. Well, miſcreant, I'll be there as ſoon as you,
And after meet you ſooner than you would. [*Exeunt.*

ACT IV. SCENE I.

PARIS.

Enter King Henry, Glouceſter, Wincheſter, York, Suffolk, Somerſet, Warwick, Talbot, Exeter, *and Governor of* Paris.

GLOUCESTER.

LORD Biſhop, ſet the crown upon his head.

Win. God ſave King *Henry*, of that name the Sixth.

Glou. Now governor of *Paris* take your oath,
That you elect no other King but him;
Eſteem none friends but ſuch as are his friends,
And none your foes, but ſuch as ſhall pretend
Malicious practices againſt his ſtate.
This ſhall ye do, ſo help you righteous God.

† *Enter* Falſtaff.

Fal. My gracious Soveraign, as I rode from *Calais*,
To haſte unto your coronation,
A letter was deliver'd to my hands,
Writ to your grace from the Duke of *Burgundy*.

Tal. Shame to the Duke of *Burgundy* and thee:
I vow'd, baſe Knight, when I did meet thee next,
To tear the garter from thy craven's leg,
Which I have done; becauſe unworthily
Thou waſt inſtalled in that high degree.
Pardon, my Princely *Henry*, and the reſt:
This daſtard, at the battle of *Poictiers*,

When

† *See the note on the fifth Scene of Act* 3.

When but in all I was ſix thouſand ſtrong,
And that the *French* were almoſt ten to one;
Before we met, or that a ſtroke was given,
Like to a truſty 'ſquire did run away.
In which aſſault we loſt twelve hundred men,
My ſelf and divers gentlemen beſide
Were there ſurpriz'd and taken priſoners.
Then judge, great lords, if I have done amiſs;
Or whether that ſuch cowards ought to wear
This ornament of knighthood, yea or no?

Glou. To ſay the truth, this fact was infamous,
And ill beſeeming any common man;
Much more a Knight, a captain, and a leader.

Tal. When firſt this order was ordain'd, my lords,
Knights of the garter were of noble birth,
Valiant and virtuous, full of haughty courage,
Such as were grown to credit by the wars;
Not fearing death, nor ſhrinking for diſtreſs,
But always reſolute in moſt extreams.
He then that is not furniſh'd in this ſort
Doth but uſurp the ſacred name of Knight,
Prophaning this moſt honourable order;
And ſhould, if I were worthy to be judge,
Be quite degraded, like a hedge-born ſwain
That doth preſume to boaſt of gentle blood.

K. *Henry.* Stain to thy countrymen, thou hear'ſt thy doom,
Be packing therefore thou that waſt a Knight;
Henceforth we baniſh thee on pain of death. [*Exit* Falſtaff.
And now, my lord Protector, view the letter
Sent from our uncle Duke of *Burgundy*.

Glou. What means his grace that he hath chang'd his ſtile?
No more but plain and bluntly, *To the King.* [*Reading.*
Hath he forgot he is his Soveraign?

Or

Or doth this churlish superscription
Portend some alteration in good will?
What's here? *I have upon especial cause,* [Reads.
Mov'd with compassion of my country's wrack,
Together with the pitiful complaints
Of such as your oppression feeds upon,
Forsaken your pernicious faction,
And join'd with Charles *the rightful King of* France.
O monstrous treachery! can this be so?
That in alliance, amity, and oaths,
There should be found such false dissembling guile?

K. *Henry.* What! doth my uncle *Burgundy* revolt?

Glou. He doth, my lord, and is become our foe.

K. *Henry.* Is that the worst this letter doth contain?

Glou. It is the worst, and all, my lord, he writes.

K. *Henry.* Why then lord *Talbot* there shall talk with him,
And give him chastisement for this abuse.
My lord, how say you, are you not content?

Tal. Content, my Liege? yes: but that I'm prevented,
I should have begg'd I might have been employ'd.

K. *Henry.* Then gather strength, and march unto him strait:
Let him perceive how ill we brook his treason,
And what offence it is to flout his friends.

Tal. I go, my lord, in heart desiring still
You may behold confusion of your foes. [*Exit* Talbot.

SCENE II.

Enter Vernon *and* Basset.

Ver. Grant me the combat, gracious Soveraign.

Bas. And me my lord, grant me the combat too.

York. This is my servant, hear him noble Prince.

Som. And this is mine, sweet *Henry* favour him.

K. *Henry.*

K. *Henry*. Be patient, lords, and give them leave to ſpeak.
Say, gentlemen, what makes you thus exclaim?
And wherefore crave you combat? or with whom?

Ver. With him, my lord, for he hath done me wrong.

Baſ. And I with him, for he hath done me wrong.

K. *Henry*. What is the wrong whereon you both complain?
Firſt let me know, and then I'll anſwer you.

Baſ. Croſſing the ſea from *England* into *France*,
This fellow here with ſharp and carping tongue
Upbraided me about the roſe I wear;
Saying the ſanguine colour of the leaves
Did repreſent my maſter's bluſhing cheeks;
When ſtubbornly he did repugn the truth
About a certain queſtion in the law,
Argu'd betwixt the Duke of *York* and him;
With other vile and ignominious terms.
In confutation of which rude reproach,
And in defence of my lord's worthineſs,
I crave the benefit of law of arms.

Ver. And that is my petition, noble lord;
For though he ſeem with forged quaint conceit
To ſet a gloſs upon his bold intent,
Yet know my lord I was provok'd by him,
And he firſt took exceptions at this badge,
Pronouncing that the paleneſs of this flow'r
Bewray'd the faintneſs of my maſter's heart.

York. Will not this malice, *Somerſet*, be left?

Som. Your private grudge, my lord of *York*, will out,
Though ne'er ſo cunningly you ſmother it.

K. *Henry*. Good lord! what madneſs rules in brain-ſick men!
When for ſo ſlight and frivolous a cauſe
Such factious emulations ſhall ariſe!
Good couſins both of *York* and *Somerſet*,

Quiet

Quiet your ſelves and be again at peace.

York. Let this diſſention firſt be try'd by fight,
And then your highneſs ſhall command a peace.

Som. The quarrel toucheth none but us alone,
Betwixt our ſelves let us decide it then.

York. There is my pledge, accept it *Somerſet.*

Ver. Nay, let it reſt where it began at firſt.

Baſ. Confirm it ſo, mine honourable lord.

Glou. Confirm it ſo? confounded be your ſtrife,
And periſh ye with your audacious prate;
Preſumptuous vaſſals, are you not aſham'd
With this immodeſt clamorous outrage
To trouble and diſturb the King and us?
And you, my lords, methinks you do not well
To bear with their perverſe objections:
Much leſs to take occaſion from their mouths
To raiſe a mutiny betwixt your ſelves:
Let me perſwade you take a better courſe.

Exe. It grieves his highneſs: good my lords, be friends.

K. *Henry.* Come hither you that would be combatants:
Henceforth I charge you, as you love our favour,
Quite to forget this quarrel and the cauſe.
And you, my lords, remember where we are,
In *France*, amongſt a fickle wavering nation:
If they perceive diſſention in our looks,
And that within our ſelves we diſagree,
How will their grudging ſtomachs be provok'd
To wilful diſobedience, and rebel?
Beſide what infamy will there ariſe,
When foreign Princes ſhall be certify'd,
That for a toy, a thing of no regard,
King *Henry*'s peers and chief nobility
Deſtroy'd themſelves, and loſt the realm of *France?*

O think upon the conqueſt of my father,
My tender years, and let us not forego
That for a trifle, which was bought with blood.
Let me be umpire in this doubtful ſtrife:
I ſee no reaſon, if I wear this roſe,
That any one ſhould therefore be ſuſpicious
I more encline to *Somerſet* than *York:*
Both are my kinſmen, and I love them both.
As well they may upbraid me with my crown,
Becauſe, forſooth, the King of *Scots* is crown'd.
But your diſcretions better can perſuade,
Than I am able to inſtruct or teach:
And therefore as we hither came in peace,
So let us ſtill continue peace and love.
Couſin of *York*, we inſtitute your grace
To be our Regent in theſe parts of *France:*
And good my lord of *Somerſet*, unite
Your troops of horſemen with his bands of foot;
And like true ſubjects, ſons of your progenitors,
Go chearfully together, and digeſt
Your angry choler on your enemies.
Our ſelf, my lord Protector, and the reſt,
After ſome reſpite will return to *Calais*;
From thence to *England*, where I hope ere long
To be preſented by your victories,
With *Charles*, *Alanſon*, and that trait'rous rout. [*Exeunt.*

Manent York, Warwick, Exeter, *and* Vernon.

War. My lord of *York*, I promiſe you the King
Moſt prettily methought did play the orator.
York. And ſo he did; but yet I like it not,
In that he wears the badge of *Somerſet.*
War. Tuſh, that was but his fancy, blame him not;

I dare presume, sweet Prince, he thought no harm.
York. And if I wish he did----- But let it rest,
Other affairs must now be managed. [*Exeunt.*

Flourish. Manet Exeter.

Exe. Well didst thou, *Richard*, to suppress thy voice:
For had the passions of thy heart burst out,
I fear we should have seen decypher'd there
More ranc'rous spight, more furious raging broils,
Than yet can be imagin'd or suppos'd.
But howsoe'er, no simple man that sees
This jarring discord of nobility,
This should'ring of each other in the court,
This factious bandying of their favourites;
But that he doth presage some ill event.
'Tis much, when sceptres are in childrens hands;
But more, when envy breeds unkind division:
Then comes the ruin, there begins confusion. [*Exit.*

SCENE III.

BOURDEAUX.

Enter Talbot *with trumpets, and drum.*

Tal. GO to the gates of *Bourdeaux*, trumpeter,
Summon their general unto the wall. [*Sounds.*

Enter General aloft.

English John Talbot, captains, calls you forth,
Servant in arms to *Harry* King of *England*;
And thus he would: open your city gates,
Be humbled to us, call my Soveraign yours,
And do him homage as obedient subjects,

And

And I'll withdraw me and my bloody pow'r.
But if you frown upon this proffer'd peace,
You tempt the fury of my three attendants,
Lean famine, quartering ſteel, and climbing fire;
Who in a moment even with the earth
Shall lay your ſtately and air-braving tow'rs,
If you forſake the offer of their love.

Cap. Thou ominous and fearful owl of death,
Our nation's terrour, and their bloody ſcourge!
The period of thy tyranny approacheth.
On us thou canſt not enter but by death:
For I proteſt we are well fortify'd,
And ſtrong enough to iſſue out and fight.
If thou retire, the Dauphin, well appointed,
Stands with the ſnares of war to tangle thee.
On either hand thee, there are ſquadrons pitch'd
To wall thee from the liberty of flight;
And no way canſt thou turn thee for redreſs,
But death doth front thee with apparent ſpoil,
And pale deſtruction meets thee in the face.
Ten thouſand *French* have ta'en the ſacrament,
To rive their dangerous artillery
Upon no chriſtian ſoul but *Engliſh Talbot.*
Lo there thou ſtand'ſt, a breathing valiant man,
Of an invincible, unconquer'd ſpirit:
This is the lateſt glory of thy praiſe,
That I thy enemy dew thee withal;
For ere the glaſs that now begins to run
Finiſh the proceſs of his ſandy hour,
Theſe eyes that ſee thee now well coloured,
Shall ſee thee wither'd, bloody, pale and dead. [*Drum afar off.*
Hark, hark, the Dauphin's drum, a warning bell,
Sings heavy muſick to thy tim'rous ſoul;

And mine ſhall ring thy dire departure out. [*Exit.*

Tal. He fables not. I hear the enemy:
Out ſome light horſemen, and peruſe their wings.
O negligent and heedleſs diſcipline!
How are we park'd and bounded in a pale?
A little herd of *England*'s tim'rous Deer,
Maz'd with a yelping kennel of *French* curs.
If we be *Engliſh* Deer, be then in blood;
Not raſcal-like to fall down with a pinch,
But rather moody, mad, and deſperate Stags,
Turn on the bloody hounds with heads of ſteel,
And make the cowards ſtand aloof at bay. *
God and St. *George*, *Talbot*, and *England*'s right,
Proſper our colours in this dangerous fight! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

Enter a Meſſenger that meets York. *Enter* York *with trumpet and many Soldiers.*

York. ARE not the ſpeedy ſcouts return'd again,
That dogg'd the mighty army of the Dauphin?

Meſſ. They are return'd, my lord, and give it out
That he is march'd to *Bourdeaux* with his pow'r,
To fight with *Talbot*; as he march'd along,
By your eſpyals were diſcovered
Two mightier troops than that the Dauphin led,
Which join'd with him, and made their march for *Bourdeaux*.

York. A plague upon that villain *Somerſet*,
That thus delays my promiſed ſupply

* ——— aloof at bay.
Sell every man his life as dear as mine,
And they ſhall find dear Deer of us, my friends.
God and St. *George*, &c.

Of

Of horſemen that were levied for this ſiege.
Renowned *Talbot* doth expect my aid,
And I am lowted by a traitor villain,
And cannot help the noble chevalier:
God comfort him in this neceſſity:
If he miſcarry, farewel wars in *France*.

Enter a ſecond Meſſenger.

2 *Meſſ.* Thou Princely leader of our *Engliſh* ſtrength,
Never ſo needful on the earth of *France*,
Spur to the reſcue of the noble *Talbot*
Who now is girdled with a waſte of iron,
And hem'd about with grim deſtruction:
To *Bourdeaux*, warlike Duke, to *Bourdeaux*, *York!*
Elſe farewel *Talbot*, *France*, and *England*'s honour.

York. O God! that *Somerſet*, who in proud heart
Doth ſtop my cornets, were in *Talbot*'s place:
So ſhould we ſave a valiant gentleman
By forfeiting a traitor and a coward:
Mad ire and wrathful fury makes me weep,
That thus we die while remiſs traitors ſleep.

Meſſ. O ſend ſome ſuccour to the diſtreſs'd lord.

York. He dies, we loſe; I break my warlike word:
We mourn, *France* ſmiles: we loſe, they daily get:
All long of this vile traitor *Somerſet*.

Meſſ. Then God take mercy on brave *Talbot*'s ſoul,
And on his ſon young *John*, who two hours ſince
I met in travel towards his warlike father;
This ſev'n years did not *Talbot* ſee his ſon,
And now they meet, where both their lives are done.

York. Alas! what joy ſhall noble *Talbot* have,
To bid his young ſon welcome to his grave!
Away, vexation almoſt ſtops my breath,
That ſundred friends greet in the hour of death.

Lucy

Lucy farewel, no more my fortune can,
But curse the cause, I cannot aid the man.
Maine, *Bloys*, *Poictiers*, and *Tours* are won away,
Long all of *Somerset* and his delay. [*Exit.*

Mess. Thus while the vulture of sedition,
Feeds in the bosom of such great commanders,
Sleeping neglection doth betray to loss
The conquests of our scarce cold conqueror,
That ever-living man of memory,
Henry the Fifth. While they each other cross,
Lives, honours, lands, and all, hurry to loss. [*Exit.*

SCENE V.

Enter Somerset *with his army.*

Som. IT is too late; I cannot send them now:
This expedition was by *York* and *Talbot*
Too rashly plotted. All our gen'ral force
Might with a sally of the very town
Be buckled with. The over-daring *Talbot*
Hath sullied all his gloss of former honour,
By this unheedful, desp'rate, wild adventure:
York set him on to fight, and die in shame,
That *Talbot* dead, great *York* might bear the name.

Capt. Here is Sir *William Lucy*, who with me
Set from our o'er-match'd forces forth for aid.

Som. How now, Sir *William*, whither were you sent?

Lucy. † Hither, my lord; from bought and sold lord *Talbot*.
Who ring'd about with bold adversity,
Cries out for noble *York* and *Somerset*,
To beat assailing death from his weak legions.

And

† *Whither my Lord?*

And while the honourable captain there
Drops bloody ſweat from his war-wearied limbs,
And in advantage ling'ring looks for reſcue;
You, his falſe hopes, the truſt of *England*'s honour,
Keep off aloof with worthleſs emulation.
Let not your private diſcord keep away
The levied ſuccours that ſhall lend him aid,
While he, renowned noble gentleman,
Yields up his life unto a world of odds.
Orleans the *Baſtard*, *Charles*, and *Burgundy*,
Alanſon, *Reignier*, compaſs him about,
And *Talbot* periſheth by your default.

Som. *York* ſet him on, *York* ſhould have ſent him aid.

Lucy. And *York* as faſt upon your grace exclaims,
Swearing that you with-hold his levied hoſt,
Collected for this expedition.

Som. *York* lies: he might have ſent, and had the horſe:
I owe him little duty and leſs love,
And take foul ſcorn to fawn on him by ſending.

Lucy. The fraud of *England*, not the force of *France*,
Hath now entrapt the noble-minded *Talbot*:
Never to *England* ſhall he bear his life,
But dies betray'd to fortune by your ſtrife.

Som. Come go, I will diſpatch the horſemen ſtrait:
Within ſix hours they will be at his aid.

Lucy. Too late comes reſcue now: he's ta'en or ſlain,
For fly he could not, if he would have fled:
And fly would *Talbot* never, though he might.

Som. If he be dead, brave *Talbot* then adieu.

Lucy. His Fame lives in the world, his ſhame in you.

[*Exeunt.*

SCENE

SCENE VI.

Near BOURDEAUX.

Enter Talbot *and his ſon.*

Tal. O Young *John Talbot*, I did ſend for thee
To tutor thee in ſtratagems of war,
That *Talbot*'s name might be in thee reviv'd,
When ſapleſs age and weak unable limbs
Should bring thy father to his drooping chair.
But, O malignant and ill-boading ſtars!
Now art thou come unto a feaſt of death,
A terrible and unavoided danger.
Therefore, dear boy, mount on thy ſwifteſt horſe,
And I'll direct thee how thou ſhalt eſcape
By ſudden flight. Come dally not, be gone.

John. Is my name *Talbot?* and am I your ſon?
And ſhall I fly? O! if you love my mother,
Diſhonour not her honourable name,
To make a baſtard and a ſlave of me.
The world will ſay he is not *Talbot*'s blood,
That baſely fled when noble *Talbot* ſtood.

Tal. Fly, to revenge my death if I be ſlain.

John. He that flies ſo, will ne'er return again.

Tal. If we both ſtay, we both are ſure to die.

John. Then let me ſtay, and father do you fly:
Your loſs is great, ſo your regard ſhould be;
My worth unknown, no loſs is known in me.
Upon my death the *French* can little boaſt;
In yours they will, in you all hopes are loſt.
Flight cannot ſtain the honour you have won,
But mine it will, that no exploit have done.

You

You fled for vantage, ev'ry one will ſwear:
But if I bow, they'll ſay it was for fear.
There is no hope that ever I will ſtay,
If the firſt hour I ſhrink and run away.
Here on my knee I beg mortality,
Rather than life preſerv'd with infamy.

Tal. Shall all thy mother's hopes lye in one tomb?

John. Ay rather than I'll ſhame my mother's womb.

Tal. Upon my bleſſing I command thee go.

John. To fight I will, but not to fly the foe.

Tal. Part of thy father may be ſav'd in thee.

John. No part of him but will be ſhame in me.

Tal. Thou never hadſt renown, and canſt not loſe it.

John. Yes, your renowned name; ſhall flight abuſe it?

Tal. Thy father's charge ſhall clear thee from the ſtain.

John. You cannot witneſs for me, being ſlain.
If death be ſo apparent, then both fly.

Tal. And leave my followers here to fight and die?
My age was never tainted with ſuch ſhame.

John. And ſhall my youth be guilty of ſuch blame?
No more can I be ſever'd from your ſide,
Than can your ſelf, your ſelf in twain divide:
Stay, go, do what you will, the like do I;
For live I will not; if my father die.

Tal. Then here I take my leave of thee, fair ſon,
Born to eclipſe thy life this afternoon:
Come, ſide by ſide together live and die,
And ſoul with ſoul from *France* to heav'n ſhall fly. [*Exeunt.*

Alarum: excurſions, wherein Talbot's *ſon is hemm'd about, and* Talbot *reſcues him.*

Tal. St. *George*, and victory! fight ſoldiers, fight:

The Regent hath with *Talbot* broke his word,
And left us to the rage of *France*'s ſword.
Where is *John Talbot?* pauſe, and take thy breath,
I gave thee life, and reſcu'd thee from death.
John. O twice my father, twice am I thy ſon:
The life thou gav'ſt me firſt was loſt and done,
'Till with thy warlike ſword, deſpight of fate,
To my determin'd time thou gav'ſt new date.
Tal. When from the Dauphin's creſt thy ſword ſtruck fire,
It warm'd thy father's heart with proud deſire
Of bold-fac'd victory. Then, leaden age
Quicken'd with youthful ſpleen and warlike rage,
Beat down *Alanſon*, *Orleans*, *Burgundy*,
And from the pride of *Gallia* reſcu'd thee.
The ireful baſtard *Orleans* that drew blood
From thee, my boy, and had the maidenhood
Of thy firſt Fight, I ſoon encountered;
And interchanging blows, I quickly ſhed
Some of his baſtard blood; then in diſgrace
Beſpoke him thus: Contaminated, baſe,
And miſ-begotten blood I ſpill of thine,
Mean and right poor, for that pure blood of mine,
Which thou didſt force from *Talbot*, my brave boy-----
Here purpoſing the Baſtard to deſtroy,
Came in ſtrong reſcue. Speak, thy father's care,
Art not thou weary, *John?* how doſt thou fare?
Wilt thou yet leave the battel, boy, and fly?
Now thou art ſeal'd the ſon of chivalry?
Fly, to revenge my death when I am dead;
The help of one ſtands me in little ſtead.
Oh too much folly is it, well I wot,
To hazard all our lives in one ſmall boat.

If

If I to-day die not with *Frenchmen's* rage,
To-morrow I ſhall die with mickle age.
By me they nothing gain; and if I ſtay,
'Tis but the ſhortning of my life one day.
In thee thy mother dies, our houſhold's name,
My death's revenge, thy youth, and *England's* fame:
All theſe and more we hazard by thy ſtay;
All theſe are ſav'd if thou wilt fly away.

John. The ſword of *Orleans* hath not made me ſmart,
Theſe words of yours draw life-blood from my heart.
On that advantage bought with ſuch a ſhame,
To ſave a paltry life, and ſlay bright fame,
Before young *Talbot* from old *Talbot* fly,
The coward horſe that bears me, fall and die!
And like me to the peaſant boys of *France*,
To be ſhame's ſcorn, and ſubject of miſchance.
Surely by all the glory you have won,
And if I fly, I am not *Talbot's* ſon:
Then talk no more of flight, it is no boot,
If ſon to *Talbot* die at *Talbot's* foot.

Tal. Then follow thou thy deſp'rate Sire of *Creet*,
Thou *Icarus*, thy life to me is ſweet:
If thou wilt fight, fight by thy father's ſide,
And commendable prov'd, let's die in pride. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

Alarum. Excurſions. Enter old Talbot *led.*

Tal. Where is my other life? mine own is gone.
O! where's young *Talbot?* where is valiant *John?*
Triumphant death ſmear'd with captivity!
Young *Talbot's* valour makes me ſmile at thee.

When he perceiv'd me ſhrink and on my knee,
His bloody ſword he brandiſh'd over me,
And like a hungry Lion did commence
Rough deeds of rage, and ſtern impatience:
But when my angry guardant ſtood alone,
Tendring my ruin, and aſſail'd of none,
Dizzy-ey'd fury and great rage of heart
Suddenly made him from my ſide to ſtart
Into the cluſt'ring battel of the *French:*
And in that ſea of blood my boy did drench
His over-mounting ſpirit; and there dy'd
My *Icarus*, my bloſſom, in his pride!

Enter John Talbot, *born.*

Serv. O my dear lord! lo where your ſon is born.

Tal. Thou antick death, which laugh'ſt us here to ſcorn,
Anon, from thy inſulting tyranny,
Coupled in bonds of perpetuity,
Two *Talbots* winged through the † lither ſky,
In thy deſpight ſhall ſcape mortality.
O thou, whoſe wounds become hard-favoured death,
Speak to thy father ere thou yield thy breath. *
Come, come, and lay him in his father's arms,
My ſpirit can no longer bear theſe harms.
Soldiers adieu: I have what I would have,
Now my old arms are young *John Talbot*'s grave. [*Dies.*

*——yield thy breath.
Brave death by ſpeaking, whether he will or no:
Imagine him a *Frenchman*, and thy foe.
Poor boy, he ſmiles, methinks, as who ſhould ſay,
Had death been *French*, then death had died to-day.
Come, come, *&c.*

† lither, ſmooth, gentle.

ACT V. SCENE I.

Continues near Bourdeaux.

Enter Charles, Alanſon, Burgundy, *Baſtard, and* Pucelle.

CHARLES.

HAD *York* and *Somerſet* brought reſcue in,
We ſhould have found a bloody day of this.
Baſt. How the young whelp of *Talbot*'s raging brood
Did fleſh his puny ſword in *Frenchmens* blood!
Pucel. Once I encounter'd him, and thus I ſaid:
Thou maiden youth, be vanquiſh'd by a maid.
But with a proud, majeſtical, high ſcorn
He anſwer'd thus: young *Talbot* was not born
To be the pillage of a † giglot wench.
So left me proudly, as unworthy fight.
Bur. Doubtleſs he would have made a noble Knight:
See where he lyes inherſed in the arms
Of the moſt bloody nurſer of his harms.
Baſt. Hew them to pieces, hack their bones aſunder,
Whoſe life was *England*'s glory, *Gallia*'s wonder.
Char. Oh no: forbear: for that which we have fled
During the life, let us not wrong it dead.

Enter Lucy.

Lucy. Conduct me to the Dauphin's tent, to know
Who hath obtain'd the glory of the day.
Char. On what ſubmiſſive meſſage art thou ſent?

Lucy.

† giglot, *a* Drab, Strumpet.

Lucy. Submiſſion, Dauphin? 'tis a meer *French* word:
We *Engliſh* warriors wot not what it means.
I come to know what priſoners thou haſt ta'en,
And to ſurvey the bodies of the dead.

Char. For priſoners ask'ſt thou? hell our priſon is.
But tell me whom thou ſeek'ſt?

Lucy. Where is the great *Alcides* of the field,
Valiant lord *Talbot*, Earl of *Shrewsbury*?
Created for his rare ſucceſs in arms,
Great Earl of *Waſhford*, *Waterford*, and *Valence*,
Lord *Talbot* of *Goodrig* and *Urchinfield*;
Lord *Strange* of *Blackmere*, lord *Verdon* of *Alton*,
Lord *Cromwel* of *Wingfield*, lord *Furnival* of *Sheffeild*,
The thrice victorious lord of *Falconbridge*,
Knight of the noble order of St. *George*,
Worthy St. *Michael*, and the *Golden Fleece*,
Great Marſhal to our King *Henry* the Sixth
Of all his wars within the realm of *France*.

Pucel. Here is a ſilly, ſtately ſtile indeed:
The *Turk* that two and fifty kingdoms hath,
Writes not ſo tedious a ſtile as this.
Him that thou magnify'ſt with all theſe titles,
Stinking and fly-blown lyes here at our feet.

Lucy. Is *Talbot* ſlain, the *Frenchmens* only ſcourge,
Your kingdom's terrour and black *Nemeſis*?
Oh were mine eye-balls into bullets turn'd,
That I in rage might ſhoot them at your faces.
Oh, that I could but call theſe dead to life,
It were enough to fright the realm of *France*.
Were but his picture left among you here,
It would amaze the proudeſt of you all.
Give me their bodies that I may bear them hence,
And give them burial, as beſeems their worth.

Pucel.

Pucel. I think this upſtart is old *Talbot*'s ghoſt,
He ſpeaks with ſuch a proud commanding ſpirit:
For God's ſake let him have him; to keep them here,
They would but ſtink and putrifie the air.
Char. Go take their bodies hence.
Lucy. I'll bear them hence;
But from their aſhes Dauphin ſhall be rear'd
A Phœnix that ſhall make all *France* afear'd.
Char. So we be rid of them, do what thou wilt:
And now to *Paris* in this conqu'ring vein;
All will be ours, now bloody *Talbot*'s ſlain. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.

Changes to England.

Enter King Henry, Glouceſter, *and* Exeter.

K. *Henry.* HAVE you perus'd the letters from the Pope,
The Emperor, and Earl of *Armagnac?*
Glou. I have my lord, and their intent is this,
They humbly ſue unto your excellence,
To have a godly peace concluded of,
Between the realms of *England* and of *France.*
K. *Henry.* How doth your grace affect this motion?
Glou. Well my good lord, and as the only means
To ſtop effuſion of our Chriſtian blood,
And ſtabliſh quietneſs on ev'ry ſide.
K. *Henry.* Ay marry, uncle, for I always thought
It was both impious and unnatural,
That ſuch immanity and bloody ſtrife
Should reign among profeſſors of one faith.
Glou. Beſide, my lord, the ſooner to effect
And ſurer bind this knot of amity,

The

The Earl of *Armagnac*, near kin to *Charles*,
A man of great authority in *France*,
Proffers his only daughter to your grace
In marriage, with a large and ſumptuous dowry.

K. *Henry*. Marriage, alas! my years are yet too young:
And fitter is my ſtudy and my books,
Than wanton dalliance with a paramour.
Yet call th' ambaſſadors, and as you pleaſe,
So let them have their anſwers ev'ry one.
I ſhall be well content with any choice
Tends to God's glory, and my country's weal.

Enter Wincheſter, *and three Ambaſſadors.*

Exe. What, is my lord of *Wincheſter* inſtall'd,
And call'd unto a Cardinal's degree?
Then I perceive that will be verify'd
Henry the Fifth did ſometime propheſie.
If once he come to be a Cardinal,
He'll make his cap coequal with the crown.

K. *Henry*. My lords ambaſſadors, your ſev'ral ſuits
Have been conſider'd and debated on:
Your purpoſe is both good and reaſonable;
And therefore are we certainly reſolv'd
To draw conditions of a friendly peace,
Which by my lord of *Wincheſter* we mean
Shall be tranſported preſently to *France*.

Glou. And for the proffer of my lord your maſter,
I have inform'd his highneſs ſo at large,
As liking of the lady's virtuous gifts,
Her beauty and the value of her dower,
He doth intend ſhe ſhall be *England*'s Queen.

K. *Henry*. In argument and proof of which contract,
Bear her this jewel, pledge of my affection.

And ſo, my Lord Protector, ſee them guarded,
And ſafely brought to *Dover*, where inſhipp'd
Commit them to the fortune of the ſea. [*Exeunt.*

Win. Stay, my lord *Legate*, you ſhall firſt receive
The ſum of mony which I promiſed
Should be deliver'd to his holineſs,
For cloathing me in theſe grave ornaments.

Legate. I will attend upon your lordſhip's leiſure.

Win. Now *Wincheſter* will not ſubmit I trow,
Or be inferior to the proudeſt Peer.
Humphrey of *Glo'ſter*, thou ſhalt well perceive
That nor in birth, or for authority,
The Biſhop will be over-born by thee;
I'll either make thee ſtoop and bend thy knee,
Or ſack this country with a mutiny. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

FRANCE.

Enter Dauphin, Burgundy, Alanſon, *Baſtard*, Reignier, *and* Joan la Pucelle.

Dau. THIS news, my lords, may cheer our drooping Spirits:
'Tis ſaid the ſtout *Pariſians* do revolt,
And turn again unto the warlike *French*.

Alan. Then march to *Paris*, royal *Charles* of *France*,
And keep not back your pow'r in dalliance.

Pucel. Peace be amongſt them if they turn to us,
Elſe Ruin combat with their palaces.

Enter Scout.

Scout. Succeſs unto our valiant general,
And happineſs to his accomplices.

Dau. What tidings ſend our ſcouts? I pr'ythee ſpeak.

Scout. The *Engliſh* army that divided was
Into two parts, is now conjoin'd in one,
And means to give you battel preſently.

Dau. Somewhat too ſudden, Sirs, the warning is,
But we will preſently provide for them.

Burg. I truſt the ghoſt of *Talbot* is not there;
Now he is gone, my lord, you need not fear.

Pucel. Of all baſe paſſions fear is moſt accurſt.
Command the conqueſt, *Charles*, it ſhall be thine:
Let *Henry* fret, and all the world repine.

Dau. Then on, my lords, and *France* be fortunate. [*Exe.*

Alarm: excurſions. Enter Joan la Pucelle.

Pucel. The Regent conquers, and the *Frenchmen* fly.
Now help ye charming ſpells and † periapts;
And ye choice ſpirits that admoniſh me,
And give me ſigns of future accidents: [*Thunder.*
You ſpeedy helpers that are ſubſtitutes
Under the lordly monarch of the North,
Appear, and aid me in this enterprize.

Enter Fiends.

This ſpeedy quick appearance argues proof
Of your accuſtom'd diligence to me.
Now ye familiar ſpirits that are cull'd
Out of the pow'rful regions under earth,
Help me this once, that *France* may get the field.
[*They walk, and ſpeak not.*
Oh hold me not with ſilence over long:
Where I was wont to feed you with my blood,

† *Charms ſow'd up, from* περράπλο, *to* ſowe. *Ezek.* xiii. 18. Woe to them that ſowe pillows to all armholes, to hunt ſouls.

I'll

I'll lop a member off, and give it you
In earneſt of a further benefit:
So you do condeſcend to help me now. [*They hang their heads.*
No hope to have redreſs? my body ſhall
Pay recompence, if you will grant my ſuit.
[*They ſhake their heads.*
Cannot my body nor blood-ſacrifice
Intreat you to your wonted furtherance?
Then take my ſoul; my body, ſoul and all,
Before that *England* give the *French* the foil. [*They depart.*
See, they forſake me. Now the time is come,
That *France* muſt vail her lofty plumed creſt,
And let her head fall into *England*'s lap.
My ancient incantations are too weak,
And hell too ſtrong for me to buckle with:
Now *France* thy glory droopeth to the duſt. [*Exit.*

Excurſions. Pucelle *and* York *fight hand to hand.* Pucelle *is taken.* *The* French *fly.*

York. Damſel of *France*, I think I have you faſt.
Unchain your ſpirits now with ſpelling charms,
And try if they can gain your liberty.
A goodly prize fit for the devil's grace!
See how the ugly witch doth bend her brows,
As if, with *Circe*, ſhe would change my ſhape.
Pucel. Chang'd to a worſer ſhape thou canſt not be.
York. Oh, *Charles* the Dauphin is a proper man,
No ſhape but his can pleaſe your dainty eye.
Pucel. A plaguing miſchief light on *Charles* and thee,
And may ye both be ſuddenly ſurpris'd
By bloody hands, in ſleeping on your beds.
York. Fell banning hag, inchantreſs hold thy tongue.
Pucel. I pr'ythee give me leave to curſe awhile.

York. Curſe, miſcreant, when thou comeſt to the ſtake.
[*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

Alarm. Enter Suffolk *with* Margaret *in his hand.*

Suf. Be what thou wilt, thou art my priſoner. [*Gazes on her.*
Oh faireſt beauty, do not fear nor fly,
For I will touch thee but with reverend hands:
I kiſs theſe fingers for eternal peace,
And lay them gently on thy tender ſide.
Who art thou? ſay; that I may honour thee.

Mar. Margaret my name, and daughter to a King,
The King of *Naples*, whoſoe'er thou art.

Suf. An Earl I am, and *Suffolk* am I call'd.
Be not offended, nature's miracle,
Thou art allotted to be ta'en by me:
So doth the Swan her downy cignets ſave,
Keeping them pris'ners underneath her wings.
Yet if this ſervile uſage once offend,
Go and be free again, as *Suffolk*'s friend. [*She is going.*
Oh ſtay! I have no pow'r to let her paſs,
My hand would free her, but my heart ſays no.
As plays the ſun upon the glaſſy ſtreams,
Twinkling another counterfeited beam,
So ſeems this gorgeous beauty to mine eyes.
Fain would I woe her, yet I dare not ſpeak:
I'll call for pen and ink, and write my mind.
Fie, *De la Pole*, diſable not thy ſelf:
Haſt not a tongue? is ſhe not here thy pris'ner?
Wilt thou be daunted at a woman's ſight?
Oh, beauty's princely majeſty is ſuch,
Confounds the tongue, and makes the ſenſes rough.

Mar. Say, Earl of *Suffolk*, if thy name be ſo,

What

What ranſom muſt I pay before I paſs?
For I perceive I am thy priſoner.
Suf. How canſt thou tell ſhe will deny thy ſuit,
Before thou make a tryal of her love? [*Aſide.*
Mar. Why ſpeak'ſt thou not? what ranſom muſt I pay?
Suf. She's beautiful; and therefore to be wooed:
She is a woman; therefore to be won. [*Aſide.*
Mar. Wilt thou accept of ranſom, yea or no?
Suf. Fond man, remember that thou haſt a wife,
Then how can *Margaret* be thy paramour? [*Aſide.*
Mar. 'Twere beſt to leave him, for he will not hear.
Suf. There all is marr'd; there lies a cooling card.
Mar. He talks at random; ſure the man is mad.
Suf. And yet a diſpenſation may be had.
Mar. And yet I would that you would anſwer me.
Suf. I'll win this lady *Margaret.* For whom?
Why, for my King: *
Yet ſo my fancy may be ſatisfy'd,
And peace eſtabliſhed between theſe realms.
But there remains a ſcruple in that too:
For though her father be the King of *Naples*,
Duke of *Anjou* and *Main*, yet he is poor,
And our nobility will ſcorn the match. [*Aſide.*
Mar. Hear ye me, captain? are ye not at leiſure?
Suf. It ſhall be ſo, diſdain they ne'er ſo much:
Henry is youthful, and will quickly yield.
Madam, I have a ſecret to reveal.
Mar. What tho' I be inthrall'd, he ſeems a Knight,
And will not any way diſhonour me.
Suf. Lady, vouchſafe to liſten what I ſay.

* Why, for my King: Tuſh, that's a wooden thing.
Mar. He talks of wood: it is ſome carpenter.
Suf. Yet ſo my fancy, *&c.*

Mar.

Mar. Perhaps I ſhall be reſcu'd by the *French*,
And then I need not crave his courteſie.
Suf. Sweet madam give me hearing in a cauſe.
Mar. Tuſh, women have been captivate ere now. *
Suf. Say, gentle Princeſs, would you not ſuppoſe
Your bondage happy, to be made a Queen?
Mar. To be a Queen in bondage, is more vile
Than is a ſlave in baſe ſervility:
For Princes ſhould be free.
Suf. And ſo ſhall you,
If happy *England*'s Royal King be free.
Mar. Why, what concerns his freedom unto me?
Suf. I'll undertake to make thee *Henry*'s Queen,
To put a golden ſcepter in thy hand,
And ſet a precious crown upon thy head,
If thou wilt condeſcend to be my-----
Mar. What?
Suf. His love.
Mar. I am unworthy to be *Henry*'s wife.
Suf. No, gentle madam, I unworthy am
To woo ſo fair a dame to be his wife,
And have no portion in the choice my ſelf.
How ſay you, madam, are you ſo content?
Mar. And if my father pleaſe, I am content.
Suf. Then call our captains and our colours forth.
And, madam, at your father's caſtle walls,
We'll crave a parley to confer with him.

* ——captivate ere now.
Suf. Lady, wherefore talk you ſo?
Mar. I cry you mercy, 'tis but *Quid* for *Quo*.
Suf. Say, gentle Princeſs, *&c.*

SCENE

SCENE V.

Sound. Enter Reignier *on the walls.*

Suff. See, *Reignier*, ſee, thy daughter priſoner.
Reig. To whom?
Suf. To me.
Reig. Suffolk, what remedy?
I am a ſoldier and unapt to weep,
Or to exclaim on fortune's fickleneſs.
Suf. Yes, there is remedy enough, my lord:
Conſent, and for thy honour give conſent,
Thy daughter ſhall be wedded to my King;
Whom I with pain have woo'd and won thereto;
And this her eaſie-held impriſonment
Hath gain'd thy daughter Princely liberty.
Reig. Speaks *Suffolk* as he thinks?
Suf. Fair *Margaret* knows,
That *Suffolk* doth not flatter, face or fain.
Reig. Upon thy Princely warrant I deſcend;
To give thee anſwer of thy juſt demand.
Suf. And here I will expect thy coming.

Trumpets ſound. Enter Reignier.

Reig. Welcome, brave Earl, into our territories,
Command in *Anjou* what your honour pleaſes.
Suf. Thanks, *Reignier*, happy in ſo ſweet a child,
Fit to be made companion of a King:
What anſwer makes your grace unto my ſuit?
Reig. Since thou doſt deign to woo her little worth,
To be the Princely bride of ſuch a lord:
Upon condition I may quietly
Enjoy mine own, the country *Main* and *Anjou*,

Free

Free from oppreſſion or the ſtroke of war,
My daughter ſhall be *Henry*'s, if he pleaſe.
Suf. That is her ranſom, I deliver her;
And thoſe two counties I will undertake
Your grace ſhall well and quietly enjoy.
Reig. And I again in *Henry*'s Royal name,
As deputy unto that gracious King,
Give thee her hand for ſign of plighted faith.
Suf. Reignier of *France*, I give thee kingly thanks,
Becauſe this is in traffick of a King.
And yet methinks I could be well content
To be mine own attorney in this caſe. [*Aſide.*
I'll over then to *England* with this News,
And make this marriage to be ſolemniz'd:
So farewel *Reignier*, ſet this diamond ſafe
In golden palaces as it becomes.
Reig. I do embrace thee, as I would embrace
The Chriſtian Prince King *Henry*, were he here.
Mar. Farewel my lord: good wiſhes, praiſe and pray'rs
Shall *Suffolk* ever have of *Margaret*. [*She is going.*
Suf. Farewel ſweet madam; hark you *Margaret*,
No princely commendations to my King?
Mar. Such commendations as become a maid,
A virgin and his ſervant, ſay to him.
Suf. Words ſweetly plac'd, and modeſtly directed.
But madam, I muſt trouble you again,
No loving token to his majeſty?
Mar. Yes, my good lord, a pure unſpotted heart,
Never yet taint with love I ſend the King.
Suf. And this withal. [*Kiſſes her.*
Mar. That for thy ſelf---- I will not ſo preſume,
To ſend ſuch peeviſh tokens to a King.
Suf. O wert thou for my ſelf----- but *Suffolk* ſtay,

Thou may'ſt not wander in that labyrinth,
There minotaurs and ugly treaſons lurk.
Sollicit *Henry* with her wond'rous praiſe,
Bethink thee on her virtues that ſurmount,
Her nat'ral graces that extinguiſh art;
Repeat their ſemblance often on the ſeas,
That when thou com'ſt to kneel at *Henry*'s feet,
Thou may'ſt bereave him of his wits with wonder. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI.

Enter York, Warwick, *a Shepherd, and* Pucelle.

York. BRING forth that ſorcereſs condemn'd to burn.

Shep. Ah *Joan*, this kills thy father's heart outright;
Have I ſought ev'ry country far and near,
And now it is my chance to find thee out
Muſt I behold thy timeleſs cruel death!
Ah *Joan*, ſweet daughter, I will die with thee.

Pucel. Decrepid miſer, baſe ignoble wretch,
I am deſcended of a gentler blood.
Thou art no father nor no friend of mine.

Shep. Out, out----- my lords, an pleaſe you 'tis not ſo,
I did beget her, all the pariſh knows:
Her mother living yet, can teſtify
She was the firſt fruit of my batch'lorſhip.

War. Graceleſs, wilt thou deny thy parentage?

York. This argues what her kind of life hath been,
Wicked and vile, and ſo her death concludes.

Shep. Fie *Joan*, that thou wilt be ſo obſtacle:
God knows thou art a collop of my fleſh,
And for thy ſake have I ſhed many a tear;
Deny me not, I pray thee, gentle *Joan*.

Pucel. Peaſant, avaunt. You have ſuborn'd this man
Of purpoſe to obſcure my noble birth.
Shep. 'Tis true, I gave a noble to the prieſt,
The morn that I was wedded to her mother.
Kneel down and take my bleſſing, good my girl.
Wilt thou not ſtoop? now curſed be the time
Of thy nativity; I would the milk
Thy mother gave thee when thou ſuck'dſt her breaſt,
Had been a little ratsbane for thy ſake:
Or elſe when thou did'ſt keep my lambs a-field,
I wiſh ſome rav'nous wolf had eaten thee.
Doſt thou deny thy father, curſed drab?
O burn her, burn her, hanging is too good. [*Exit.*
York. Take her away, for ſhe hath liv'd too long,
To fill the world with vitious qualities.
Pucel. Firſt let me tell you whom you have condemn'd,
Not me begotten of a ſhepherd ſwain,
But iſſu'd from the progeny of Kings;
Virtuous and holy, choſen from above,
By inſpiration of celeſtial grace,
To work exceeding miracles on earth.
I never had to do with wicked ſpirits.
But you that are polluted with your luſts,
Stain'd with the guitleſs blood of innocents,
Corrupt and tainted with a thouſand vices,
Becauſe you want the grace that others have,
You judge it ſtreight a thing impoſſible
To compaſs wonders, but by help of devils.
No, miſconceived *Joan* of *Arc* hath been
A virgin from her tender infancy,
Chaſte and immaculate in very thought;
Whoſe maiden-blood thus rig'rouſly effus'd,
Will cry for vengeance at the gates of heav'n.

York.

York. Ay, ay; away with her to execution.

War. And heark ye, Sirs; becauſe ſhe is a maid,
Spare for no faggots, let there be enow:
Place pitchy barrels on the fatal ſtake,
That ſo her torture may be ſhortened.

Pucel. Will nothing turn your unrelenting hearts?
Then *Joan* diſcover thine infirmity,
That warranteth by law to be thy privilege.
I am with child, ye bloody homicides:
Murther not then the fruit within my womb,
Although ye hale me to a violent death.

York. Now heav'n forefend! the holy maid with child?

War. The greateſt miracle that ere you wrought:
Is all your ſtrict preciſeneſs come to this?

York. She and the Dauphin have been juggling ſure,
I did imagine what would be her refuge.

War. Well go to, we will have no baſtards live,
Eſpecially ſince *Charles* muſt father it.

Pucel. You are deceiv'd, my child is none of his,
It was *Alanſon* that enjoy'd my love.

York. * It dies, and if it had a thouſand lives.

Pucel. O give me leave, I have deluded you;
'Twas neither *Charles*, nor yet the Duke I nam'd,
But *Reignier* King of *Naples* that prevail'd.

War. A married man! that's moſt intolerable.

York. Why here's a girl; I think ſhe knows not well
(There were ſo many) whom ſhe may accuſe.

War. It's ſign ſhe had been liberal and free.

York. And yet forſooth ſhe is a virgin pure.
Strumpet, thy words condemn thy brat and thee.
Uſe no intreaty, for it is in vain.

Pucel. Then lead me hence; with whom I leave my curſe.

* *York. Alanſon!* that notorious *Machiavel!*
It dies——

May never glorious ſun reflex his beams
Upon the country where you make abode;
But darkneſs and the gloomy ſhade of death
Inviron you, 'till miſchief and deſpair
Drive you to break your necks, or hang your ſelves. [*Exit.*

York. Break thou in pieces, and conſume to aſhes,
Thou foul accurſed miniſter of hell.

SCENE VII.

Enter Cardinal of Wincheſter.

Car. Lord Regent, I do greet your excellence
With letters of commiſſion from the King.
For know, my lords, the ſtates of Chriſtendom,
Mov'd with remorſe of theſe outrageous broils,
Have earneſtly implor'd a gen'ral peace
Betwixt our nation and th' aſpiring *French*;
And ſee at hand the Dauphin and his train
Approaching, to confer about ſome matters.

York. Is all our travel turn'd to this effect?
After the ſlaughter of ſo many peers,
So many captains, gentlemen and ſoldiers,
That in this quarrel have been overthrown,
And ſold their bodies for their country's benefit,
Shall we at laſt conclude effeminate peace?
Have we not loſt moſt part of all the towns,
By treaſon, falſhood, and by treachery,
Our great progenitors had conquered?
Oh *Warwick*, *Warwick*, I foreſee with grief
The utter loſs of all the realm of *France*.

War. Be patient, *York*; if we conclude a peace,
It ſhall be with ſuch ſtrict and ſevere covenants,
As little ſhall the *Frenchmen* gain thereby.

Enter

Enter Charles, Alanſon, *Baſtard and* Reignier.

Char. Since, lords of *England*, it is thus agreed,
That peaceful truce ſhall be proclaim'd in *France*;
We come to be informed by your ſelves,
What the conditions of that league muſt be.

York. Speak, *Wincheſter*; for boiling choler chokes
The hollow paſſage of my poiſon'd voice,
By ſight of theſe our baleful enemies.

Win. Charles and the reſt, it is enacted thus:
That in regard King *Henry* gives conſent,
Of meer compaſſion and of lenity
To eaſe your country of diſtreſsful war,
And ſuffer you to breathe in fruitful peace;
You ſhall become true liegemen to his crown.
And *Charles*, upon condition thou wilt ſwear
To pay him tribute and ſubmit thy ſelf,
Thou ſhalt be plac'd as Viceroy under him,
And ſtill enjoy thy regal dignity.

Alan. Muſt he be then a ſhadow of himſelf?
Adorn his temples with a coronet,
And yet in ſubſtance and authority
Retain but privilege of a private man?
This proffer is abſurd and reaſonleſs.

Char. 'Tis known already that I am poſſeſt
Of more than half the *Gallian* territories,
And therein rev'renc'd for their lawful King.
Shall I for lucre of the reſt un-vanquiſh'd,
Detract ſo much from that prerogative,
As to be call'd but Viceroy of the whole?
No, lord ambaſſador, I'll rather keep
That which I have, than coveting for more
Be caſt from poſſibility of all.

York.

York. Insulting *Charles*, hast thou by secret means
Us'd intercession to obtain a league,
And now the matter grows to compromise,
Stand'st thou aloof upon comparison?
Either accept the title thou usurp'st,
Of benefit proceeding from our King,
And not of any challenge of desert,
Or we will plague thee with incessant wars.

Reig. My lord, you do not well in obstinacy
To cavil in the course of this contract:
If once it be neglected, ten to one
We shall not find like opportunity.

Alan. To say the truth, it is your policy
To save your subjects from such massacre
And ruthless slaughters, as are daily seen
By our proceeding in hostility.
And therefore take this compact of a truce,
Although you break it when your pleasure serves.

[*Aside to the Dauphin.*

War. How say'st thou, *Charles*? shall our condition stand?

Char. It shall:
Only reserv'd you claim no interest
In any of our towns of garrison.

York. Then swear allegiance to his Majesty,
As thou art Knight, never to disobey
Nor be rebellious to the crown of *England:*
Thou, nor thy nobles, to the crown of *England.*
So now dismiss your army when you please:
Hang up your ensigns, let your drums be still,
For here we entertain a solemn peace. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE

SCENE VIII.

Changes to England.

Enter Suffolk *in conference with King* Henry, Glouceſter *and* Exeter.

K. *Henry.* YOUR wond'rous rare deſcription, noble Earl,
Of beauteous *Margaret* hath aſtoniſh'd me:
Her virtues graced with external gifts,
Do breed love's ſettled paſſions in my heart.
And like as rigour of tempeſtuous guſts
Provokes the mightieſt hulk againſt the tide,
So am I driv'n by breath of her renown,
Either to ſuffer ſhipwrack, or arrive
Where I may have fruition of her love.

Suf. Tuſh, my good lord, this ſuperficial tale
Is but a preface to her worthy praiſe:
The chief perfections of that lovely dame
(Had I ſufficient skill to utter them)
Would make a volume of inticing lines,
Able to raviſh any dull conceit.
And which is more, ſhe is not ſo divine,
So full repleat with choice of all delights,
But with as humble lowlineſs of mind
She is content to be at your command:
Command, I mean, of virtuous chaſte intents,
To love and honour *Henry* as her lord.

K. *Henry.* And otherwiſe will *Henry* ne'er preſume:
Therefore, my lord protector, give conſent
That *Marg'ret* may be *England*'s Royal Queen.

Glou. So ſhould I give conſent to flatter ſin.
You know, my lord, your highneſs is betroth'd
Unto another lady of eſteem.

How

How ſhall we then diſpenſe with the contract,
And not deface your honour with reproach?
Suf. As doth a ruler with unlawful oaths;
Or one that at a triumph having vow'd
To try his ſtrength, forſaketh yet the liſts
By reaſon of his adverſary's odds.
A poor Earl's daughter is unequal odds,
And therefore may be broke without offence.
Glou. Why what I pray is *Marg'ret* more than that?
Her father is no better than an Earl,
Although in glorious titles he excell.
Suf. Yes, my good lord, her father is a King,
The King of *Naples* and *Jeruſalem*,
And of ſuch great authority in *France*
That his alliance will confirm our peace,
And keep the *Frenchmen* in allegiance.
Glou. And ſo the Earl of *Armagnac* may do,
Becauſe he is near kinſman unto *Charles*.
Exe. Beſide his wealth doth warrant lib'ral dow'r,
While *Reignier* ſooner will receive than give.
Suf. A dow'r, my lords! diſgrace not ſo your King,
That he ſhould be ſo abject, baſe and poor,
To chuſe for wealth, and not for perfect love.
Henry is able to enrich his Queen,
And not to ſeek a Queen to make him rich.
So worthleſs peaſants bargain for their wives,
As market-men for Oxen, Sheep or Horſe.
But marriage is a matter of more worth,
Than to be dealt in by attorneyſhip:
Not whom we will, but whom his grace affects,
Muſt be companion of his nuptial bed.
And therefore, lords, ſince he affects her moſt,
It moſt of all theſe reaſons bindeth us,

In our opinions ſhe ſhould be preferr'd;
For what is wedlock forced, but a hell,
An age of diſcord and continual ſtrife?
Whereas the contrary bringeth forth bliſs,
And is a pattern of celeſtial peace.
Whom ſhould we match with *Henry*, being a King,
But *Marg'ret*, that is daughter to a King?
Her peerleſs feature, joined with her birth,
Approves her fit for none, but for a King.
Her valiant courage, and undaunted ſpirit,
More than in woman commonly is ſeen,
Anſwer our hope in iſſue of a King:
For *Henry*, ſon unto a conqueror,
Is likely to beget more conquerors,
If with a lady of ſo high reſolve
As is fair *Marg'ret*, he be link'd in love.
Then yield my lords, and here conclude with me,
That *Marg'ret* ſhall be Queen, and none but ſhe.

K. *Henry*. Whether it be through force of your report
My noble lord of *Suffolk*; or for that
My tender youth was never yet attaint
With any paſſion of inflaming love,
I cannot tell; but this I am aſſur'd,
I feel ſuch ſharp diſſention in my breaſt,
Such fierce alarums both of hope and fear,
As I am ſick with working of my thoughts.
Take therefore ſhipping; poſt, my lord, to *France*,
Agree to any covenants, and procure
That lady *Marg'ret* do vouchſafe to come
To croſs the ſeas to *England*, and be crown'd
King *Henry*'s faithful and anointed Queen.
For your expences and ſufficient charge,
Among the people gather up a tenth.

Be gone, I say; for 'till you do return,
I am perplexed with a thousand cares.
And you, good uncle, banish all offence:
If you do censure me, by what you were,
Not what you are, I know it will excuse
This sudden execution of my will.
And so conduct me, where from company
I may revolve and ruminate my grief. [*Exit.*

Glo. Ay, grief I fear me, both at first and last.
[*Exit* Glouceſter.

Suf. Thus *Suffolk* hath prevail'd, and thus he goes,
As did the youthful *Paris* once to *Greece*,
With hope to find the like event in love,
But prosper better than the *Trojan* did:
Marg'ret shall now be Queen, and rule the King:
But I will rule both her, the King, and realm. [*Exit.*

The SECOND PART of

HENRY

THE

SIXTH.

With the DEATH of the

Good Duke *HUMPHRY.*

Dramatis Perſonæ.

KING Henry VI.
Humphry *Duke of* Glouceſter,
Cardinal Beaufort, *Bp. of* Wincheſter, } *Uncles to the King.*
Duke of York, *pretending to the Crown.*
Duke of Buckingham,
Duke of Somerſet, } *Of the King's Party.*
Duke of Suffolk,
Earl of Salisbury,
Earl of Warwick, } *Of the* York *Faction.*
Lord Clifford, *of the King's Party.*
Lord Say.
Lord Scales, *Governor of the* Tower.
Sir Humphry Stafford.
Young Stafford, *his Brother.*
Alexander Iden, *a* Kentiſh *Gentleman.*
Young Clifford, *Son to the Lord* Clifford.
Edward Plantagenet,
Richard Plantagenet, } *Sons to the Duke of* York.
Vaux. *A Sea Captain, and* Walter Whitmore —— *Pirates.*
Hume *and* Southwel —— 2 *Prieſts.*
Bolingbrook, *an Aſtrologer.*
A Spirit attending on Jordan *the Witch.*
Thomas Horner, *an Armorer.*
Peter, *his Man.*
Mayor of St. Albans.
Simpcox, *an Impoſtor.*
Jack Cade, Bevis, Michael, John Holland, Dick *the Butcher*, Smith *the Weaver, and ſeveral others* —— *Rebels.*

Margaret, *Queen to King* Henry VI, *ſecretly in Love with the Duke of* Suffolk.
Dame Elinor, *Wife to the Duke of* Glouceſter.
Mother Jordan, *a Witch employ'd by the Dutcheſs of* Glouceſter.
Wife to Simpcox.

Petitioners, Aldermen, a Beadle, Sheriff and Officers, with Guards, Meſſengers, and other Attendants.

The SCENE *is laid very diſperſedly in ſeveral Parts of* England.

The

† The Second Part of King *HENRY* VI.

ACT I. SCENE I.

Flouriſh of trumpets: then hautboys. Enter King Henry, *Duke* Humphry, Salisbury, Warwick, *and* Beaufort *on the one ſide. The Queen*, Suffolk, York, Somerſet, *and* Buckingham *on the other.*

SUFFOLK.

‡ AS by your high imperial majeſty,
I had in charge at my depart for *France*,
As procurator to your excellence,
To marry Princeſs *Marg'ret* for your grace;
So in the famous ancient city, *Tours*,
In preſence of the Kings of *France* and *Sicil*,
The Dukes of *Orleans*, *Calaber*, *Bretaigne*, *Alanſon*,
Seven Earls, twelve Barons, twenty reverend Biſhops,
I have perform'd my task, and was eſpous'd:
And humbly now upon my bended knee,
In ſight of *England* and her lordly Peers,

† *This and the third part were firſt written under the Title of* The Contention of *York* and *Lancaſter: printed in* 1600; *but ſince vaſtly improved by the Author.*

‡ *Vide* Hall's *Chron. fol.* 66, *year* 23. *Init.*

Deliver up my title in the Queen
[*Preſenting the Queen to the King.*
To your moſt gracious hand, that are the ſubſtance
Of that great ſhadow I did repreſent:
The happieſt gift that ever Marquiſs gave,
The faireſt Queen that ever King receiv'd.
K. *Henry.* *Suffolk* ariſe. Welcome, Queen *Margaret*,
I can expreſs no kinder ſign of love
Than this kind kiſs. O Lord, that lend'ſt me life,
Lend me a heart repleat with thankfulneſs:
For thou haſt giv'n me, in this beauteous face,
A world of earthly bleſſings to my ſoul,
If ſympathy of love unite our thoughts.
Q. Mar. Great King of *England*, and my gracious lord,
The mutual conf'rence that my mind hath had,
By day, by night, waking, and in my dreams,
In courtly company, or at my beads,
With you mine alder-liefeſt ſovereign;
Makes me the bolder to ſalute my King
With ruder terms; ſuch as my wit affords,
And over-joy of heart doth miniſter.
K. *Henry.* Her ſight did raviſh, but her grace in ſpeech,
Her words yclad with wiſdom's majeſty,
Make me from wondring, fall to weeping joys,
Such is the fulneſs of my heart's content.
Lords, with one cheerful voice welcome my love.
All kneel. Long live Queen *Marg'ret*, *England*'s happineſs.
Q. Mar. We thank you all. [*Flouriſh.*
Suff. My lord protector, ſo it pleaſe your grace,
Here are the articles of contracted peace,
Between our ſoveraign and the *French* King *Charles*,
For eighteen months concluded by conſent.
Glo. Reads.] Imprimis, *it is agreed between the* French *King*,
Charles,

Charles, *and* William de la Pole, *Marquiſs of* Suffolk, *ambaſſador for* Henry *King of* England, *that the ſaid* Henry *ſhall eſpouſe the lady* Margaret, *daughter unto* Reignier, *King of* Naples, Sicilia, *and* Jeruſalem, *and crown her Queen of* England, *ere the thirteenth of* May *next enſuing.*

Item. *That the dutchy of* Anjou, *and the county of* Main, *ſhall be releaſed and delivered to the King her father.* [*Lets fall the paper.*

K. *Henry.* Uncle, how now?

Glo. Pardon me, gracious lord,
Some ſudden qualm hath ſtruck me to the heart,
And dimn'd mine eyes, that I can read no further.

K. *Henry.* Uncle of *Wincheſter,* I pray read on.

Win. Item, *That the Dutchies of* Anjou *and* Main *ſhall be releaſed and delivered to the King her father, and ſhe ſent over of the King of* England's *own proper coſt and charges, without having any dowry.*

K. *Henry.* They pleaſe us well. Lord Marquiſs, kneel you down;
We here create thee the firſt Duke of *Suffolk,*
And girt thee with the ſword. Couſin of *York,*
We here diſcharge your grace from being regent
I'th' parts of *France,* 'till term of eighteen months
Be full expir'd. 'Thanks, uncle *Wincheſter,*
Glo'ſter, York, Buckingham, and *Somerſet,*
Salisbury and *Warwick,*
We thank you all for this great favour done,
In entertainment to my princely Queen.
Come, let us in, and with all ſpeed provide
To ſee her coronation be perform'd.

[*Exeunt King, Queen, and* Suffolk.

SCENE

SCENE II.

Manent the reſt.

Glo. Brave peers of *England*, pillars of the ſtate,
To you Duke *Humphry* muſt unload his grief,
Your grief, the common grief of all the land.
What! did my brother *Henry* ſpend his youth,
His valour, coin, and people in the wars?
Did he ſo often lodge in open field,
In winter's cold, and ſummer's parching heat,
To conquer *France*, his true inheritance?
And did my brother *Bedford* toil his wits
To keep by policy what *Henry* got:
Have you your ſelves, *Somerſet*, *Buckingham*,
Brave *York*, and *Salisbury*, victorious *Warwick*,
Receiv'd deep Scars in *France* and *Normandy*:
Or hath mine uncle *Bedford*, and my ſelf,
With all the learned council of the realm,
Studied ſo long, ſat in the council houſe,
Early and late, debating to and fro,
How *France* and *Frenchmen* might be kept in awe?
And was his highneſs in his infancy
Crowned in *Paris*, in deſpight of foes?
And ſhall theſe labours and theſe honours die?
Shall *Henry*'s conqueſt, *Bedford*'s vigilance,
Your deeds of war, and all our counſel die!
O peers of *England*, ſhameful is this league,
Fatal this marriage, cancelling your fame,
Blotting your names from books of memory,
Raſing the characters of your renown,
Defacing monuments of conquer'd *France*,
Undoing all, as all had never been.

Car.

Car. Nephew, what means this paſſionate diſcourſe?
This peroration with ſuch circumſtances?
For *France*, 'tis ours; and we will keep it ſtill.

Glo. Ay, uncle, we will keep it if we can;
But now it is impoſſible we ſhould.
Suffolk, the new made Duke that rules the roaſt,
Hath giv'n the dutchy of *Anjou* and *Maine*
Unto the poor King *Reignier*, whoſe large ſtyle
Agrees not with the leaneſs of his purſe.

Sal. Now by the death of him who dy'd for all,
Theſe counties were the Keys of *Normandy:*
But wherefore weeps *Warwick*, my valiant ſon?

War. For grief that they are paſt recovery.
For were there hope to conquer them again,
My ſword ſhould ſhed hot blood, mine eyes no tears.
Anjou and *Maine!* my ſelf did win them both:
Thoſe provinces theſe arms of mine did conquer.
And are the cities that I got with wounds,
Delivered up again with peaceful words? *

York. France ſhould have torn and rent my very heart,
Before I would have yielded to this league.
I never read but *England*'s Kings have had
Large ſums of gold, and dowries with their wives:
And our King *Henry* gives away his own,
To match with her that brings no vantages.

Glo. A proper jeſt, and never heard before,
That *Suffolk* ſhould demand a whole fifteenth,
For coſt and charges in tranſporting her:
She ſhould have ſtaid in *France*, and ſtarv'd in *France*,
Before -----

* ——— peaceful words?
York. For *Suffolk*'s Duke, may he be ſuffocate,
That dims the honour of this warlike Iſle:
France ſhould *&c.*

Car. My lord of *Glo'ſter*, now ye grow too hot:
It was the pleaſure of my lord the King.
Glo. My lord of *Wincheſter*, I know your mind.
'Tis not my ſpeeches that you do miſlike,
But 'tis my preſence that doth trouble you.
Rancour will out, proud Prelate; in thy face
I ſee thy fury: if I longer ſtay,
We ſhall begin our ancient bickerings.
Lordings farewel, and ſay when I am gone,
I propheſy'd, *France* will be loſt ere long. [*Exit.*
Car. So, there goes our Protector in a rage:
'Tis known to you he is mine enemy;
Nay more, an enemy unto you all,
And no great friend, I fear me, to the King.
Conſider, lords, he is the next of blood,
And heir apparent to the *Engliſh* crown.
Had *Henry* got an empire by his marriage,
And all the wealthy kingdoms of the weſt,
There's reaſon he ſhould be diſpleas'd at it.
Look to it, lords, let not his ſmoothing words
Bewitch your hearts, be wiſe and circumſpect.
What though the common people favour him,
Calling him *Humphry*, *the good Duke of* Glo'ſter,
Clapping their hands and crying with loud voice,
Jeſu maintain your royal excellence,
With, *God preſerve the good Duke* Humphry:
I fear me, lords, for all this flattering gloſs,
He will be found a dangerous Protector.
Buck. Why ſhould he then protect our Sovereign,
He being of age to govern of himſelf?
Couſin of *Somerſet*, join you with me,
And all together with the Duke of *Suffolk*,
We'll quickly hoiſe Duke *Humphry* from his ſeat.

Car.

Car. This weighty buſineſs will not brook delay.
I'll to the Duke of *Suffolk* preſently. [*Exit.*

Som. Couſin of *Buckingham*, though *Humphry*'s pride
And greatneſs of his place be grief to us,
Yet let us watch the haughty Cardinal:
His inſolence is more intolerable
Than all the princes in the land beſide:
If *Glo'ſter* be diſplac'd, he'll be Protector.

Buck. Or *Somerſet* or I will be Protector,
Deſpight Duke *Humphry*, or the Cardinal.

[*Ex.* Buckingham *and* Somerſet.

Sal. Pride went before, Ambition follows him.
While theſe do labour for their own preferment,
Behoves it us to labour for the realm.
I never ſaw but *Humphry* Duke of *Glo'ſter*
Did bear him like a noble gentleman:
Oft have I ſeen the haughty Cardinal
More like a ſoldier than a man o'th' church,
As ſtout and proud as he were lord of all,
Swear like a ruffian, and demean himſelf
Unlike the ruler of a common-weal.
Warwick my ſon, the comfort of my age!
Thy deeds, thy plainneſs, and thy houſe-keeping,
Have won the greateſt favour of the commons,
Excepting none but good Duke *Humphry*.
And brother *York*, thy acts in *Ireland*,
In bringing them to civil diſcipline;
Thy late exploits done in the heart of *France*,
When thou wert Regent for our ſovereign;
Have made thee fear'd and honour'd of the people.
Join we together for the publick good,
In what we can to bridle and ſuppreſs
The pride of *Suffolk*, and the Cardinal,

With *Somerſet*'s and *Buckingham*'s ambition;
And as we may, cheriſh Duke *Humphry*'s deeds,
While they do tend the profit of the land.

War. So God help *Warwick*, as he loves the land
And common profit of his country.

York. And ſo ſays *York*, for he hath greateſt cauſe.

Sal. Then let's make haſte, and look unto the main. *

[*Ex.* Warwick *and* Salisbury.

SCENE III.

Manet York.

York. *Anjou* and *Maine* are given to the *French*,
Paris is loſt, the ſtate of *Normandy*
Stands on a tickle point, now they are gone:
Suffolk concluded on the articles,
The peers agreed, and *Henry* was well pleas'd
To change two dukedoms for a Duke's fair daughter.
I cannot blame them all, what is't to them?
'Tis thine they give away, and not their own.
Pirates may make cheap penn'worths of their pillage,
And purchaſe friends and give to curtezans,
Still revelling like lords 'till all be gone:
While as the ſilly owner of the goods
Weeps over them, and wrings his hapleſs hands,
And ſhakes his head, and trembling ſtands aloof,
While all is ſhar'd, and all is born away;
Ready to ſtarve, and dare not touch his own.

* ——— unto the main.
War. Unto the main? Oh father, *Main* is loſt,
That *Main*, which by main force *Warwick* did win,
And would have kept, ſo long as breath did laſt:
Main-chance, father, you meant, but I meant *Main*,
Which I will win from *France*, or elſe be ſlain.

So

So *York* muſt ſit, and fret, and bite his tongue,
While his own lands are bargain'd for, and ſold.
Methinks the realms of *England*, *France*, and *Ireland*,
Bear that proportion to my fleſh and blood,
As did the fatal brand *Althea* burnt,
Unto the prince's heart of *Calidon*.
Anjou and *Maine* both given unto the *French!*
Cold news for me: for I had hope of *France*,
Ev'n as I have of fertile *England*'s ſoil.
A day will come when *York* ſhall claim his own,
And therefore I will take the *Nevills* parts,
And make a ſhew of love to proud Duke *Humphry*;
And when I ſpy advantage, claim the crown;
For that's the golden mark I ſeek to hit.
Nor ſhall proud *Lancaſter* uſurp my right,
Nor hold the ſcepter in his childiſh fiſt,
Nor wear the diadem upon his head,
Whoſe church-like humour fits not for a crown.
Then *York* be ſtill a while, 'till time do ſerve:
Watch thou, and wake when others be aſleep,
To pry into the ſecrets of the ſtate;
'Till *Henry* ſurfeiting in joys of love,
With his new bride, and *England*'s dear bought Queen,
And *Humphry* with the peers be fall'n at jars.
Then will I raiſe aloft the milk-white roſe,
With whoſe ſweet ſmell the air ſhall be perfum'd;
And in my ſtandard bear the arms of *York*,
To grapple with the houſe of *Lancaſter*;
And force perforce I'll make him yield the crown,
Whoſe bookiſh rule hath pull'd fair *England* down. [*Exit* York.

SCENE

SCENE IV.

Enter Duke Humphry, *and his Wife* Eleanor.

Elean. WHY droops my lord, like over-ripen'd corn
Hanging the head with *Ceres* plenteous load?
Why doth the great Duke *Humphry* knit his brows,
As frowning at the favours of the world?
Why are thine eyes fixt to the ſullen earth,
Gazing at that which ſeems to dim thy ſight?
What ſeeſt thou there? King *Henry*'s diadem,
Inchas'd with all the honours of the world?
If ſo, gaze on, and grovel on thy face,
Until thy head be circled with the ſame.
Put forth thy hand, reach at the glorious gold:
What, is't too ſhort? I'll lengthen it with mine.
And having both together heav'd it up,
We'll both together lift our heads to heaven;
And never more abaſe our ſight ſo low,
As to vouchſafe one glance unto the ground.

Glo. O *Nell*, ſweet *Nell*, if thou doſt love thy lord,
Baniſh the canker of ambitious thoughts:
And may that thought, when I imagine ill
Againſt my King and nephew virtuous *Henry*,
Be my laſt breathing in this mortal world.
My troublous dreams this night do make me ſad.

Elean. What dream'd my lord? tell me, and I'll requite it
With ſweet rehearſal of my morning's dream.

Glo. Methought this ſtaff, mine office badge in court,
Was broke in twain; by whom, I have forgot,
But as I think, it was by th' Cardinal;
And on the pieces of the broken wand

Were

Were plac'd the heads of *Edmund* Duke of *Somerſet*,
And *William de la Pole* firſt Duke of *Suffolk*.
This was the dream; what it doth bode, God knows.

Elean. Tut, this was nothing but an argument
That he that breaks a ſtick of *Glo'ſter*'s grove,
Shall loſe his head for his preſumption.
But liſt to me, my *Humphry*, my ſweet Duke:
Methought I ſat in ſeat of majeſty,
In the Cathedral church of *Weſtminſter*,
And in that chair where Kings and Queens were crown'd;
Where *Henry* and *Margaret* kneel'd to me,
And on my head did ſet the diadem.

Glo. Nay, *Eleanor*, then muſt I chide outright:
Preſumptuous dame, ill-natur'd *Eleanor*,
Art thou not ſecond woman in the realm,
And the Protector's wife, belov'd of him?
Haſt thou not worldly pleaſure at command,
Above the reach or compaſs of thy thought?
And wilt thou ſtill be hammering treachery,
To tumble down thy husband and thy ſelf
From top of honour to diſgrace's feet?
Away from me, and let me hear no more.

Elean. What, what, my lord, are you ſo cholerick
With *Eleanor*, for telling but her dream?
Next time I'll keep my dreams unto my ſelf,
And not be check'd.

Glo. Nay, be not angry, I am pleas'd again.

Enter Meſſenger.

Meſ. My lord Protector, 'tis his Highneſs' pleaſure,
You do prepare to ride unto St. *Albans*,
Whereas the King and Queen do mean to hawk.

Glo. I go: come *Nell*, thou wilt ride with us? [*Ex.* Glo. *Elean.*

Elean. Yes, my good lord, I'll follow preſently.
Follow I muſt, I cannot go before,
While *Glo'ſter* bears this baſe and humble mind.
Were I a man, a Duke, and next of blood,
I would remove theſe tedious ſtumbling-blocks,
And ſmooth my way upon their headleſs necks.
And being a woman, I will not be ſlack
To play my part in fortune's pageant.
Where are you there? Sir *John*; nay fear not, man,
We are alone, here's none but thee and I.

Enter Hume.

Hume. Jeſus preſerve your Royal Majeſty.
Elean. What ſay'ſt thou? Majeſty? I am but Grace.
Hume. But by the grace of God, and *Hume*'s advice,
Your grace's title ſhall be multiply'd.
Elean. What ſay'ſt thou, man? haſt thou as yet conferr'd
With *Margery Jordan*, the cunning witch;
And *Roger Bolingbroke* the conjurer,
And will they undertake to do me good?
Hume. This they have promiſed, to ſhew your highneſs
A Spirit rais'd from depth of under ground,
That ſhall make anſwer to ſuch queſtions
As by your grace ſhall be propounded him.
Elean. It is enough, I'll think upon the queſtions:
When from St. *Albans* we do make return,
We'll ſee thoſe things effected to the full.
Here *Hume*, take this reward, make merry, man,
With thy confederates in this weighty cauſe. [*Exit* Eleanor.
Hume. *Hume* muſt make merry with the Dutcheſs' gold:
Marry and ſhall; but how now, Sir *John Hume?*
Seal up your lips, and give no words, but mum!
The buſineſs asketh ſilent ſecrecy.

Dame *Eleanor* gives gold to bring the witch:
Gold cannot come amiſs, were ſhe a devil.
Yet have I gold flies from another coaſt:
I dare not ſay from the rich Cardinal,
And from the great and new-made Duke of *Suffolk*;
Yet I do find it ſo: for to be plain,
They (knowing *Eleanor*'s aſpiring humour)
Have hired me to undermine the Dutcheſs,
And buz theſe conjurations in her brain.
They ſay, a crafty knave does need no broker;
Yet am I *Suffolk*'s and the Cardinal's broker.
Hume, if you take not heed, you ſhall go near
To call them both a pair of crafty knaves.
Well, ſo it ſtands; and thus I fear at laſt,
Hume's knavery will be the Dutcheſs' wrack,
And her attainture will be *Humphry*'s fall:
Sort how it will, I ſhall have gold for all. [*Exit.*

SCENE V.

Enter three or four Petitioners, the Armorer's man being one.

1 *Pet.* MY maſters, let's ſtand cloſe, my lord Protector will come this way by and by, and then we may deliver our ſupplications in the quill.

2 *Pet.* Marry, the Lord protect him, for he's a good man, Jeſu bleſs him.

Enter Suffolk, *and Queen.*

1 *Pet.* Here a comes methinks, and the Queen with him: I'll be the firſt ſure.

2 *Pet.* Come back, fool, this is the Duke of *Suffolk*, and not my lord Protector.

Suf. How now, fellow; would'ſt any thing with me?

1 *Pet.* I pray my lord, pardon me, I took ye for my lord Protector.

Q. *Mar.* *To my Lord Protector?* [*reading*] Are your ſupplications to his lordſhip? let me ſee them; what is thine?

1 *Pet.* Mine is, and't pleaſe your grace, againſt *John Goodman*, my lord Cardinal's man, for keeping my houſe and lands, and wife, and all from me.

Suf. Thy wife too? that's ſome wrong indeed. What's yours? what's here? [*Reads.*] *Againſt the Duke of* Suffolk, *for incloſing the Commons of* Melford. How now, Sir Knave?

2 *Pet.* Alas, Sir, I am but a poor petitioner of our whole townſhip.

3 *Pet.* *Againſt my maſter*, Thomas Horner, *for ſaying, that the Duke of* York *was rightful heir to the crown?*

Q. *Mar.* What did the Duke of *York* ſay, he was rightful heir to the crown?

3 *Pet.* That my miſtreſs was? no, forſooth; my maſter ſaid that he was; and that the King was an uſurper.

Suf. Who is there?---Take this fellow in, and ſend for his maſter with a purſuivant, preſently; we'll hear more of your matter before the King. [*Exit* Serv.

Q. *Mar.* And as for you that love to be protected
Under the wings of our Protector's grace,
Begin your ſuits anew, and ſue to him. [*Tears the ſupplications.*
Away, baſe cullions: *Suffolk*, let them go.

All. Come, let's be gone. [*Exeunt.*

Q. *Mar.* My lord of *Suffolk*, ſay, is this the guiſe?
Is this the faſhion in the court of *England?*
Is this the government of *Britain*'s Iſle?

And

And this the royalty of *Albion*'s King?
What, ſhall King *Henry* be a pupil ſtill,
Under the ſurly *Glo'ſter*'s governance?
Am I a Queen in title and in ſtyle,
And muſt be made a ſubject to a Duke?
I tell thee, *Pole*, when in the city *Tours*
Thou ran'ſt a tilt in honour of my love,
And ſtol'ſt away the ladies hearts of *France*;
I thought King *Henry* had reſembled thee
In courage, courtſhip, and proportion:
But all his mind is bent to holineſs,
To number *Ave Maries* on his beads;
His champions are the prophets and apoſtles,
His weapons holy ſaws of ſacred writ,
His ſtudy is his tilt-yard, and his loves
Are brazen images of canoniz'd ſaints.
I would the college of the Cardinals
Would chuſe him Pope, and carry him to *Rome*,
And ſet the triple crown upon his head;
That were a ſtate fit for his holineſs.

Suf. Madam, be patient; as I was the cauſe
Your highneſs came to *England*, ſo will I
In *England* work your grace's full content.

Q. *Mar.* Beſide the proud Protector, have we *Beauford*
Th' imperious churchman; *Somerſet*, *Buckingham*,
And grumbling *York*; and not the leaſt of theſe
But can do more in *England* than the King.

Suf. And he of theſe that can do moſt of all,
Cannot do more in *England* than the *Nevils*;
Salisb'ry and *Warwick* are no ſimple Peers.

Q. *Mar.* Not all theſe lords do vex me half ſo much,
As that proud dame, the lord Protector's wife:
She ſweeps it through the court with troops of ladies,

More like an Empreſs than Duke *Humphry*'s wife.
Strangers in court do take her for the Queen;
She bears a Duke's revenues on her back,
And in her heart ſhe ſcorns our poverty.
Shall I not live to be aveng'd on her?
Contemptuous baſe-born callot as ſhe is,
She vaunted 'mongſt her minions t' other day,
'The very train of her worſt wearing gown
Was better worth than all my father's lands,
'Till *Suffolk* gave two Dukedoms for his daughter.
Suf. Madam, my ſelf have lim'd a buſh for her,
And plac'd a quire of ſuch enticing birds,
That ſhe will light to liſten to their lays
And never mount to trouble you again.
So let her reſt; and madam liſt to me,
For I am bold to counſel you in this;
Although we fancy not the Cardinal,
Yet muſt we join with him and with the lords,
'Till we have brought Duke *Humphry* in diſgrace.
As for the Duke of *York*, this late complaint
Will make but little for his benefit.
So one by one we'll weed them all at laſt,
And you your ſelf ſhall ſteer the happy helm.

SCENE VI.

To them enter King Henry, *Duke* Humphry, *Cardinal*, Buckingham, York, Salisbury, Warwick, *and the Dutcheſs.*

K. *Henry.* For my part, noble Lords, I care not which,
Or *Somerſet*, or *York*, all's one to me.
York. If *York* have ill demean'd himſelf in *France*,
Then let him be deny'd the Regentſhip.
Som. If *Somerſet* be unworthy of the place,

Let *York* be Regent, I will yield to him.
War. Whether your grace be worthy, yea or no,
Diſpute not that, *York* is the worthier.
Car. Ambitious *Warwick*, let thy betters ſpeak.
War. The Cardinal's not my better in the field.
Buck. All in this preſence are thy betters, *Warwick.*
War. *Warwick* may live to be the beſt of all.
Sal. Peace, ſon; and ſhew ſome reaſon, *Buckingham*,
Why *Somerſet* ſhould be preferr'd in this?
Q. *Mar.* Becauſe the King forſooth will have it ſo.
Glo. Madam, the King is old enough himſelf
To give this cenſure: theſe are no woman's matters.
Q. *Mar.* If he be old enough, what needs your grace
To be Protector of his excellence?
Glo. Madam, I am Protector of the realm,
And at his pleaſure will reſign my place.
Suf. Reſign it then, and leave thine inſolence.
Since thou wert King, (as who is King but thou?)
The common-wealth hath daily run to wrack.
The Dauphin hath prevail'd beyond the ſeas,
And all the peers and nobles of the realm
Have been as bond-men to thy ſov'raignty.
Car. The commons haſt thou rack'd, the clergy's bags
Are lank and lean with thy extortions.
Som. Thy ſumptuous buildings, and thy wife's attire,
Have coſt a maſs of publick treaſury.
Buck. Thy cruelty in execution
Upon offenders hath exceeded law,
And left thee to the mercy of the law.
Q. *Mar.* Thy ſale of offices and towns in *France*,
If they were known, as the ſuſpect is great,
Would make thee quickly hop without thy head. [*Exit* Glo.

Give

Give me my fan; what, minion? can ye not?
[*She gives the dutcheſs a box on the ear.*
I cry you mercy, Madam; was it you?
Elean. Was't I? yea, I it was, proud *French-woman:*
Could I come near your beauty with my nails,
I'd ſet my ten commandments in your face.
K. *Henry.* Sweet aunt, be quiet, 'twas againſt her will.
Elean. Againſt her will, good King? look to't in time,
She'll hamper thee and dandle thee like a baby:
Though in this place moſt Maſter wears no breeches,
She ſhall not ſtrike dame *Eleanor* unrevenged. [*Exit* Eleanor.
Buck. Lord Cardinal, I'll follow *Eleanor*,
And liſten after *Humphry*, how he proceeds:
She's tickled now, her fume can need no ſpurs,
She'll gallop faſt enough to her deſtruction.
[*Exit* Buckingham.

SCENE VII.

Re-enter Duke Humphry.

Glo. Now, lords, my choler being over-blown
With walking once about the Quadrangle,
I come to talk of commonwealth affairs.
As for your ſpightful falſe objections,
Prove them, and I lye open to the law.
But God in mercy deal ſo with my ſoul,
As I in duty love my King and country.
But to the matter that we have in hand:
I ſay, my Sovereign, *York* is meeteſt man
To be your Regent in the realm of *France*.
Suf. Before we make election, give me leave
To ſhew ſome reaſon of no little force,
That *York* is moſt unmeet of any man.

York.

York. I'll tell thee, *Suffolk*, why I am unmeet:
Firſt, for I cannot flatter thee in pride;
Next, if I be appointed for the place,
My lord of *Somerſet* will keep me here
Without diſcharge, mony, or furniture,
'Till *France* be won into the Dauphin's hands.
Laſt time, I danc'd attendance on his will,
'Till *Paris* was beſieg'd, famiſh'd and loſt.

War. That I can witneſs, and a fouler fact
Did never traitor in the land commit.

Suf. Peace, head-ſtrong *Warwick.*

War. Image of pride, why ſhould I hold my peace?

Enter Horner *the Armorer, and his Man* Peter.

Suf. Becauſe here is a man accus'd of treaſon.
Pray God the Duke of *York* excuſe himſelf.

York. Doth any one accuſe *York* for a traitor?

K. *Henry.* What mean'ſt thou, *Suffolk?* tell me, what are theſe?

Suf. Pleaſe it your Majeſty, this is the man
That doth accuſe his maſter of high treaſon:
His words were theſe; that *Richard* Duke of *York*
Was rightful heir unto the *Engliſh* crown,
And that your Majeſty was an uſurper.

K. *Henry.* Say, man, were theſe thy words?

Arm. An't ſhall pleaſe your Majeſty, I never ſaid nor thought any ſuch matter; God is my witneſs, I am falſly accus'd by the villain.

Peter. By theſe ten bones, my lord, he did ſpeak them to me in the garret one night, as we were ſcow'ring my lord of *York*'s armour.

York. Baſe dunghil villain, and mechanical,
I'll have thy head for this thy traitor's ſpeech:
I do beſeech your royal Majeſty,

Let

Let him have all the rigor of the law.

Arm. Alas, my lord, hang me if ever I ſpake the words. My accuſer is my prentice, and when I did correct him for his fault the other day, he did vow upon his knees he would be even with me. I have good witneſs of this; therefore I beſeech your Majeſty, do not caſt away an honeſt man for a villain's accuſation.

K. *Henry.* Uncle, what ſhall we ſay to this in law?

Glo. This doom, my lord, if I may judge:
Let *Somerſet* be Regent o'er the *French*,
Becauſe in *York* this breeds ſuſpicion.
And let theſe have a day appointed them
For ſingle combat in convenient place;
For he hath witneſs of his ſervant's malice.
This is the law, and this Duke *Humphry*'s doom.

Som. I humbly thank your royal Majeſty.

Arm. And I accept the combat willingly.

Peter. Alas, my lord, I cannot fight; for God's ſake pity my caſe; the ſpight † of man prevaileth againſt me. O lord have mercy upon me, I ſhall never be able to fight a blow: O lord, my heart!

Glo. Sirrah, or you muſt fight, or elſe be hang'd.

K. *Henry.* Away with them to priſon; and the day of combat ſhall be the laſt of the next month. Come *Somerſet*, we'll ſee thee ſent away. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VIII.

Flouriſh. Enter Mother Jordan, Hume, Southwel, *and* Bolingbroke.

Hume. COME my maſters, the Dutcheſs I tell you expects performance of your promiſes.

Boling.

† Or, *(as in the later editions)* of my maſter.

Boling. Maſter *Hume*, we are therefore provided: will her ladyſhip behold and hear our exorciſms?

Hume. Ay, what elſe? fear not her courage.

Boling. I have heard her reported to be a woman of an invincible ſpirit; but it ſhall be convenient, Maſter *Hume*, that you be by her aloft, while we be buſie below; and ſo I pray you go in god's name, and leave us. [*Exit* Hume.] Mother *Jordan*, be proſtrate and grovel on the earth; *John Southwel*, read you, and let us to our work.

Enter Eleanor *above.*

Elean. Well ſaid, my maſters, and welcome to all: to this geer, the ſooner the better.

Boling. Patience, good lady, wizards know their times:
Deep night, dark night, the ſilent of the night,
The time of night when *Troy* was ſet on fire,
The time when ſcreech-owls cry, and ban-dogs howl,
When ſpirits walk, and ghoſts break up their graves;
That time beſt fits the work we have in hand.
Madam, ſit you and fear not; whom we raiſe
We will make faſt within a hallow'd verge.

[*Here they perform the ceremonies and make the circle*, Boling-brook *or* Southwel *reads*, Conjuro te, &c. *It thunders and lightens terribly; then the Spirit riſeth.*

Spirit. Adſum.

M. *Jord. Aſmuth*, by the eternal God, whoſe name
And power thou trembleſt at, tell what I ask;
For 'till thou ſpeak, thou ſhalt not paſs from hence.

Spirit. Ask what thou wilt.---That I had ſaid, and done!

Boling. Firſt of the King: What ſhall of him become?

Spirit. The Duke yet lives, that *Henry* ſhall depoſe:
But him out-live, and die a violent death.

[*As the Spirit ſpeaks they write the anſwer.*

Boling. Tell me what fates await the Duke of *Suffolk?*
Spirit. By water ſhall he die, and take his end.
Boling. What ſhall befall the Duke of *Somerſet?*
Spirit. Let him ſhun caſtles.
Safer ſhall he be on the ſandy plains,
Than where caſtles mounted ſtand.
Have done, for more I hardly can endure.
Boling. Deſcend to darkneſs, and the burning lake:
Falſe fiend avoid. [*Thunder and lightning. Spirit deſcends.*

Enter the Duke of York, *and the Duke of* Buckingham, *with their Guard, and break in.*

York. Lay hands upon theſe traitors and their traſh:
Beldame, I think we watch'd you at an inch.
What, madam, are you there? the King and realm
Are deep indebted for this piece of pains;
My lord Protector will, I doubt it not,
See you well guerdon'd for theſe good deſerts.
Elean. Not half ſo bad as thine to *England*'s King,
Injurious Duke, that threat'ſt where is no cauſe.
Buck. True, madam, none at all: What call you this?
Away with them, let them be clap'd up cloſe,
And kept apart. You madam ſhall with us.
Stafford, take her to thee.
We'll ſee your Trinkets here forth-coming all.
[*Exeunt Guard with* Jordan, Southwel, *&c.* *
The

* —— Southwel, *&c.*
† *York.* Lord *Buckingham*, methinks you watch'd her well;
A pretty plot, well choſe to build upon.
Now, pray my lord, let's ſee the devil's writ.
What have we here? [*Reads.*
The Duke yet lives, that Henry *ſhall depoſe;*
But him out-live, and die a violent death.
Why, this is juſt, *Aio te Æacidem Romanos vincere poſſe.*
Well, to the reſt:
Tell me what fate awaits the Duke of *Suffolk?*

The King is now in progreſs tow'rds St. *Albans*,
With him the husband of this lovely lady:
Thither go theſe news, as faſt as horſe can carry them:
A ſorry breakfaſt for my lord Protector.

Buck. Your grace ſhall give me leave, my lord of *York*,
To be the poſt, in hope of his reward.

York. At your pleaſure, my good lord.
Who's within there, ho?

Enter a Serving-man.

Invite my lords of *Salisbury* and *Warwick*,
To ſup with me to-morrow night. Away. [*Exeunt.*

By water ſhall he die and take his end.
What ſhall betide the Duke of *Somerſet?*
Let him ſhun caſtles,
Safer ſhall he be upon the ſandy plains,
Than where caſtles mounted ſtand.
Come, come, my lords,
Theſe oracles are hardly attain'd,
And hardly underſtood.
The King is now *&c.*

† *This repetition of the prophecies, which is altogether unneceſſary after what the ſpectators have heard in the Scene immediately preceding, is not to be found in the firſt editions of this Play.*

ACT II. SCENE I.

At St. Alban's.

Enter King Henry, *Queen, Protector, Cardinal, and* Suffolk, *with Faulkners hallowing.*

Q. MARGARET.

BELIEVE me lords, for flying at the brook,
I saw no better sport these seven years day;
Yet by your leave, the wind was very high,
And ten to one old *Joan* had not gone out.

K. *Henry.* But what a point, my lord, your Faulcon made,
And what a pitch she flew above the rest:
To see how God in all his creatures works!
Yea, man and birds are fain of climbing high.

Suf. No marvel, an it like your Majesty,
My lord Protector's Hawks do towre so well;
They know their master loves to be aloft,
And bears his thoughts above his Faulcon's pitch.

Glo. My lord, 'tis but a base ignoble mind
That mounts no higher than a bird can soar.

Car. I thought as much, he'd be above the clouds.

Glo. Ay, my lord Card'nal, how think you by that?
Were it not good, your grace could fly to heav'n?

K. *Henry.* The treasury of everlasting joy!

Car. Thy heaven is on earth, thine eyes and thoughts

Bent

Bent on a crown, the treaſure of thy heart:
Pernicious Protector, dangerous peer,
That ſmooth'ſt it ſo with King and common-weal.

Glo. What, Card'nal! Is your prieſthood grown ſo peremptory?
Churchmen ſo hot? good uncle, hide ſuch malice.

Suf. No malice, Sir, no more than well becomes
So good a quarrel, and ſo bad a peer.

Glo. As who, my lord?

Suf. Why, as yourſelf, my lord,
An't like your lordly, lord Protectorſhip.

Glo. Why, *Suffolk*, *England* knows thine inſolence.

Q. *Mar.* And thy ambition, *Glo'ſter*.

K. *Henry.* I pr'ythee peace, good Queen,
And whet not on theſe too-too furious peers,
For bleſſed are the peace-makers on earth.

Car. Let me be bleſſed for the peace I make,
Againſt this proud Protector, with my ſword.

Glo. Faith, holy uncle, would 'twere come to that.

Car. Marry, when thou dar'ſt.

Glo. Make up no factious numbers for that matter,
In thine own perſon anſwer thy abuſe. [*Aſide.*

Car. Ay, where thou dar'ſt not peep:
And if thou dar'ſt, this evening,
On the eaſt ſide of the grove.

K. *Henry.* How now, my lords?

Car. Believe me, couſin *Glo'ſter*,
Had not your man put up the fowl ſo ſuddenly,
We'd had more ſport----Come with thy two-hand ſword.
[*Aſide to* Glo.

Glo. True, uncle, are ye advis'd?---The eaſt ſide the grove:
Cardinal, I am with you. [*Aſide.*

K. *Henry.* Why how now, uncle *Glo'ſter*?

Glo.

Glo. Talking of hawking, nothing elſe, my lord.-----
Now by God's mother, prieſt, I'll ſhave your crown for this,
Or all my fence ſhall fail. [*Aſide.*

Car. [*Aſide.*] Protector ſee to't well, protect your ſelf.

K. *Henry.* The winds grow high, ſo do your ſtomachs, lords.
How irkſome is this muſick to my heart?
When ſuch ſtrings jar, what hope of harmony?
I pray, my lords, let me compound this ſtrife.

SCENE II.

Enter One crying A Miracle.

Glo. What means this noiſe?
Fellow, what miracle do'ſt thou proclaim?

One. A miracle, a miracle!

Suf. Come to the King, and tell him what miracle.

One. Forſooth, a blind man at St. *Alban*'s ſhrine,
Within this half hour hath receiv'd his ſight,
A man that ne'er ſaw in his life before.

K. *Henry.* Now God be prais'd, that to believing ſouls
Gives light in darkneſs, comfort in deſpair!

Enter the Mayor of St. Albans, *and his brethren, bearing* Simpcox *between two in a chair,* Simpcox's *wife following.*

Car. Here come the townſmen on proceſſion,
Before your highneſs to preſent the man.

K. *Henry.* Great is his comfort in this earthly vale,
Though by his ſight his ſin be multiply'd.

Glo. Stand by, my maſters, bring him near the King,
His Highneſs' pleaſure is to talk with him.

K. *Henry.*

K. *Henry*. Good-fellow, tell us here the circumſtance,
That we, for thee, may glorifie the lord.
What, haſt thou been long blind, and now reſtor'd?

Simp. Born blind, and't pleaſe your grace.

Wife. Ay, indeed was he.

Suf. What woman is this?

Wife. His wife, and't like your worſhip.

Glo. Had'ſt thou been his mother, thou couldſt have better told.

K. *Henry*. Where wert thou born?

Simp. At *Berwick* in the north, and't like your grace.

K. *Henry*. Poor ſoul, God's goodneſs hath been great to thee:
Let never day or night unhallowed paſs,
But ſtill remember what the lord hath done.

Queen. Tell me, good fellow, cam'ſt thou here by chance,
Or of devotion, to this holy ſhrine?

Simp. God knows of pure devotion, being call'd
A hundred times and oftner, in my ſleep,
By good Saint *Alban*; who ſaid; *Simon*, come,
Come offer at my ſhrine, and I will help thee.

Wife. Moſt true, forſooth; and many a time and oft
My ſelf have heard a voice to call him ſo.

Card. What, art thou lame?

Simp. Ay, God Almighty help me.

Suf. How cam'ſt thou ſo?

Simp. A fall off a tree.

Wife. A plum-tree, maſter.

Glo. How long haſt thou been blind?

Simp. O born ſo, maſter.

Glo. What, and would'ſt climb a tree?

Simp. But once in all my life, when I was a youth.

Wife.

Wife. Too true, and bought his climbing very dear.
Glo. Mafs, thou lov'ft plums well, that wouldft venture fo.
Simp. Alas, good Sir, my wife defir'd fome damfons,
And made me climb, with danger of my life.
Glo. A fubtle knave, but yet it fhall not ferve:
Let's fee thine eyes, wink now, now open them,
In my opinion, yet, thou feeft not well.
Simp. Yes, maſter, clear as day, I thank God and faint *Alban.*
Glo. Say'ft thou me fo; what colour is this cloak of?
Simp. Red, maſter, red as blood.
Glo. Why that's well ſaid: what colour is my gown of?
Simp. Black, forſooth, coal-black, as jet.
K. *Henry.* Why then thou know'ſt what colour jet is of?
Suf. And yet, I think, jet he did never ſee.
Glo. But cloaks and gowns, before this day, a many.
Wife. Never before this day, in all his life.
Glo. Tell me, Sirrah, what's my name?
Simp. Alas maſter, I know not.
Glo. What's his name?
Simp. I know not.
Glo. Nor his?
Simp. No indeed, maſter.
Glo. What's thine own name?
Simp. *Saunder Simpcox*, an if it pleaſe you, maſter.
Glo. *Saunder*, ſit there, the lyingſt knave in chriſtendom.
If thou hadſt been born blind,
Thou might'ſt as well know all our names, as thus
To know the ſeveral colours we do wear.
Sight may diſtinguiſh colours:
But ſuddenly to nominate them all,
It is impoſſible.

My

My lords, ſaint *Alban* here hath done a miracle:
Would ye not think that cunning to be great,
That could reſtore this cripple to his legs?

Simp. O maſter, that you could!

Glo. My maſters of ſaint *Albans*,
Have you not beadles in your town,
And things call'd whips?

Mayor. Yes my lord, if it pleaſe your grace.

Glo. Then ſend for one preſently.

Mayor. Sirrah, go fetch the beadle hither ſtraight. [*Exit.*

Glo. Now fetch me a ſtool hither. Now Sirrah, if you mean to ſave your ſelf from whipping, leap me over this ſtool, and run away,

Simp. Alas maſter, I am not able to ſtand alone: you go about to torture me in vain.

Enter a Beadle with whips.

Glo. Well Sir, we muſt have you find your legs. Sirrah beadle, whip him 'till he leap over that ſame ſtool.

Bead. I will, my lord. Come on Sirrah, off with your doublet quickly.

Simp. Alas, maſter, what ſhall I do? I am not able to ſtand.

[*After the beadle hath hit him once, he leaps over the ſtool and runs away; and they follow, and cry, A miracle.*

K. *Henry.* O God, ſeeſt thou this, and bear'ſt ſo long!

Queen. It made me laugh to ſee the villain run.

Glo. Follow the knave, and take this drab away.

Wife. Alas, Sir, we did it for pure need.

Glo. Let him be whipt through every market town, 'till they come to *Berwick*, from whence they came. [*Exit Beadle.*

Car. Duke *Humphry* has done a miracle to day.

Suf. True, made the lame to leap and fly away.

Glo. But you have done more miracles than I;
You made in a day, my lord, whole towns to fly.

SCENE III.

Enter Buckingham.

K. *Henry.* What tidings with our couſin *Buckingham?*
Buck. Such as my heart doth tremble to unfold:
A ſort of naughty perſons, lewdly bent,
Under the countenance and confederacy
Of lady *Eleanor*, the Protector's wife,
(The ring-leader and head of all this rout)
Have practis'd dangerouſly againſt your ſtate,
Dealing with witches and with conjurers,
Whom we have apprehended in the fact,
Raiſing up wicked ſpirits from under ground;
Demanding of King *Henry*'s life and death,
And other of your highneſs' privy-council,
As more at large your grace ſhall underſtand.
Car. And ſo, my lord Protector, by this means
Your lady is forth coming, yet at *London.*
This news, I think, hath turn'd your weapon's edge.
'Tis like, my lord, you will not keep your hour. [*Aſide to* Glo'ſter.
Glo. Ambitious church-man, leave t' afflict my heart:
Sorrow and grief have vanquiſh'd all my powers;
And vanquiſh'd as I am, I yield to thee,
Or to the meaneſt groom.
K. *Henry.* O God, what miſchiefs work the wicked ones,
Heaping confuſion on their own heads?
Queen. Glo'ſter, ſee here the tainture of thy neſt,
And look thy ſelf be faultleſs, thou wert beſt.
Glo. Madam, for me, to heav'n I do appeal,
How I have lov'd my King and common-weal:

And

And for my wife, I know not how it ſtands.
Sorry am I to hear what I have heard;
Noble ſhe is; but if ſhe have forgot
Honour and virtue, and convers'd with ſuch
As like to pitch defile nobility;
I baniſh her my bed and company,
And give her as a prey to law and ſhame,
That hath diſhonour'd *Glo'ſter*'s honeſt name.

K. *Henry*. Well, for this night we will repoſe us here;
To-morrow toward *London* back again,
To look into this buſineſs thoroughly,
And call theſe foul offenders to their anſwers;
And poiſe the cauſe in Juſtice' equal ſcales,
Whoſe beam ſtands ſure, whoſe rightful cauſe prevails. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

The Duke of York's *Palace.*

Enter York, Salisbury, *and* Warwick.

York. NOW, my good lords of *Salisbury* and *Warwick*,
Our ſimple ſupper ended, give me leave,
In this cloſe walk to ſatisfy my ſelf,
In craving your opinion of my title,
Which is infallible to *England*'s crown.

Salis. My lord, I long to hear it thus at full.

War. Sweet *York* begin; and if thy claim be good,
The *Nevils* are thy ſubjects to command.

York. Then thus:
Edward the Third, my lords, had ſeven ſons:
The firſt, *Edward* the black Prince, Prince of *Wales*;
The ſecond, *William* of *Hatfield*; and the third,

Lionel Duke of *Clarence*; next to whom
Was *John* of *Gaunt*, the Duke of *Lancaſter*;
The fifth, was *Edward Langley*, Duke of *York*;
The ſixth, was *Thomas Woodſtock*, Duke of *Glo'ſter*;
William of *Windſor* was the ſeventh and laſt.
Edward the black Prince dy'd before his father,
And left behind him *Richard*, his only ſon,
Who, after *Edward* the Third's death, reign'd King,
'Till *Henry Bolingbroke*, Duke of *Lancaſter*,
The eldeſt ſon and heir of *John* of *Gaunt*,
Crown'd by the name of *Henry* the Fourth,
Seiz'd on the realm, depos'd the rightful King,
Sent his poor Queen to *France* from whence ſhe came,
And him to *Pomfret*; where, as all you know,
Harmleſs King *Richard* trait'rouſly was murther'd.

War. Father, the Duke hath told the truth;
Thus got the houſe of *Lancaſter* the crown.

York. Which now they hold by force, and not by right:
For *Richard* the firſt ſon's heir being dead,
The iſſue of the next ſon ſhould have reign'd.

Sal. But *William* of *Hatfield* dy'd without an heir.

York. The third ſon, Duke of *Clarence*, from whoſe line
I claim the crown, had iſſue *Philip*, a daughter,
Who married *Edmond Mortimer*, Earl of *March*.
Edmond had iſſue, *Roger* Earl of *March*:
Roger had iſſue, *Edmund*, *Anne*, and *Eleanor*,

Sal. This *Edmond*, in the reign of *Bolingbroke*,
As I have read, laid claim unto the crown;
And, but for *Owen Glendour*, had been King;
Who kept him in captivity, 'till he dy'd.
But to the reſt.

York. His eldeſt ſiſter, *Anne*,
My mother, being heir unto the crown,

Married

Married *Richard* Earl of *Cambridge*,
Who was ſon to *Edmond Langley*,
Edward the Third's fifth ſon's ſon;
By her I claim the kingdom.
She then was heir to *Roger* Earl of *March*,
Who was the ſon of *Edmond Mortimer*,
Who married *Philip*, ſole daughter
Unto *Lionel* Duke of *Clarence*.
So, if the iſſue of the elder ſon
Succeed before the younger, I am King.

War. What plain proceeding is more plain than this?
Henry doth claim the crown from *John* of *Gaunt*,
The fourth ſon; *York* here claims it from the third.
'Till *Lionel*'s iſſue fail, his ſhould not reign;
It fails not yet, but flouriſheth in thee
And in thy ſons, fair ſlips of ſuch a ſtock.
Then father *Salisbury* kneel we together,
And in this private plot be we the firſt,
That ſhall ſalute our rightful Soveraign
With honour of his birth-right to the crown.

Both. Long live our Sov'raign *Richard*, *England*'s King.

York. We thank you, lords: but I am not your King
'Till I be crown'd; and that my ſword be ſtain'd
With heart-blood of the houſe of *Lancaſter*:
And that's not ſuddenly to be perform'd,
But with advice and ſilent ſecrecy.
Do you, as I do, in theſe dang'rous days,
Wink at the Duke of *Suffolk*'s inſolence,
At *Beauford*'s pride, at *Somerſet*'s ambition,
At *Buckingham*, and all the crew of them,
'Till they have ſnar'd the ſhepherd of the flock,

That

That virtuous Prince, the good Duke *Humphry:*
'Tis that they ſeek; and they in ſeeking that
Shall find their deaths, if *York* can propheſie.

Sal. My lord, here break we off; we know your mind.

War. My heart aſſures me, that the Earl of *Warwick*
Shall one day make the Duke of *York* a King.

York. And *Nevil,* this I do aſſure my ſelf:
Richard ſhall live to make the Earl of *Warwick*
The greateſt man in *England* but the King. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

Sound trumpets. Enter King Henry *and ſtate, with guard, to baniſh the Dutcheſs.*

K. *Henry.* STAND forth, dame *Eleanor Cobham, Glo'ſter's* wife,
In ſight of God and us your guilt is great,
Receive the ſentence of the law for ſin,
Such as by God's book are adjudg'd to death.
You four from hence to priſon, back again;
From thence unto the place of execution;
The witch in *Smithfield* ſhall be burn'd to aſhes,
And you three ſhall be ſtrangled on the gallows.
You madam, for you are more nobly born,
Deſpoiled of your honour in your life,
Shall after three days open penance done,
Live in your country here in baniſhment,
With Sir *John Stanley* in the *Iſle of Man.*

Elean. Welcome is exile, welcome were my death.

Glo. The law thou ſeeſt hath judg'd thee, *Eleanor,*

I cannot juſtifie, whom law condemns.
Mine eyes are full of tears, my heart of grief.
Ah *Humphry*, this diſhonour in thine age,
Will bring thy head with ſorrow to the ground.
I beſeech your Majeſty give me leave to go;
Sorrow would ſolace, and my age would eaſe.

K. *Henry*. Stay *Humphry*, Duke of *Glo'ſter*; ere thou go
Give up thy ſtaff, *Henry* will to himſelf
Protector be, and God ſhall be my hope,
My ſtay, my guide, and lanthorn to my feet.
And go in peace, *Humphry*, no leſs belov'd,
Than when thou wert Protector to thy King.

Q. *Mar*. I ſee no reaſon, why a King of years
Should be to be protected like a child:
God and King *Henry* govern *England*'s realm:
Give up your ſtaff, Sir, and the King his realm.

Glo. My ſtaff? here, noble *Henry*, is my ſtaff:
As willingly do I the ſame reſign,
As e'er thy father *Henry* made it mine;
And even as willing at thy feet I leave it,
As others would ambitiouſly receive it.
Farewel good King; when I am dead and gone,
May honourable peace attend thy throne. [*Exit* Glo'ſter.

Q. *Mar*. Why now is *Henry* King, and *Marg'ret* Queen.
And *Humphry*, Duke of *Glo'ſter*, ſcarce himſelf,
That bears ſo ſhrewd a maim; two pulls at once;
His lady baniſh'd, and a limb lopt off:
This ſtaff of honour raught, there let it ſtand,
Where beſt it fits to be, in *Henry*'s hand.

Suf. Thus droops this lofty pine, and hangs his ſprayes,
Thus *Eleanor*'s pride dies in her younger days.

York. Lords, let him go. Pleaſe it your Majeſty,
This is the day appointed for the combat,

And

And ready are th' appellant and defendant,
The armourer and his man, to enter the liſts,
So pleaſe your highneſs to behold the fight.

Q. *Mar.* Ay, good my lord; for purpoſely therefore
Left I the court, to ſee this quarrel try'd.

K. *Henry.* A God's name ſee the liſts and all things fit,
Here let them end it, and God guard the right.

York. I never ſaw a fellow worſe beſtead,
Or more afraid to fight, than is th' appellant,
The ſervant of the armourer, my lords.

SCENE VI.

Enter at one door the armourer and his neighbours, drinking to him ſo much, that he is drunk; and he enters with a drum before him, and his ſtaff with a ſand-bag faſtned to it; and at the other door his man, with a drum and a ſand-bag, and prentices drinking to him.

1 *Neigh.* Here, neighbour *Horner*, I drink to you in a cup of ſack; and fear not, neighbour, you ſhall do well enough.

2 *Neigh.* And here, neighbour, here's a cup of charneco.

3 *Neigh.* And here's a pot of good double beer, neighbour; drink, and fear not your man.

Arm. Let it come i'faith, and I'll pledge you all, and a fig for *Peter*.

1 *Pren.* Here *Peter*, I drink to thee, and be not afraid.

2 *Pren.* Be merry, *Peter*, and fear not thy maſter; fight for the credit of the prentices.

Peter. I thank you all; drink, and pray for me, I pray you, for I think I have taken my laſt draught in this world. Here *Robin*, if I die, I give thee my apron; and *Will*, thou ſhalt have my hammer; and here, *Tom*, take all the mony that I have.

O lord bleſs me I pray God, for I am never able to deal with my maſter, he hath learn'd ſo much to fence already.

Sal. Come, leave your drinking, and fall to blows. Sirrah, what's thy name?

Peter. Peter, forſooth.

Sal. Peter? what more?

Peter. Thump.

Sal. Thump? Then ſee thou thump thy maſter well.

Arm. Maſters, I am come hither as it were upon my man's inſtigation, to prove him a knave and my ſelf an honeſt man: and touching the Duke of *York*, I will take my death I never meant him any ill, nor the King nor the Queen, and therefore *Peter* have at thee with a downright blow.

York. Diſpatch: this knave's tongue begins to double. Sound trumpets, Alarum to the combatants.

[*They fight, and* Peter *ſtrikes him down.*

Arm. Hold *Peter*, hold; I confeſs, I confeſs treaſon.

York. Take away his weapon: fellow thank God, and the good wine in thy maſter's way.

Peter. O God, have I overcome mine enemy in this preſence? O *Peter*, thou haſt prevail'd in right.

K. *Henry.* Go, take hence that traitor from our ſight,
For by his death we do perceive his guilt.
And God in juſtice hath reveal'd to us
The truth and innocence of this poor fellow,
Which he had thought to murder wrongfully.
Come fellow, follow us for thy reward. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

Enter Duke Humphry *and his Men, in Mourning Cloaks.*

Glo. THUS ſometimes hath the brighteſt day a cloud;
And after ſummer, evermore ſucceeds

The barren winter with his nipping cold;
So cares and joys abound, as ſeaſons fleet.
Sirs, what's a clock?

Serv. Ten, my lord.

Glo. Ten is the hour that was appointed me,
To watch the coming of my puniſh'd Dutcheſs:
† Unneath may ſhe endure the flinty ſtreets,
To tread them with her tender-feeling feet.
Sweet *Nell*, ill can thy noble mind a-brook
The abject people gazing on thy face,
With envious looks ſtill laughing at thy ſhame,
That erſt did follow thy proud chariot wheels,
When thou didſt ride in triumph thro' the ſtreets.
But ſoft, I think ſhe comes, and I'll prepare
My tear-ſtain'd eyes to ſee her miſeries.

Enter the Dutcheſs in a white Sheet, and a Taper burning in her hand, with a Sheriff and Officers.

Serv. So pleaſe your grace, we'll take her from the Sheriff.

Glo. No, ſtir not for your lives, let her paſs by.

Elean. Come you, my lord, to ſee my open ſhame?
Now thou doſt penance too. Look how they gaze,
See how the giddy multitude do point,
And nod their heads, and throw their eyes on thee.
Ah *Glo'ſter*, hide thee from their hateful looks,
And in thy cloſet pent up, rue my ſhame,
And ban our enemies, both mine and thine.

Glo. Be patient, gentle *Nell*, forget this grief.

Elean. Ah *Glo'ſter*, teach me to forget my ſelf:
For whilſt I think I am thy marry'd wife,
And thou a Prince, Protector of this land;
Methinks I ſhould not thus be led along,
Mail'd up in ſhame, with papers on my back,

And

† i. e. *ſcarcely.*

And follow'd with a rabble, that rejoice
To ſee my tears, and hear my deep-fetch'd groans.
The ruthleſs flint doth cut my tender feet,
And when I ſtart the [a] cruel people laugh,
And bid me be adviſed how I tread.
Ah *Humphry*, can I bear this ſhameful yoak?
Trow'ſt thou that e'er I'll look upon the world,
Or count them happy that enjoy the ſun?
No: dark ſhall be my light, and night my day.
To think upon my pomp, ſhall be my hell.
Sometime I'll ſay, I am Duke *Humphry*'s wife,
And he a Prince and ruler of the land:
Yet ſo he rul'd, and ſuch a Prince he was,
That he ſtood by, whilſt I his forlorn Dutcheſs
Was made a wonder and a pointing ſtock
To every idle, raſcal follower.
But be thou mild, and bluſh not at my ſhame,
Nor ſtir at nothing, 'till the ax of death
Hang over thee, as ſure it ſhortly will.
For *Suffolk*, (he that can do all in all
With her that hateth thee and hates us all)
And *York*, and impious *Beauford* that falſe prieſt,
Have all lim'd buſhes to betray thy wings;
And fly thou how thou can'ſt they'll tangle thee:
But fear thou not until thy foot be ſnar'd,
Nor ever ſeek prevention of thy foes.

Glo. Ah, *Nell*, forbear; thou aimeſt all awry.
I muſt offend, before I be attainted:
And had I twenty times ſo many foes,
And each of them had twenty times their power,
All theſe could not procure me any † ſcathe,
So long as I am loyal, true, and crimeleſs.
Wouldſt have me reſcue thee from this reproach?

[a] *envious.* † *harm.*

Why yet thy ſcandal were not wip'd away,
But I in danger for the breach of law.
Thy greateſt help is quiet, gentle *Nell:*
I pray thee ſort thy heart to patience,
Theſe few days wonder will be quickly worn.

Enter a Herald.

Her. I ſummon your grace to his Majeſty's parliament holden at *Bury*, the firſt of this next month.

Glo. And my conſent ne'er ask'd herein before?
This is cloſe dealing. Well, I will be there;
My *Nell*, I take my leave: and maſter Sheriff,
Let not her penance exceed the King's commiſſion.

Sher. And't pleaſe your grace, here my commiſſion ſtays:
And Sir *John Stanley* is appointed now,
To take her with him to the *Iſle of Man.*

Glo. Muſt you, Sir *John*, protect my lady here?

Stan. So am I giv'n in charge, may't pleaſe your grace.

Glo. Entreat her not the worſe, in that I pray
You uſe her well; the world may laugh again,
And I may live to do you kindneſs, if
You do it her: and ſo, Sir *John*, farewel:

Elean. What gone, my lord, and bid me not farewel?

Glo. Witneſs my tears, I cannot ſtay to ſpeak.

[*Exit* Glouceſter.

Elean. Art thou gone too? all comfort go with thee,
For none abides with me; my joy is death;
Death, at whoſe name I oft have been afraid,
Becauſe I wiſh'd this world's eternity.
Stanley, I pr'ythee go and take me hence,
I care not whither, for I beg no favour;
Only convey me where thou art commanded.

Stan. Why madam, that is to the *Iſle of Man*,

There

There to be us'd according to your ſtate.

Elean. That's bad enough, for I am but reproach:
And ſhall I then be us'd reproachfully?

Stan. No; like a Dutcheſs, and Duke *Humphry*'s lady,
According to that ſtate you ſhall be us'd.

Elean. Sheriff fare well, and better than I fare,
Although thou haſt been conduct of my ſhame.

Sher. It is my office, madam, pardon me.

Elean. Ay, ay, farewel, thy office is diſcharg'd.
Come *Stanley*, ſhall we go?

Stan. Madam, your penance done, throw off this ſheet,
And go we to attire you for our journey.

Elean. My ſhame will not be ſhifted with my ſheet:
No, it will hang upon my richeſt robes,
And ſhew itſelf, attire me how I can.
Go, lead the way, I long to ſee my priſon. [*Exeunt.*

ACT III. SCENE I.

Enter King Henry, *Queen*, *Cardinal*, Suffolk, York, Buckingham, Salisbury *and* Warwick, *to the Parliament.*

K. HENRY.

I Muſe my lord of *Glo'ſter* is not come:
'Tis not his wont to be the hindmoſt man,
Whate'er occaſion keeps him from us now.

Q. *Mar.* Can you not ſee? or will ye not obſerve
The ſtrangeneſs of his alter'd countenance?
With what a majeſty he bears himſelf,

How

How inſolent of late he is become,
How peremptory and unlike himſelf!
We know the time ſince he was mild and affable,
And if we did but glance a far-off look,
Immediately he was upon his knee,
That all the court admir'd him for ſubmiſſion.
But meet him now, and be it in the morn
When ev'ry one will give the time of day,
He knits his brow and ſhews an angry eye,
And paſſeth by with ſtiff unbowed knee,
Diſdaining duty that to us belongs.
Small curs are not regarded when they grin,
But great men tremble when the Lion roars,
And *Humphry* is no little man in *England*.
Firſt note, that he is near you in deſcent,
And ſhould you fall, he is the next will mount.
Me ſeemeth then, it is no policy,
(Reſpecting what a ranc'rous mind he bears,
And his advantage following your deceaſe)
That he ſhould come about your royal perſon,
Or be admitted to your highneſs' council.
By flatt'ry hath he won the commons hearts:
And when he'll pleaſe to make commotion,
'Tis to be fear'd they all will follow him.
Now 'tis the ſpring, and weeds are ſhallow-rooted,
Suffer them now, and they'll o'er-grow the garden,
And choak the herbs for want of husbandry.
The reverent care I bear unto my lord
Made me collect theſe dangers in the Duke.
If it be fond, call it a woman's fear:
Which fear, if better reaſons can ſupplant,
I will ſubſcribe, and ſay I wrong'd the Duke.
My lords of *Suffolk*, *Buckingham*, and *York*,

Reprove

Reprove my allegation if you can,
Or elſe conclude my words effectual.
Suf. Well hath your highneſs ſeen into this Duke.
And had I firſt been put to ſpeak my mind,
I think I ſhould have told your grace's tale.
The Dutcheſs, by his ſubornation,
Upon my life, began her deviliſh practices:
Or if he were not privy to thoſe faults,
Yet by repeating of his high deſcent
As next the King he was ſucceſſive heir,
And ſuch high vaunts of his nobility,
Did inſtigate the bedlam brain-ſick Dutcheſs,
By wicked means to frame our Sov'raign's fall.
Smooth runs the water where the brook is deep,
And in his ſimple ſhew he harbours treaſon.
The Fox barks not when he would ſteal the Lamb.
No, no, my Soveraign, *Glo'ſter* is a man
Unſounded yet, and full of deep deceit.
Car. Did he not, contrary to form of law,
Deviſe ſtrange deaths for ſmall offences done?
York. And did he not, in his Protectorſhip,
Levy great ſums of mony through the realm
For ſoldiers pay in *France*, and never ſent it?
By means whereof the towns each day revolted.
Buck. Tut, theſe are petty faults, to faults unknown
Which time will bring to light in ſmooth Duke *Humphry*.
K. *Henry.* My lords at once; the care you have of us,
To mow down thorns that would annoy our foot,
Is worthy praiſe; but ſhall I ſpeak my conſcience?
Our kinſman *Glo'ſter* is as innocent
From meaning treaſon to our royal perſon,
As is the ſucking Lamb or harmleſs Dove:
The Duke is virtuous, mild, and too well given

To dream on evil, or to work my downfal.

Q. *Mar.* Ah! what's more dang'rous than this fond affiance?
Seems he a Dove? his feathers are but borrow'd,
For he's diſpoſed as the hateful Raven.
Is he a Lamb? his skin is ſurely lent him,
For he's inclin'd as is the ravenous Wolf.
Who cannot ſteal a ſhape, that means deceit?
Take heed, my lord, the welfare of us all
Hangs on the cutting ſhort that fraudful man.

Enter Somerſet.

Som. All health unto my gracious Sovereign.

K. *Henry.* Welcome, lord *Somerſet*; what news from *France?*

Som. That all our int'reſt in thoſe territories
Is utterly bereft you; all is loſt.

K. *Henry.* Cold news, lord *Somerſet*; but God's will be done.

York. Cold news for me: for I had hope of *France*,
As firmly as I hope for fertile *England.*
Thus are my bloſſoms blaſted in the bud,
And caterpillars eat my leaves away.
But I will remedy this gear ere long,
Or ſell my title for a glorious grave. [*Aſide.*

SCENE II.

Enter Glouceſter.

Glo. All happineſs unto my lord the King:
Pardon, my Liege, that I have ſtaid ſo long.

Suf. Nay, *Glo'ſter*, know that thou art come too ſoon,
Unleſs thou wert more loyal than thou art;
I do arreſt thee of high treaſon here.

Glo. Well *Suffolk*, yet thou ſhalt not ſee me bluſh
Nor change my countenance for this arreſt:

A heart unſpotted is not eaſily daunted.
The pureſt ſpring is not ſo free from mud,
As I am clear from treaſon to my Soveraign.
Who can accuſe me? wherein am I guilty?

York. 'Tis thought, my lord, that you took bribes of *France*,
And being Protector, ſtaid the ſoldiers pay,
By means whereof his Highneſs hath loſt *France*,

Glo. Is it but thought ſo? what are they that think it?
I never robb'd the ſoldiers of their pay,
Nor ever had one penny bribe from *France*.
So help me God, as I have watch'd the night,
Ay night by night, in ſtudying good for *England*.
That doit that e'er I wreſted from the King,
Or any groat I hoarded to my uſe,
Be brought againſt me at my tryal day.
No; many a pound of my own proper ſtore,
Becauſe I would not tax the needy commons,
Have I disburſed to the garriſons,
And never ask'd for reſtitution.

Car. It ſerves you well, my lord, to ſay ſo much.

Glo. I ſay no more than truth, ſo help me God.

York. In your Protectorſhip you did deviſe
Strange tortures for offenders, never heard of,
That *England* was defam'd by tyranny.

Glo. Why 'tis well known, that whiles I was Protector
Pity was all the fault that was in me:
For I ſhould melt at an offender's tears,
And lowly words were ranſom for their fault:
Unleſs it were a bloody murtherer,
Or foul felonious thief that fleec'd poor paſſengers,
I never gave them condign puniſhment.
Murther indeed, that bloody ſin, I tortur'd
Above the felon, or what treſpaſs elſe.

Suf. My lord, theſe faults are eaſie, quickly anſwer'd:
But mightier crimes are laid unto your charge,
Whereof you cannot eaſily purge your ſelf.
I do arreſt you in his Highneſs' name,
And here commit you to my lord Cardinal
To keep, until your further time of tryal.

K. *Henry.* My lord of *Glo'ſter*, 'tis my ſpecial hope
That you will clear your ſelf from all ſuſpicion;
My conſcience tells me you are innocent.

Glo. Ah gracious lord, theſe days are dangerous:
Virtue is choak'd with foul ambition,
And charity chac'd hence by rancor's hand;
Foul ſubornation is predominant,
And equity exil'd your Highneſs' land.
I know, their complot is to have my life:
And if my death might make this iſland happy,
And prove the period of their tyranny,
I would expend it with all willingneſs.
But mine is made the prologue to their play:
For thouſands more, that yet ſuſpect no peril,
Will not conclude their plotted tragedy.
Beauford's red ſparkling eyes blab his heart's malice,
And *Suffolk*'s cloudy brow his ſtormy hate;
Sharp *Buckingham* unburthens with his tongue
The envious load that lyes upon his heart:
And dogged *York*, that reaches at the moon,
Whoſe over-weening arm I have pluck'd back,
By falſe accuſe doth level at my life.
And you, my ſovereign lady, with the reſt,
Cauſeleſs have laid diſgraces on my head,
And with your beſt endeavours have ſtirr'd up
My liefeſt liege to be mine enemy:
Ay, all of you have laid your heads together,

(My

(My ſelf had notice of your conventicles)
And all to make away my guiltleſs life.
I ſhall not want falſe witneſs to condemn me,
Nor ſtore of treaſons to augment my guilt:
The ancient proverb will be well effected,
A ſtaff is quickly found to beat a dog.

Car. My Liege, his railing is intollerable.
If thoſe that care to keep your royal perſon
From treaſon's ſecret knife and traitor's rage,
Be thus upbraided, chid and rated at,
And the offender granted ſcope of ſpeech,
'Twill make them cool in zeal unto your grace.

Suf. Hath he not twit our Sovereign lady here
With ignominious words, though clarkly coucht?
As if ſhe had ſuborned ſome to ſwear
Falſe allegations, to o'erthrow his ſtate.

Q. *Mar.* But I can give the loſer leave to chide.

Glo. Far truer ſpoke than meant; I loſe indeed,
Beſhrew the winners, for they play'd me falſe;
And well ſuch loſers may have leave to ſpeak.

Buck. He'll wreſt the ſenſe, and hold us here all day.
Lord Cardinal, he is your priſoner.

Car. Sirs, take away the Duke, and guard him ſure.

Glo. Ah, thus King *Henry* throws away his crutch
Before his legs be firm to bear his body;
Thus is the ſhepherd beaten from thy ſide,
And wolves are gnarling who ſhall gnaw thee firſt.
Ah that my fear were falſe, ah that it were:
For, good King *Henry*, thy decay I fear. [*Exit.*

SCENE III.

K. *Henry.* My lords, what to your wiſdom ſeemeth beſt,

Do or undo, as if our ſelf were here.

Q. *Mar.* What, will your Highneſs leave the parliament?

K. *Henry.* Ay *Margaret*; my heart is drown'd with grief,
Whoſe flood begins to flow within my eyes;
My body round engirt with miſery:
For what's more miſerable than diſcontent?
Ah uncle *Humphry*, in thy face I ſee
The map of honour, truth, and loyalty:
And yet, good *Humphry*, is the hour to come,
That e'er I prov'd thee falſe, or fear'd thy faith;
(What low'ring ſtar now envies thy eſtate?)
That theſe great lords, and *Margaret* our Queen,
Do ſeek ſubverſion of thy harmleſs life,
That never didſt them wrong, nor no man wrong.
And as the butcher takes away the calf,
And binds the wretch, and beats it when it ſtrays,
Bearing it to the bloody ſlaughter-houſe:
Even ſo remorſleſs have they born him hence.
And as the dam runs lowing up and down,
Looking the way her harmleſs young one went,
And can do nought but wail her darling's loſs:
Even ſo my ſelf bewail good *Glo'ſter*'s caſe
With ſad unhelpful tears; and with dim'd eyes
Look after him, and cannot do him good:
So mighty are his vowed enemies.
His fortunes I will weep, and 'twixt each groan
Say, who's a traitor? *Glo'ſter* he is none. [*Exit.*

Q. *Mar.* Free lords, cold ſnow melts with the ſun's hot beams.
Henry my lord is cold in great affairs,
Too full of fooliſh pity: *Glo'ſter*'s ſhew
Beguiles him, as the mournful crocodile
With ſorrow ſnares relenting paſſengers:
Or as the ſnake roll'd in a flowry bank,

With

With ſhining checker'd ſlough, doth ſting a child
That for the beauty thinks it excellent.
Believe me, lords, were none more wiſe than I,
(And yet herein I judge my own wit good)
This *Glo'ſter* ſhould be quickly rid the world,
To rid us from the fear we have of him.
Car. That he ſhould die, is worthy policy,
But yet we want a colour for his death:
'Tis meet he be condemn'd by courſe of law.
Suf. But in my mind, that were no policy:
The King will labour ſtill to ſave his life,
The commons haply riſe to ſave his life;
And yet we have but trivial argument,
More than miſtruſt, that ſhews him worthy death.
York. So that by this, you would not have him die.
Suf. Ah *York*, no man alive ſo fain as I.
York. 'Tis *York* that hath more reaſon for his death.
But my lord Cardinal, and you my lord of *Suffolk*,
Say as you think, and ſpeak it from your ſouls:
Were't not all one, an empty eagle were ſet
To guard the chicken from a hungry kite,
As place Duke *Humphry* for the King's Protector?
Q. *Mar.* So the poor chicken ſhould be ſure of death.
Suf. Madam, 'tis true; and wer't not madneſs then
To make the fox ſurveyor of the fold?
Who being accus'd a crafty murtherer,
His guilt ſhould be but idly poſted over,
Becauſe his purpoſe is not executed.
No; let him die, in that he is a fox,
By nature prov'd an enemy to the flock,
Before his chaps be ſtain'd with crimſon blood,
As *Humphry* prov'd by reaſons to my liege;
And do not ſtand on quillets how to ſlay him:

Be it by ginns, by ſnares, by ſubtilty,
Sleeping or waking, 'tis no matter how,
So he be dead; for that is good deceit
Which mates him firſt, that firſt intends deceit.

Q. *Mar.* Thrice noble *Suffolk*, 'tis reſolutely ſpoke.

Suf. Not reſolute, except ſo much were done;
For things are often ſpoke, and ſeldom meant;
But that my heart accordeth with my tongue,
Seeing the deed is meritorious,
And to preſerve my ſoveraign from his foe,
Say but the word, and I will be his prieſt.

Car. But I would have him dead, my lord of *Suffolk*,
Ere you can take due orders for a prieſt:
Say you conſent and cenſure well the deed,
And I'll provide his executioner,
I tender ſo the ſafety of my liege.

Suf. Here is my hand, the deed is worthy doing.

Q. *Mar.* And ſo ſay I.

York. And I; and now we three have ſpoke it,
It skills not greatly who impugns our doom.

SCENE IV.

Enter a Poſt.

Poſt. Great lords, from *Ireland* am I come amain,
To ſignifie that rebels there are up,
And put the *Engliſhmen* unto the ſword:
Send ſuccours, lords, and ſtop the rage betime,
Before the wound do grow incurable;
For being green, there is great hope of help.

Car. A breach that craves a quick expedient ſtop!
What counſel give you in this weighty cauſe?

York. That *Somerſet* be ſent a Regent thither:

'Tis meet that lucky ruler be employ'd:
Witneſs the fortune he hath had in *France*.
Som. If *York*, with all his far-fetch'd policy,
Had been the Regent there inſtead of me,
He never would have ſtaid in *France* ſo long.
York. No, not to loſe it all, as thou haſt done:
I rather would have loſt my life betimes,
Than bring a burthen of diſhonour home,
By ſtaying there ſo long, 'till all were loſt.
Shew me one ſcar character'd on thy skin:
Mens fleſh preſerv'd ſo whole, do ſeldom win.
Q. *Mar.* Nay then, this ſpark will prove a raging fire,
If wind and fuel be brought to feed it with:
No more, good *York*; ſweet *Somerſet* be ſtill.
Thy fortune, *York*, hadſt thou been Regent there,
Might haply have proved far worſe than his.
York. What, worſe than nought? nay, then a ſhame take all.
Som. And in the number, thee that wiſheſt ſhame.
Car. My lord of *York*, try what your fortune is;
Th' uncivil kerns of *Ireland* are in arms,
And temper clay with blood of *Engliſhmen*.
To *Ireland* will you lead a band of men,
Collected choicely, from each county ſome,
And try your hap againſt the *Iriſhmen*?
York. I will, my lord, ſo pleaſe his Majeſty.
Suf. Why, our authority is his conſent,
And what we do eſtabliſh he confirms;
Then, noble *York*, take thou this task in hand.
York. I am content: provide me ſoldiers, lords,
Whilſt I take order for mine own affairs.
Suf. A charge, lord *York*, that I will ſee perform'd.
But now return we to the falſe Duke *Humphry*.
Car. No more of him; for I will deal with him,

That

That henceforth he ſhall trouble us no more:
And ſo break off: the day is almoſt ſpent:
Lord *Suffolk*, you and I muſt talk of that event.
York. My lord of *Suffolk*, within fourteen days
At *Briſtol* I expect my ſoldiers,
For there I'll ſhip them all for *Ireland.*
Suf. I'll ſee it truly done, my lord of *York.* [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

Manet York.

York. Now *York*, or never, ſteel thy fearful thoughts,
And change miſdoubt to reſolution:
Be that thou hop'ſt to be, or what thou art
Reſign to death, it is not worth th'enjoying:
Let pale-fac'd fear keep with the mean-born man,
And find no harbour in a royal heart.
Faſter than ſpring-time ſhow'rs, comes thought on thought,
And not a thought but thinks on dignity.
My brain, more buſie than the lab'ring ſpider,
Weaves tedious ſnares to trap mine enemies.
Well nobles, well; 'tis politickly done,
To ſend me packing with an hoſt of men:
I fear me you but warm the ſtarved Snake,
Who cheriſh'd in your breaſts, will ſting your hearts.
'Twas men I lack'd, and you will give them me;
I take it kindly: yet be well aſſur'd,
You put ſharp weapons in a mad-man's hands.
Whilſt I in *Ireland* nouriſh a mighty band,
I will ſtir up in *England* ſome black ſtorm,
Shall blow ten thouſand ſouls to heav'n or hell.
And this fell tempeſt ſhall not ceaſe to rage,
Until the golden circuit on my head,

(Like to the glorious ſun's tranſparent beams,)
Do calm the fury of this mad-brain'd flaw.
And for a miniſter of my intent,
I have ſeduc'd a headſtrong *Kentiſh* man,
John Cade of *Aſhford*,
To make commotion, as full well he can,
Under the title of *John Mortimer*.
In *Ireland* have I ſeen this ſtubborn *Cade*
Oppoſe himſelf againſt a troop of kerns,
And fought ſo long, 'till that his thighs with darts
Were almoſt like a ſharp-quill'd porcupine:
And in the end being reſcu'd, I have ſeen
Him caper upright like a wild Moriſco,
Shaking the bloody darts, as he his bells.
Full often, like a ſhag-hair'd crafty kern,
Hath he converſed with the enemy,
And undiſcover'd come to me again,
And giv'n me notice of their villanies.
This devil here ſhall be my ſubſtitute;
For that *John Mortimer* which is now dead,
In face, in gate, in ſpeech he doth reſemble.
By this I ſhall perceive the Commons mind,
How they affect the houſe and claim of *York*.
Say he be taken, rack'd and tortured;
I know no pain they can inflict upon him
Will make him ſay I mov'd him to thoſe arms.
Say that he thrive, as 'tis great like he will,
Why then from *Ireland* come I with my ſtrength,
And reap the harveſt which that raſcal ſow'd:
For *Humphry* being dead, as he ſhall be,
And *Henry* put a-part, the next for me. [*Exit.*

SCENE VI.

Enter two or three running over the ſtage, from the murther of Duke Humphry.

1. RUN to my lord of *Suffolk*; let him know
We have diſpatch'd the Duke, as he commanded.

2. Oh that it were to do! what have we done?
Didſt ever hear a man ſo penitent?

Enter Suffolk.

1. Here comes my lord.

Suf. Now, Sirs, have you diſpatch'd this thing?

1. Ay, my good lord, he's dead.

Suf. Why, that's well ſaid. Go get you to my houſe,
I will reward you for this vent'rous deed:
The King and all the Peers are here at hand.
Have you laid fair the bed? are all things well,
According as I gave directions?

1. Yes, my good lord.

Suf. Away, be gone. [*Exeunt.*

Enter King Henry, *the Queen, Cardinal,* Suffolk, Somerſet, *with attendants.*

K. *Henry.* Go call our uncle to our preſence ſtrait:
Say we intend to try his grace to-day,
If he be guilty, as 'tis publiſhed.

Suf. I'll call him preſently, my noble lord. [*Exit.*

K. *Henry.* Lords take your places; and I pray you all
Proceed no ſtraiter 'gainſt our uncle *Glo'ſter*,
Than from true evidence of good eſteem
He be approv'd in practice culpable.

Q. *Mar.* God forbid any malice ſhould prevail,
That faultleſs may condemn a nobleman:
Pray God he may acquit him of ſuſpicion.
K. *Henry.* I thank thee *Nell*, theſe words content me much.

Enter Suffolk.

How now? why look'ſt thou pale? why trembleſt thou?
Where is our uncle? what's the matter, *Suffolk?*
Suf. Dead in his bed, my lord, *Glo'ſter* is dead.
Q. *Mar.* Marry God forfend!
Car. God's ſecret judgment: I did dream to-night,
The Duke was dumb, and could not ſpeak a word. [*K. ſwoons.*
Q. *Mar.* How fares my lord? help lords, the King is dead.
Som. Rear up his body, wring him by the noſe. ‡
Q. *Mar.* Run, go, help, help: oh *Henry*, ope thine eyes.
Suf. He doth revive again; madam be patient.
K. *Henry.* O heav'nly God!
Q. *Mar.* How fares my gracious lord?
Suf. Comfort my Soveraign, gracious *Henry* comfort.
K. *Henry.* What, doth my lord of *Suffolk* comfort me?
Came he right now to ſing a raven's note,
Whoſe diſmal tune bereft my vital pow'rs:
And thinks he, that the chirping of a wren,
By crying comfort from a hollow breaſt,
Can chaſe away the firſt-conceived ſound?
Hide not thy poiſon with ſuch ſugar'd words,
Lay not thy hands on me; forbear, I ſay,
Their touch affrights me as a ſerpent's ſting.
Thou baleful meſſenger, out of my ſight:
Upon thy eye-balls murd'rous tyranny
Sits in grim majeſty to fright the world.
Look not upon me, for thine eyes are wounding;
Yet do not go away; come, baſilisk,

‡ *This line is not in the old edition.*

And kill the innocent gazer with thy ſight:
For in the ſhade of death I ſhall find joy;
In life, but double death, now *Glo'ſter*'s dead.

Q. *Mar.* Why do you rate my lord of *Suffolk* thus?
Although the Duke was enemy to him,
Yet he moſt chriſtian-like laments his death.
As for my ſelf, foe as he was to me,
Might liquid tears, or heart-offending groans,
Or blood-conſuming ſighs recal his life;
I would be blind with weeping, ſick with groans,
Look pale as primroſe with blood-drinking ſighs,
And all to have the noble Duke alive.
What know I how the world may deem of me?
For it is known we were but hollow friends:
It may be judg'd I made the Duke away,
So ſhall my name with ſlander's tongue be wounded,
And Princes courts be filled with reproach:
This get I by his death: ah me unhappy!
To be a Queen, and crown'd with infamy.

K. *Henry.* Ah woe is me for *Glo'ſter*, wretched man!

Q. *Mar.* Be woe for me, more wretched than he is.
What, doſt thou turn away and hide thy face?
I am no loathſome leper, look on me.
What, art thou like the adder waxen deaf?
Be poys'nous too, and kill thy forlorn Queen.
Is all thy comfort ſhut in *Glo'ſter*'s tomb?
Why then dame *Margaret* was ne'er thy joy.
Erect his ſtatue, and do worſhip to it,
And make my image but an ale-houſe ſign.
Was I for this nigh wreckt upon the ſea,
And twice by [b] adverſe winds from *England*'s bank
Drove back again unto my native clime?
What boaded this? but well fore-warning winds

Did

[b] *aukward wind.*

Did ſeem to ſay, ſeek not a ſcorpion's neſt,
Nor ſet thy footing on this unkind ſhoar.
What did I then? but curſt the gentle guſts,
And he that loos'd them from their brazen caves;
And bid them blow towards *England*'s bleſſed ſhoar,
Or turn our ſtern upon a dreadful rock:
Yet *Æolus* would not be a murtherer,
He left that hateful office unto thee. *
The ſplitting rocks cow'r'd in the ſinking ſands,
And would not daſh me with their ragged ſides;
Becauſe thy flinty heart, more hard than they,
Might in thy palace periſh *Margaret*.
As far as I could ken the chalky cliffs,
When from thy ſhoar the tempeſt beat us back,
I ſtood upon the hatches in the ſtorm;
And when the dusky sky began to rob
My earneſt-gaping ſight of the land's view,
I took a coſtly jewel from my neck,
(A heart it was, bound in with diamonds,)
And threw it tow'rds thy land; the ſea receiv'd it,
And ſo I wiſh'd thy body might my heart.
And ev'n with this I loſt fair *England*'s view,
And bid mine eyes be packing with my heart,
And call'd them blind and dusky ſpectacles,
For loſing ken of *Albion*'s wiſhed coaſt.
How often have I tempted *Suffolk*'s tongue:
(The agent of thy foul inconſtancy)
To ſit and watch me, as *Aſcanius* did,
When he to madding *Dido* would unfold

* ——office unto thee.
The pretty vaulting ſea refus'd to drown me,
Knowing that thou wouldſt have me drown'd on ſhoar
With tears as ſalt as ſea, through thy unkindneſs.
The ſplitting rocks *&c.*

His

His father's acts, commenc'd in burning *Troy?*
Am I not witcht like her? or thou not falſe like him?
Ah me, I can no more: dye *Margaret*,
For *Henry* weeps that thou didſt live ſo long.

Noiſe within. Enter Warwick, *and many Commons.*

War. It is reported, mighty ſoveraign,
That good Duke *Humphry* traiterouſly is murther'd
By *Suffolk*, and the Cardinal *Beauford*'s means:
The Commons, like an angry hive of bees
That want their leader, ſcatter up and down,
And care not who they ſting in their revenge.
My ſelf have calm'd their ſpleenful mutiny,
Until they hear the order of his death.

K. *Henry.* That he is dead, good *Warwick*, 'tis too true;
But how he died, God knows, not *Henry:*
Enter his chamber, view his breathleſs corps,
And comment then upon his ſudden death.

War. That I ſhall do, my liege: ſtay, *Salisbury*,
With the rude multitude, 'till I return.

K. *Henry.* O thou that judgeſt all things, ſtay my thoughts;
My thoughts, that labour to perſuade my ſoul
Some violent hands were laid on *Humphry*'s life:
If my ſuſpect be falſe, forgive me God,
For judgment only doth belong to thee.
Fain would I go to chafe his paly lips
With twenty thouſand kiſſes, and to drain
Upon his face an ocean of ſalt tears.
To tell my love unto his dumb deaf trunk,
And with my fingers feel his hand unfeeling:
But all in vain are theſe mean obſequies.

[*Bed with* Glo'ſter's *body put forth.*

And to ſurvey his dead and earthly image,

What

What were it but to make my ſorrow greater?

War. Come hither, gracious ſoveraign, view this body.

K. *Henry.* That is to ſee how deep my grave is made:
For with his ſoul fled all my worldly ſolace;
For ſeeing him, I ſee my life is death.

War. As ſurely as my ſoul intends to live
With that dread King that took our ſtate upon him,
To free us from his father's wrathful curſe,
I do believe that violent hands were laid
Upon the life of this thrice-famed Duke.

Suf. A dreadful oath, ſworn with a ſolemn tongue!
What inſtance gives lord *Warwick* for his vow?

War. See how the blood is ſettled in his face.
Oft have I ſeen a timely parted ghoſt
Of aſhy ſemblance, meager, pale, and bloodleſs,
Being all deſcended to the lab'ring heart,
Who in the conflict that it holds with death,
Attracts the ſame for aidance 'gainſt the enemy,
Which with the heart there cools, and ne'er returneth
To bluſh and beautify the cheek again.
But ſee, his face is black and full of blood,
His eye-balls further out than when he liv'd,
Staring full gaſtly, like a ſtrangled man;
His hair up-rear'd, his noſtrils ſtretch'd with ſtruggling,
His hands abroad diſplay'd, as one that graſpt
And tugg'd for life, and was by ſtrength ſubdu'd.
Look on the ſheets; his hair, you ſee, is ſticking;
His well-proportion'd beard made rough and rugged,
Like to the ſummer's corn by tempeſt lodg'd:
It cannot be but he was murther'd here:
The leaſt of all theſe ſigns were probable.

Suf. Why *Warwick*, who ſhould do the Duke to death?
My ſelf and *Beauford* had him in protection,

And we, I hope, Sirs, are no murtherers.

War. But both of you have vow'd Duke *Humphry*'s death,
And you forſooth had the good Duke to keep:
'Tis like you would not feaſt him like a friend,
And 'tis well ſeen he found an enemy.

Q. *Mar.* Then you belike ſuſpect theſe noblemen,
As guilty of Duke *Humphry*'s timeleſs death.

War. Who finds the heifer dead and bleeding freſh,
And ſees faſt by a butcher with an ax,
But will ſuſpect 'twas he that made the ſlaughter?
Who finds the partridge in the puttock's neſt,
But may imagine how the bird was dead,
Although the kite ſoar with unbloodied beak?
Even ſo ſuſpicious is this tragedy.

Q. *Mar.* Are you the butcher, *Suffolk?* where's the knife?
Is *Beauford* term'd a kite? where are his tallons?

Suf. I wear no knife to ſlaughter ſleeping men,
But here's a 'vengeful ſword, ruſted with eaſe,
That ſhall be ſcoured in his ranc'rous heart,
That ſlanders me with murther's crimſon badge.
Say if thou dar'ſt, proud lord of *Warwickſhire*,
That I am faulty in Duke *Humphry*'s death.

War. What dares not *Warwick*, if falſe *Suffolk* dare him.

Q. *Mar.* He dare not calm his contumelious ſpirit,
Nor ceaſe to be an arrogant controller,
Though *Suffolk* dare him twenty thouſand times.

War. Madam be ſtill; with rev'rence may I ſay;
For ev'ry word you ſpeak in his behalf,
Is ſlander to your royal dignity.

Suf. Blunt-witted lord, ignoble in demeanour,
If ever lady wrong'd her lord ſo much,
Thy mother took into her blameful bed
Some ſtern untutor'd churl; and noble ſtock

Was graft with crab-tree ſlip, whoſe fruit thou art,
And never of the *Nevil*'s noble race.

War. But that the guilt of murther bucklers thee,
And I ſhould rob the death's-man of his fee,
Quitting thee thereby of ten thouſand ſhames,
And that my Soveraign's preſence makes me mild,
I would, falſe murd'rous coward, on thy knee
Make thee beg pardon for thy paſſed ſpeech,
And ſay it was thy mother that thou meant'ſt;
That thou thy ſelf waſt born in baſtardy:
And after all this fearful homage done,
Give thee thy hire, and ſend thy ſoul to hell,
Pernicious blood-ſucker of ſleeping men.

Suf. Thou ſhalt be waking while I ſhed thy blood,
If from this preſence thou dar'ſt go with me.

War. Away ev'n now, or I will drag thee hence:
Unworthy though thou art, I'll cope with thee,
And do ſome ſervice to Duke *Humphry*'s ghoſt. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

K. *Henry.* What ſtronger breaſt-plate than a heart untainted?
Thrice is he arm'd that hath his quarrel juſt;
And he but naked (though lock'd up in ſteel)
Whoſe conſcience with injuſtice is corrupted. [*A noiſe within.*

Q. *Mar.* What noiſe is this?

Enter Suffolk *and* Warwick, *with their weapons drawn.*

K. *Henry.* Why how now, lords? your wrathful weapons
Here in our preſence! dare you be ſo bold? [drawn
Why, what tumultuous clamour have we here?

Suf. The trait'rous *Warwick* with the men of *Bury*
Set all upon me, mighty Soveraign.

Enter Salisbury.

Sal. Sirs, ſtand apart, the King ſhall know your mind.
Dread lord, the Commons ſend you word by me,
Unleſs lord *Suffolk* ſtrait be put to death,
Or baniſhed fair *England*'s territories,
They will by violence tear him from your palace,
And torture him with grievous lingring death.
They ſay, by him the good Duke *Humphry* dy'd;
They ſay, in him they fear your Highneſs' death;
And mere inſtinct of love and loyalty,
(Free from a ſtubborn oppoſite intent,
As being thought to contradict your liking)
Makes them thus forward in his baniſhment.
They ſay, in care of your moſt royal perſon,
That if your Highneſs ſhould intend to ſleep,
And charge that no man ſhould diſturb your reſt,
In pain of your diſlike, or pain of death;
Yet notwithſtanding ſuch a ſtrange edict,
Were there a ſerpent ſeen with forked tongue
That ſlily glided tow'rds your Majeſty,
It were but neceſſary you were wak'd;
Leſt being ſuffer'd in that harmleſs ſlumber,
The mortal worm might make the ſleep eternal.
And therefore do they cry, though you forbid,
That they will guard you whe're you will or no,
From ſuch fell ſerpents as falſe *Suffolk* is;
With whoſe invenomed and fatal ſting
Your loving uncle, twenty times his worth,
They ſay, is ſhamefully bereft of life.

Commons within. An anſwer from the King, my lord of *Salisbury*.

Suf. 'Tis like the Commons, rude unpoliſh'd hinds,

Could ſend ſuch meſſage to their Soveraign:
But you, my lord, were glad to be employ'd,
To ſhew how queint an orator you are.
But all the honour *Salisbury* hath won,
Is, that he was the lord ambaſſador
Sent from a ſort of tinkers to the King.

Within. An anſwer from the King, or we will all break in.

K. *Henry.* Go *Salisbury*, and tell them all from me,
I thank them for their tender loving care;
And had I not been cited ſo by them,
Yet did I purpoſe as they do entreat;
For ſure my thoughts do hourly propheſie
Miſchance unto my ſtate by *Suffolk*'s means.
And therefore by his Majeſty I ſwear,
Whoſe far-unworthy deputy I am,
He ſhall not breathe infection in this air
But three days longer, on the pain of death.

Q. *Mar.* Oh *Henry*, let me plead for gentle *Suffolk.*

K. *Henry.* Ungentle Queen, to call him gentle *Suffolk.*
No more, I ſay: if thou doſt plead for him,
Thou wilt but add increaſe unto my wrath.
Had I but ſaid, I would have kept my word;
But when I ſwear, it is irrevocable:
If after three days ſpace thou here be'ſt found,
On any ground that I am ruler of,
The world ſhall not be ranſom for thy life.
Come *Warwick*, come good *Warwick*, go with me;
I have great matters to impart to thee. [*Exit.*

SCENE VIII.

Q. *Mar.* Miſchance and ſorrow go along with you,
Heart's diſcontent and ſour affliction,

Be play-fellows to keep you company;
There's two of you, the devil make a third,
And three-fold vengeance tend upon your ſteps.
Suf. Ceaſe, gentle Queen, theſe execrations,
And let thy *Suffolk* take his heavy leave.
Q. *Mar.* Fie coward woman, and ſoft-hearted wretch,
Haſt thou not ſpirit to curſe thine enemy?
Suf. A plague upon them; wherefore ſhould I curſe them?
Would curſes kill as doth the mandrake's groan,
I would invent as bitter ſearching terms,
As curſt, as harſh and horrible to hear,
Deliver'd ſtrongly through my fixed teeth,
With full as many ſigns of deadly hate,
As lean-fac'd envy in her loathſome cave.
My tongue ſhould ſtumble in mine earneſt words,
Mine eyes ſhould ſparkle like the beaten flint,
Mine hair be fixt an end like one diſtract:
Ay, ev'ry joint ſhould ſeem to curſe and ban.
And even now my burthen'd heart would break,
Should I not curſe them. Poiſon be their drink,
Gall, worſe than gall the daintieſt that they taſte,
Their ſweeteſt ſhade a grove of cypreſs trees,
Their chiefeſt proſpect murd'ring baſilisks,
Their ſofteſt touch as ſmart as lizards ſtings,
Their muſick frightful as the ſerpent's hiſs,
And boading ſcreech-owls make the conſort full.
All the foul terrors in dark-ſeated hell-----
Q. *Mar.* Enough, ſweet *Suffolk*, thou torment'ſt thy ſelf,
And theſe dread curſes like the ſun 'gainſt glaſs,
Or like an over-charged gun, recoil,
And turn the force of them upon thy ſelf.
Suf. You bad me ban, and will you bid me leave?
Now by the ground that I am baniſh'd from,

Well

Well could I curſe away a winter's night,
Though ſtanding naked on a mountain top,
Where biting cold would never let graſs grow,
And think it but a minute ſpent in ſport.

Q. *Mar.* Oh let me intreat thee ceaſe, give me thy hand,
That I may dew it with my mournful tears;
Nor let the rain of heav'n wet this place,
To waſh away my woful monuments.
Oh, could this kiſs be printed in thy hand,
That thou might'ſt think upon theſe by the ſeal,
Through whom a thouſand ſighs are breath'd for thee.
So get thee gone that I may know my grief,
'Tis but ſurmis'd whilſt thou art ſtanding by,
As one that ſurfeits, thinking on a want:
I will repeal thee, or be well aſſur'd
Adventure to be baniſhed my ſelf:
And baniſhed I am, if but from thee.
Go, ſpeak not to me; even now be gone-----
Oh go not yet-----Ev'n thus two friends condemn'd
Embrace and kiſs, and take ten thouſand leaves,
Loather a hundred times to part than die:
Yet now farewel, and farewel life with thee.

Suf. Thus is poor *Suffolk* ten times baniſhed,
Once by the King, and three times thrice by thee.
'Tis not the land I care for, wert thou hence;
A wilderneſs is populous enough,
So *Suffolk* had thy heav'nly company.
For where thou art there is the world it ſelf,
With ev'ry ſev'ral pleaſure in the world:
And where thou art not, deſolation.
I can no more-----Live thou to joy thy life;
My ſelf no joy in ought but that thou liv'ſt.

SCENE

SCENE IX.

Enter Vaux.

Q. *Mar.* Whither goes *Vaux* ſo faſt? what news, I pr'ythee?
Vaux. To ſignifie unto his Majeſty,
That Cardinal *Beauford*'s at the point of death:
For ſuddenly a grievous ſickneſs took him,
That makes him gaſp, and ſtare, and catch the air,
Blaſpheming God, and curſing men on earth.
Sometimes he talks, as if Duke *Humphry*'s ghoſt
Were by his ſide; ſometimes he calls the King,
And whiſpers to his pillow, as to him,
The ſecrets of his over-charged ſoul:
And I am ſent to tell his Majeſty,
Then even now he cries aloud for him.
Q. *Mar.* Go tell this heavy meſſage to the King. [*Ex.* Vaux.
Ay me! what is this world? what news are theſe?
But wherefore grieve I at an hour's poor loſs,
Omitting *Suffolk*'s exile, my ſoul's treaſure?
Why only, *Suffolk*, mourn I not for thee,
And with the ſouthern clouds contend in tears?
Theirs for the earth's increaſe; mine for my ſorrows.
Now get thee hence, the King thou know'ſt is coming,
If thou be found by me, thou art but dead.
Suf. If I depart from thee, I cannot live,
And in thy ſight to die, what were it elſe
But like a pleaſant ſlumber in thy lap?
Here could I breathe my ſoul into the air,
As mild and gentle as the cradle-babe
Dying with mother's dug between its lips.
Where from thy ſight I ſhould be raging mad,
And cry out for thee to cloſe up mine eyes;

To

To have thee with thy lips to ſtop my mouth:
So ſhouldſt thou either turn my flying ſoul,
Or I ſhould breathe it ſo into thy body,
And then it liv'd in ſweet *Elyſium*.
To die by thee, were but to die in jeſt,
From thee to die, were torture more than death;
Oh! let me ſtay, befal what may befal.

Q. *Mar.* Away; though parting be a fretful corroſive,
It is applied to a deathful wound.
To *France*, ſweet *Suffolk*; let me hear from thee:
For whereſoe'er thou art in this world's globe,
I'll have an *Iris* that ſhall find thee out.

Suf. I go.

Q. *Mar.* And take my heart with thee.

Suf. A jewel lock'd into the woful'ſt casket
That ever did contain a thing of worth,
Even as a ſplitted bark, ſo ſunder we;
This way fall I to death.

Q. *Mar.* This way for me. [*Exeunt ſeverally.*

SCENE X.

Enter King Henry, Salisbury, *and* Warwick, *to the Cardinal in Bed.*

K. *Henry.* HOW fares my lord? ſpeak *Beauford* to thy Soveraign.

Car. If thou beeſt Death, I'll give thee *England*'s treaſure,
Enough to purchaſe ſuch another Iſland,
So thou wilt let me live, and feel no pain.

K. *Henry.* Ah, what a ſign it is of evil life,
Where death's approach is ſeen ſo terrible!

War. Beauford, it is thy Soveraign ſpeaks to thee.

Car.

Car. Bring me unto my tryal when you will.
Dy'd he not in his bed? where ſhould he die?
Can I make men live whe're they will or no?
Oh torture me no more, I will confeſs -----
Alive again? then ſhew me where he is:
I'll give a thouſand pound to look upon him -----
He hath no eyes, the duſt hath blinded them:
Combe down his hair; look, look, it ſtands upright,
Like lime-twigs ſet to catch my winged ſoul:
Give me ſome drink, and bid th' apothecary
Bring the ſtrong poiſon that I bought of him.

K. *Henry.* O thou eternal mover of the heav'ns,
Look with a gentle eye upon this wretch;
Oh beat away the buſie medling fiend,
That lays ſtrong ſiege unto this wretch's ſoul,
And from his boſom purge this black deſpair.

War. See how the pangs of death do make him grin.

Sal. Diſturb him not, let him paſs peaceably.

K. *Henry.* Peace to his ſoul, if God's good pleaſure be.
Lord Cardinal, if thou think'ſt on heav'n's bliſs,
Hold up thy hand, make ſignal of thy hope.
He dies, and makes no ſign! O God forgive him.

War. So bad a death argues a monſtrous life.

K. *Henry.* Forbear to judge, for we are ſinners all.
Cloſe up his eyes, and draw the curtain cloſe,
And let us all to meditation. [*Exeunt.*

ACT IV. SCENE I.

The Coaſt of Kent.

Alarum. Fight at ſea. Ordnance goes off. Enter Captain, Whitmore, *and other Pirates, with* Suffolk *and others Priſoners.*

CAPTAIN.

THE gaudy, blabbing, and remorſeful day
Is crept into the boſom of the ſea:
And now loud howling wolves arouſe the jades
That drag the tragick melancholy night:
Who with their drowſie, ſlow, and flagging wings
Cleap dead mens graves; and from their miſty jaws
Breathe foul contagious darkneſs in the air;
Therefore bring forth the ſoldiers of our prize:
For whilſt our pinnace anchors in the *Downs*,
Here ſhall they make their ranſom on the ſand,
Or with their blood ſtain this diſcolour'd ſhore.
Maſter, this priſoner freely give I thee;
And thou that art his mate, make boot of this:
The other, *Walter Whitmore*, is thy ſhare.

1 *Gen.* What is my ranſom, maſter, let me know.

Maſt. A thouſand crowns, or elſe lay down your head.

Mate. And ſo much ſhall you give, or off goes yours.

Whit. What, think you much to pay two thouſand crowns,
And bear the name and port of gentlemen?
Cut both the villains throats, for die you ſhall:
Nor can thoſe lives which we have loſt in fight,

Be counter-pois'd with ſuch a petty ſum.

1 *Gent.* I'll give it, Sir, and therefore ſpare my life.

2 *Gent.* And ſo will I, and write home for it ſtraight.

Whit. I loſt mine eye in laying the prize aboard,
And therefore to revenge it, ſhalt thou die; [*To* Suffolk.
And ſo ſhould theſe, if I might have my will.

Cap. Be not ſo raſh, take ranſom, let him live.

Suf. Look on my † *George*, I am a gentleman,
Rate me at what thou wilt, thou ſhalt be paid.

Whit. And ſo am I; my name is *Walter Whitmore*.
How now? why ſtart'ſt thou? what, doth death affright?

Suf. Thy name affrights me, in whoſe ſound is death.
A cunning man did calculate my birth,
And told me, that by *Water* I ſhould die:
Yet let not this make thee be bloody-minded,
Thy name is *Gualtier*, being rightly ſounded.

Whit. *Gualtier* or *Walter*, which it is I care not,
Ne'er yet did baſe diſhonour blur our name,
But with our ſword we wip'd away the blot.
Therefore, when merchant-like I ſell revenge,
Broke be my ſword, my arms torn and defac'd,
And I proclaim'd a coward through the world.

Suf. Stay *Whitmore*, for thy priſoner is a Prince,
The Duke of *Suffolk*, *William de la Pole*.

Whit. The Duke of *Suffolk* muffled up in rags?

Suf. Ay, but theſe rags are no part of the Duke.
Jove ſometimes went diguis'd, and why not I? ‡

Cap. But *Jove* was never ſlain, as thou ſhalt be.

Suf. Obſcure and lowly ſwain, King *Henry*'s blood,
The honourable blood of *Lancaſter*,

† *In the firſt edition it is* my ring.

‡ *This verſe is omitted in all but the firſt old edition, without which what follows is not ſenſe. The next line alſo,* Obſcure and lowly ſwain—King *Henry*'s blood! *was falſely put into the Captain's mouth.*

Muſt

Muſt not be ſhed by ſuch a jaded groom:
Haſt thou not kiſs'd thy hand, and held my ſtirrop?
Bare-headed plodded by my foot-cloth mule,
And thought thee happy when I ſhook my head?
How often haſt thou waited at my cup,
Fed from my trencher, kneel'd down at the board,
When I have feaſted with Queen *Margaret?*
Remember it, and let it make thee creſt-faln,
Ay, and allay this thy abortive pride:
How in our voiding lobby haſt thou ſtood,
And duly waited for my coming forth?
This hand of mine hath writ in thy behalf,
And therefore ſhall it charm thy riotous tongue.

Whit. Speak Captain, ſhall I ſtab the forlorn ſwain?

Cap. Firſt let my words ſtab him, as he hath me.

Suf. Baſe ſlave, thy words are blunt, and ſo art thou.

Cap. Convey him hence, and on our long-boat's ſide
Strike off his head.

Suf. Thou dar'ſt not for thy own.

Cap. Poole, Sir *Poole?* lord?
Ay kennel ---- puddle ---- ſink, whoſe filth and dirt
Troubles the ſilver ſpring where *England* drinks:
Now will I dam up this thy yawning mouth,
For ſwallowing up the treaſure of the realm.
Thy lips that kiſs'd the Queen, ſhall ſweep the ground;
And thou that ſmil'dſt at good Duke *Humphry*'s death,
Againſt the ſenſeleſs winds ſhalt grin in vain,
Who in contempt ſhall hiſs at thee again.
And wedded be thou to the hags of hell,
For daring to affie a mighty lord
Unto the daughter of a worthleſs King,
Having nor ſubject, wealth, nor diadem.
By deviliſh policy art thou grown great,

And, like ambitious *Sylla*, over-gorg'd
With gobbets of thy mother's bleeding heart.
By thee *Anjou* and *Main* were ſold to *France*;
The falſe revolting *Normans* thorough thee
Diſdain to call us lord; and *Picardie*
Hath ſlain their governors, ſurpriz'd our forts,
And ſent the ragged ſoldiers wounded home.
The princely *Warwick*, and the *Nevils* all,
(Whoſe dreadful ſwords were never drawn in vain)
Are hating thee, are riſing up in arms.
And now the houſe of *York* (thruſt from the crown
By ſhameful murther of a guiltleſs King,
And lofty proud incroaching tyranny,)
Burns with revenging fire, whoſe hopeful colours
Advance a half-fac'd ſun ſtriving to ſhine;
Under the which is writ, *Invitis nubibus.*
The Commons here in *Kent* are up in arms:
And to conclude, reproach and beggary
Is crept into the palace of our King,
And all by thee. Away, convey him hence.

Suf. O that I were a God, to ſhoot forth thunder
Upon theſe paultry, ſervile, abject drudges:
Small things make baſe men proud. This villain here,
Being captain of a pinnace, threatens more
Than *Bargulus* the ſtrong *Illyrian* pyrate.
Drones ſuck not eagles blood, but rob bee-hives.
It is impoſſible that I ſhould die
By ſuch a lowly vaſſal as thy ſelf.
Thy words move rage and not remorſe in me:
I go of meſſage from the Queen to *France*;
I charge thee waft me ſafely croſs the channel.

Cap. Walter-----

Whit. Come *Suffolk* I muſt waft thee to thy death.

Suf.

Suf. Gelidus timor occupat artus, it's thee I fear.
Whit. Thou ſhalt have cauſe to fear, before I leave thee.
What, are ye daunted now? now will ye ſtoop?
1 *Gent.* My gracious lord intreat him; ſpeak him fair.
Suf. Suffolk's imperial tongue is ſtern and rough,
Us'd to command, untaught to plead for favour.
Far be it we ſhould honour ſuch as theſe
With humble ſuit; no; rather let my head
Stoop to the block than theſe knees bow to any,
Save to the God of heav'n and to my King;
And ſooner dance upon a bloody pole,
Than ſtand uncover'd to the vulgar groom.
True nobility is exempt from fear:
More can I bear than you dare execute.
Cap. Hale him away, and let him talk no more;
Come ſoldiers, ſhew what cruelty ye can.
Suf. That this my death may never be forgot.
Great men oft die by vile *Bezonians*.
A *Roman* ſworder and *Bandetto* ſlave
Murther'd ſweet *Tully*. *Brutus*' baſtard hand
Pompey the Great; and *Suffolk* dies by pirates.
[*Exit* Walter Whitmore *with* Suffolk.
Cap. And as for theſe whoſe ranſom we have ſet,
It is our pleaſure one of them depart;
Therefore come you with us, and let him go.
[*Ex. Captain and the reſt.*
Manet the firſt Gent. Enter Whitmore *with the body.*
Whit. There let his head and liveleſs body lye,
Until the Queen his miſtreſs bury it. [*Exit* Whitmore.
1 *Gent.* O barbarous and bloody ſpectacle!
His body will I bear unto the King:
If he revenge it not, yet will his friends,
So will the Queen that living held him dear. [*Exit.*

SCENE

SCENE II.

Southwark.

Enter Bevis *and* John Holland.

Bevis. COME and get thee a ſword though made of a lath; they have been up theſe two days.

Hol. They have the more need to ſleep now then.

Bevis. I tell thee *Jack Cade* the clothier means to dreſs the commonwealth, and turn it, and ſet a new nap upon it.

Hol. So he had need, 'tis thread-bare. Well, I ſay it was never a merry world in *England* ſince gentlemen came up.

Bevis. O miſerable age! virtue is not regarded in handy-crafts men.

Hol. The nobility think ſcorn to go in leather aprons.

Bevis. Nay more, the King's council are no good workmen.

Hol. True, and yet it is ſaid, *Labour in thy vocation*; which is as much as to ſay, let the magiſtrates be labouring men; and therefore ſhould we be magiſtrates.

Bevis. Thou haſt hit it; for there's no better ſign of a brave mind than a hard hand.

Hol. I ſee them, I ſee them; there's *Beſt*'s ſon, the tanner of *Wingham*.

Bevis. He ſhall have the skins of our enemies to make dog's leather of.

Hol. And *Dick* the butcher.

Bevis. Then is ſin ſtruck down like an ox, and iniquity's throat cut like a calf.

Hol. And *Smith* the weaver.

Bevis. Argo, their thread of life is ſpun.

Hol. Come come, let's fall in with them.

Drum.

Drum. Enter Cade, Dick *the butcher*, Smith *the weaver, and a ſawyer, with infinite numbers.*

Cade. We *John Cade*, ſo term'd of our ſuppoſed father----

Dick. Or rather of ſtealing a cade of herrings.

Cade. For our enemies ſhall fall before us, inſpired with the ſpirit of putting down Kings and Princes; command ſilence.

Dick. Silence.

Cade. My father was a *Mortimer*----

Dick. He was an honeſt man and a good bricklayer.

Cade. My mother a *Plantagenet*-----

Dick. I knew her well, ſhe was a midwife,

Cade. My wife deſcended of the *Lacies*-----

Dick. She was indeed a pedlar's daughter, and ſold many laces.

Weav. But now of late not able to travel with her furr'd pack, ſhe waſhes bucks here at home.

Cade. Therefore am I of an honourable houſe.

Dick. Ay by my faith the field is honourable, and there was he born under a hedge; for his father had never a houſe but the cage.

Cade. Valiant I am.

Weav. A muſt needs, for beggary is valiant.

Cade. I am able to endure much.

Dick. No queſtion of that; for I have ſeen him whipt three market days together.

Cade. I fear neither ſword nor fire.

Weav. He need not fear the ſword, for his coat is of proof.

Dick. But methinks he ſhould ſtand in fear of fire, being burnt i'th' hand for ſtealing of ſheep.

Cade. Be brave then, for your captain is brave and vows reformation. There ſhall be in *England* ſeven half-penny loaves ſold for a penny; the three-hoop'd pot ſhall have ten hoops, and I will make it felony to drink ſmall beer. All the realm ſhall be

be in common, and in *Cheapſide* ſhall my palfry go to graſs; and when I am King, as King I will be------

All. God ſave your Majeſty.

Cade. I thank you, good people. There ſhall be no mony, all ſhall eat and drink upon my ſcore, and I will apparel them all in one livery, that they may agree like brothers, and worſhip me, their lord.

Dick. The firſt thing we do, let's kill all the lawyers.

Cade. Nay, that I mean to do. Is not this a lamentable thing, that the skin of an innocent lamb ſhould be made parchment; that parchment being ſcribbled o'er, ſhould undo a man? Some ſay the bee ſtings, but I ſay 'tis bees wax; for I did but ſeal once to a thing, and I was never my own man ſince. How now? who is there?

Enter a Clerk.

Weav. The clerk of *Chatham*; he can write and read, and caſt accompt.

Cade. O monſtrous!

Weav. We took him ſetting boys copies.

Cade. Here's a villain!

Weav. He'as a book in his pocket with red letters in't.

Cade. Nay then he's a conjurer.

Dick. Nay, he can make obligations and write court hand.

Cade. I am ſorry for't: the man is a proper man, of mine honour; unleſs I find him guilty, he ſhall not die. Come hither, ſirrah, I muſt examine thee; what is thy name?

Clerk. Emanuel.

Dick. They uſe to write it on the top of letters: 'twill go hard with you.

Cade. Let me alone. Doſt thou uſe to write thy name? or haſt thou a mark to thy ſelf like an honeſt plain-dealing man?

Clerk. Sir, I thank God I have been ſo well brought up, that I can write my name.

All. He hath confeſt; away with him; he is a villain and a traitor.

Cade. Away with him, I ſay: hang him with his pen and ink-horn about his neck. [*Exit one with the Clerk.*

Enter Michael.

Mich. Where is our general?

Cade. Here I am, thou particular fellow.

Mich. Fly, fly, fly; Sir *Humphry Stafford* and his brother are hard by with the King's forces.

Cade. Stand villain, ſtand, or I'll fell thee down; he ſhall be encounter'd with a man as good as himſelf. He is but a Knight, is a?

Mich. No.

Cade. To equal him I will make my ſelf a Knight preſently; riſe up, Sir *John Mortimer*. Now have at him.

SCENE III.

Enter Sir Humphry Stafford, *and young* Stafford, *with drum and ſoldiers.*

Staf. Rebellious hinds, the filth and skum of *Kent*,
Mark'd for the gallows, lay your weapons down,
Home to your cottages, forſake this groom,
The King is merciful if you revolt.

Y. *Staf.* But angry, wrathful, and inclin'd to blood,
If you go forward; therefore yield or die.

Cade. As for theſe ſilken-coated ſlaves I paſs not,
It is to you good people that I ſpeak,
O'er whom (in time to come) I hope to reign;
For I am rightful heir unto the crown.

Staf. Villain, thy father was a plaiſterer,
And thou thy ſelf a ſhearman, art thou not?

Cade. And *Adam* was a gardener.

Y. *Staf.* And what of that?

Cade. Marry, this *Edmond Mortimer* Earl of *March* married the Duke of *Clarence*'s daughter, did he not?

Staf. Ay, Sir.

Cade. By her he had two children at one birth.

Y. *Staf.* That's falſe.

Cade. Ay, there's the queſtion; but I ſay 'tis true:
The elder of them being put to nurſe,
Was by a beggar-woman ſtol'n away,
And ignorant of his birth and parentage,
Became a bricklayer when he came to age.
His ſon am I, deny it if you can.

Dick. Nay, 'tis too true, therefore he ſhall be King.

Weav. Sir, he made a chimney in my father's houſe, and the bricks are alive at this day to teſtify it; therefore deny it not.

Staf. And will you credit this baſe drudge's words,
That ſpeaks he knows not what?

All. Ay marry will we, therefore get you gone.

Y. *Staf.* *Jack Cade*, the Duke of *York* hath taught you this.

Cade. He lies, for I invented it my ſelf. Go too, Sirrah, tell the King from me, that for his father's ſake, *Henry* the Fifth (in whoſe time boys went to ſpan-counter for *French* crowns) I am content he ſhall reign, but I'll be Protector over him.

Dick. And furthermore we'll have the lord *Say*'s head, for ſelling the Dukedom of *Main*.

Cade. And good reaſon; for thereby is *England* maim'd, and fain to go with a ſtaff, but that my puiſſance holds it up. Fellow-Kings, I tell you, that lord *Say* hath gelded the commonwealth, and made it an eunuch; and more than that, he can ſpeak *French*, and therefore he is a traytor.

Staf. O groſs and miſerable ignorance!

Cade. Nay anſwer if you can: the *Frenchmen* are our enemies:

mies: go too then; I ask but this; can he that ſpeaks with the tongue of the enemy be a good counſellor or no?

All. No, no, and therefore we'll have his head.

Y. *Staf.* Well, ſeeing gentle words will not prevail,
Aſſail them with the army of the King.

Staf. Herald away, and throughout every town
Proclaim them traitors that are up with *Cade*;
That thoſe which fly before the battel ends,
May (even in their wives and childrens ſight)
Be hang'd up for example at their doors;
And you that be the King's friends follow me. [*Exit.*

Cade. And you that love the Commons follow me.
Now ſhew your ſelves men, 'tis for liberty.
We will not leave one lord, one gentleman;
Spare none, but ſuch as go in clouted ſhoone,
For they are thrifty honeſt men, and ſuch
As would (but that they dare not) take our parts.

Dick. They are all in order, and march toward us.

Cade. But then are we in order, when we are moſt out of order. Come, march forward.

[*Alarum to fight, wherein both the* Staffords *are ſlain.*

Enter Cade *and the reſt.*

Cade. Where's *Dick*, the butcher of *Aſhford?*

Dick. Here, Sir.

Cade. They fell before thee like ſheep and oxen, and thou behaved'ſt thy ſelf as if thou hadſt been in thine own ſlaughter-houſe; therefore thus I will reward thee: the Lent ſhall be as long again as it is, and thou ſhalt have a licenſe to kill for a hundred lacking one.

Dick. I deſire no more.

Cade. And to ſpeak truth, thou deſerv'ſt no leſs. This monument of the victory will I bear, and the bodies ſhall be dragg'd

at my horſe's heels 'till I do come to *London*, where we will have the Mayor's ſword born before us.

Dick. If we mean to thrive and do good, break open the goals, and let out the priſoners.

Cade. Fear not that, I warrant thee. Come, let's march towards *London*. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

BLACK-HEATH.

Enter King Henry *with a ſupplication, and Queen* Margaret *with* Suffolk's *head, the Duke of* Buckingham, *and the Lord* Say.

Q. *Mar.* OFT have I heard that grief ſoftens the mind,
And makes it fearful and degenerate;
Think therefore on revenge, and ceaſe to weep.
But who can ceaſe to weep, and look on this?
Here may his head lie on my throbbing breaſt:
But where's the body that I ſhould imbrace?

Buck. What anſwer makes your grace to the rebels ſupplication?

K. *Henry.* I'll ſend ſome holy Biſhop to intreat;
For God forbid ſo many ſimple ſouls
Should periſh by the ſword. And I my ſelf,
Rather than bloody war ſhould cut them ſhort,
Will parly with *Jack Cade* their general.
But ſtay, I'll read it over once again.

Q. *Mar.* Ah barbarous villains! hath this lovely face
Rul'd like a wandring planet over me,
And could it not inforce them to relent,
That were unworthy to behold the ſame?

K. *Henry.* Lord *Say*, *Jack Cade* hath ſworn to have thy head.

Say.

Say. Ay, but I hope your Highneſs ſhall have his.

K. *Henry.* How now, madam?
Lamenting ſtill, and mourning *Suffolk*'s death?
I fear me, love, if that I had been dead,
Thou would'ſt not half have mourn'd ſo much for me.

Q. *Mar.* My love, I ſhould not mourn, but die for thee.

Enter a Meſſenger.

K. *Henry.* How now? what news? why com'ſt thou in ſuch haſte?

Meſ. The rebels are in *Southwark*; fly, my lord:
Jack Cade proclaims himſelf lord *Mortimer*,
Deſcended from the Duke of *Clarence*' houſe,
And calls your grace uſurper openly,
And vows to crown himſelf in *Weſtminſter*.
His army is a ragged multitude
Of hinds and peaſants, rude and mercileſs:
Sir *Humphry Stafford* and his brother's death
Hath given them heart, and courage to proceed:
All ſcholars, lawyers, courtiers, gentlemen,
They call falſe caterpillers, and intend their death.

K. *Henry.* O graceleſs men! they know not what they do.

Buck. My gracious lord, retire to *Killingworth*,
Until a power be rais'd to put them down.

Q. *Mar.* Ah! were the Duke of *Suffolk* now alive,
Theſe *Kentiſh* rebels ſhould be ſoon appeas'd.

K. *Henry.* Lord *Say*, the traitors hate thee,
Therefore away with us to *Killingworth*.

Say. So might your grace's perſon be in danger:
The ſight of me is odious in their eyes;
And therefore in this city will I ſtay,
And live alone as ſecret as I may.

Enter

Enter another Meſſenger.

2 *Meſ. Jack Cade* hath gotten *London-bridge*,
The citizens fly him, and forſake their houſes:
The raſcal people thirſting after prey
Join with the traitor, and they jointly ſwear
To ſpoil the city and your royal court.

Buck. Then linger not, my lord; away, take horſe.

K. *Henry.* Come *Marg'ret*, God our hope will ſuccour us.

Q. *Mar.* My hope is gone, now *Suffolk* is deceas'd.

K. *Henry.* Farewel my lord, truſt not to *Kentiſh* rebels.

Buck. Truſt no body, for fear you be betray'd.

Say. The truſt I have is in mine innocence,
And therefore am I bold and reſolute. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

LONDON.

Enter lord Scales *upon the* Tower *walking. Then enter two or three Citizens below.*

Scales. HOW now? is *Jack Cade* ſlain?

1 *Cit.* No my lord, nor like to be ſlain: for they have won the bridge, killing all thoſe that withſtand them: the Lord-Mayor craves aid of your honour from the *Tower* to defend the city from the rebels.

Scales. Such aid as I can ſpare you ſhall command,
But I am troubled here with them my ſelf.
The rebels have aſſay'd to win the *Tower*.
But get you into *Smithfield*, gather head,
And thither will I ſend you *Matthew Goff*.
Fight for your King, your country and your lives,
And ſo farewel, for I muſt hence again. [*Exeunt.*

Enter Jack Cade *and the reſt, and ſtrikes his ſtaff on* London Stone.

Cade. Now is *Mortimer* lord of this city, and here ſitting upon *London Stone*, I charge and command that of the city's coſt the piſſing conduit run nothing but claret wine the firſt year of our reign. And now henceforward it ſhall be treaſon for any that calls me other than lord *Mortimer*.

Enter a ſoldier running.

Sol. Jack Cade, Jack Cade!

Cade. Knock him down there. [*They kill him.*

Weav. If this fellow be wiſe, he'll never call you *Jack Cade* more, I think he hath a very fair warning.

Dick. My lord, there's an army gathered together in *Smithfield.*

Cade. Come then let's go fight with them: but firſt go and ſet *London-Bridge* on fire, and if you can, burn down the *Tower* too. Come, let's away. [*Exeunt omnes.*

Alarum. Matthew Goff *is ſlain, and all the reſt. Then enter* Jack Cade *with his company.*

Cade. So Sirs: Now go ſome and pull down the *Savoy:* others to the Inns of courts, down with them all.

Dick. I have a ſuit unto your lordſhip.

Cade. Be it a lordſhip, thou ſhalt have it for that word.

Dick. Only that the laws of *England* may come out of your mouth.

John. Maſs, 'twill be ſore law then, for he was thruſt in the mouth with a ſpear, and 'tis not whole yet.

Smith. Nay, *John*, it will be ſtinking law, for his breath ſtinks with toaſted cheeſe.

Cade.

Cade. I have thought upon it, it ſhall be ſo. Away, burn all the records of the realm, my mouth ſhall be the parliament of *England.*

John. Then we are like to have biting ſtatutes, unleſs his teeth be pull'd out.

Cade. And henceforward all things ſhall be in common.

SCENE VI.

Enter a Meſſenger.

Meſ. My lord, a prize, a prize! here's the lord *Say* which ſold the town in *France*, he that made us pay one and twenty fifteens and one ſhilling to the pound, the laſt ſubſidy.

Enter George *with the lord* Say.

Cade. Well, he ſhall be beheaded for it ten times. Ah thou *Say*, thou ſerge, nay, thou buckram lord, now art thou within point-blank of our juriſdiction regal. What canſt thou anſwer to my Majeſty for giving up of *Normandy* unto Monſieur *Baſimecu*, the Dauphin of *France?* be it known unto thee by theſe preſents, even the preſence of lord *Mortimer*, that I am the beſom that muſt ſweep the court clean of ſuch filth as thou art: thou haſt moſt traiterouſly corrupted the youth of the realm in erecting a grammar-ſchool; and whereas before our fore-fathers had no other books but the ſcore and the tally, thou haſt cauſed printing to be us'd; and contrary to the King, his crown and dignity, thou haſt built a paper-mill. It will be prov'd to thy face that thou haſt men about thee, that uſually talk of a *Noun* and a *Verb*, and ſuch abominable words, as no chriſtian ear can endure to hear. Thou haſt appointed juſtices of the peace to call poor men before them about matters they were not able to anſwer. Moreover, thou haſt put them in priſon, and becauſe they could not read, thou haſt hang'd them; when indeed,

indeed, only for that cauſe they have been moſt worthy to live. Thou doſt ride on a foot-cloth, doſt thou not?

Say. What of that?

Cade. Marry, thou ought'ſt not to let thy horſe wear a cloak, when honeſter men than thou go in their hoſe and doublets.

Dick. And work in their ſhirt too, as my ſelf for example, that am a butcher.

Say. You men of *Kent.*

Dick. What ſay you of *Kent?*

Say. Nothing but this: 'Tis *bona terra, mala gens.*

Cade. Away with him, away with him, he ſpeaks latin.

Say. Hear me but ſpeak, and bear me where you will.
Kent, in the commentaries *Cæſar* writ,
Is term'd the civil'ſt place of all this Iſle;
Sweet is the country, becauſe full of riches,
The people liberal, valiant, active, wealthy,
Which makes me hope thou art not void of pity.
I ſold not *Main*, I loſt not *Normandy*,
Yet to recover them would loſe my life:
Juſtice with favour have I always done,
Prayers and tears have mov'd me, gifts could never;
When have I ought exacted at your hands?
Kent to maintain, the King, the realm and you,
Large gifts have I beſtow'd on learned clerks,
Becauſe my book preferr'd me to the King:
And ſeeing ignorance is the curſe of God,
Knowledge the wing wherewith we fly to heav'n,
Unleſs you be poſſeſt with dev'liſh ſpirits,
Ye cannot but forbear to murther me:
This tongue hath parlied unto foreign Kings
For your behoof.

Cade. Tut, when ſtruck'ſt thou one blow in the field?

Say. Great men have reaching hands; oft have I ſtruck

Thoſe that I never ſaw, and ſtruck them dead.

George. O monſtrous coward! what, to come behind folks?

Say. Theſe cheeks are pale with watching for your good.

Cade. Give him a box o'th' ear, and that will make 'em red again.

Say. Long ſitting to determine poor mens cauſes
Hath made me full of ſickneſs and diſeaſes.

Cade. Ye ſhall have a hempen caudle then, and the help of a hatchet.

Dick. Why doſt thou quiver, man?

Say. The palſie, and not fear, provokes me.

Cade. Nay, he nods at us, as who ſhould ſay, I'll be even with you. I'll ſee if his head will ſtand ſteadier on a pole or no: take him away, and behead him.

Say. Tell me, wherein have I offended moſt?
Have I affected wealth or honour? ſpeak.
Are my cheſts fill'd up with extorted gold?
Is my apparel ſumptuous to behold?
Whom have I injur'd, that ye ſeek my death?
Theſe hands are free from guiltleſs blood-ſhedding,
This breaſt from harb'ring foul deceitful thoughts.
O let me live.

Cade. I feel remorſe in my ſelf with his words; but I'll bridle it; he ſhall die, an it be but for pleading ſo well for his life. Away with him, he has a familiar under his tongue, he ſpeaks not a God's name. Go, take him away I ſay, and ſtrike off his head preſently, and then break into his ſon-in-law's houſe, Sir *James Cromer*, and ſtrike off his head, and bring them both upon two poles hither.

All. It ſhall be done.

Say. Ah country-men, if when you make your pray'rs,
God ſhould be ſo obdurate as your ſelves,
How would it fare with your departed ſouls?
And therefore yet relent, and ſave my life.

Cade.

Cade. Away with him, and do as I command ye: the proudeſt peer of the realm ſhall not wear a head on his ſhoulders, unleſs he pay me tribute; there ſhall not a maid be married, but ſhe ſhall pay me her maidenhead ere they have it; men ſhall hold of me in *Capite*. And we charge and command, that their wives be as free as heart can wiſh, or tongue can tell.

Dick. My lord, when ſhall we go to *Cheapſide*, and take up commodities upon our bills?

Cade. Marry preſently.

All. O brave.

Enter one with the heads.

Cade. But is not this brave?
Let them kiſs one another; for they lov'd well
When they were alive: Now part them again,
Leſt they conſult about the giving up
Of ſome more towns in *France*. Soldiers,
Defer the ſpoil of the city until night;
For with theſe borne before us, inſtead of maces,
Will we ride through the ſtreets, and at every corner
Have them kiſs. Away. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

Alarum, and Retreat. Enter again Cade, *and all his Rabblement.*

Cade. Up *Fiſh-ſtreet*, down St. *Magnes* Corner, kill and knock down, throw them into *Thames*.

A Parley ſounded.

What noiſe is this I hear?
Dare any be ſo bold to ſound retreat or parley,
When I command them kill?

Enter Buckingham *and old* Clifford.

Buck. Ay, here they be that dare and will diſturb thee:
Know, *Cade*, we come ambaſſadors from the King
Unto the Commons, whom thou haſt miſ-led,
And here pronounce free pardon to them all
That will forſake thee, and go home in peace.

Clif. What ſay ye, country-men, will ye relent,
And yield to mercy, whilſt 'tis offer'd you,
Or let a rabble lead you to your deaths?
Who loves the King, and will embrace his pardon,
Fling up his cap, and ſay, *God ſave his Majeſty*;
Who hateth him, and honours not his father,
Henry the fifth, that made all *France* to quake,
Shake he his weapon at us, and paſs by,

All. God ſave the King! God ſave the King!

Cade. What, *Buckingham* and *Clifford*, are ye ſo brave? and you, baſe peaſants, do ye believe him? will you needs be hang'd with your pardons about your necks? hath my ſword therefore broke through *London* gates, that you ſhould leave me at the *White-hart* in *Southwark*? I thought you would never have given out theſe arms 'till you had recovered your ancient freedom: but you are all recreants and daſtards, and delight to live in ſlavery to the nobility. Let them break your backs with burthens, take your houſes over your heads, raviſh your wives and daughters before your faces. For me, I will make ſhift for one, and ſo God's curſe light upon you all.

All. We'll follow *Cade*, we'll follow *Cade*.

Clif. Is *Cade* the ſon of *Henry* the fifth,
That thus you do exclaim you'll go with him?
Will he conduct you through the heart of *France*,
And make the meaneſt of you Earls and Dukes?

Alas,

Alas, he hath no home, no place to fly to:
Nor knows he how to live, but by the ſpoil,
Unleſs by robbing of your friends and us.
Were't not a ſhame, that whilſt you live at jar,
The fearful *French*, whom you late vanquiſhed,
Should make a ſtart o'er ſeas, and vanquiſh you?
Methinks already in this civil broil
I ſee them lording it in *London* ſtreets,
Crying *Villiago* unto all they meet.
Better ten thouſand baſe-born *Cades* miſcarry,
Than you ſhould ſtoop unto a *Frenchman*'s mercy.
To *France*, to *France*, and get what you have loſt;
Spare *England*, for it is your native coaſt.
Henry hath mony, you are ſtrong and manly:
God on our ſide, doubt not of victory.

All. A *Clifford!* a *Clifford!* we'll follow the King and *Clifford.*

Cade. Was ever feather ſo lightly blown to and fro, as this multitude? the name of *Henry* the fifth hales them to an hundred miſchiefs, and makes them leave me deſolate. I ſee them lay their heads together to ſurprize me. My ſword make way for me, for here is no ſtaying; in deſpight of the devils and hell, have through the very midſt of you; and heavens and honour be witneſs, that no want of reſolution in me, but only my followers baſe and ignominious treaſons make me betake me to my heels. [*Exit.*

Buck. What, is he fled? go ſome and follow him.
And he that brings his head unto the King,
Shall have a thouſand crowns for his reward.
[*Exeunt ſome of them.*
Follow me, ſoldiers; we'll deviſe a mean
To reconcile you all unto the King. [*Exeunt omnes.*

SCENE

SCENE VIII.

Sound trumpets. Enter King Henry, *Queen* Margaret, *and* Somerſet *on the terras.*

K. *Henry.* WAS ever King that joy'd an earthly throne,
And could command no more content than I?
No ſooner was I crept out of my cradle,
But I was made a King at nine months old:
Was never ſubject long'd to be a King,
As I do long and wiſh to be a ſubject.

Enter Buckingham *and* Clifford.

Buck. Health and glad tidings to your Majeſty.

K. *Henry.* Why *Buckingham*, is the traitor *Cade* ſurpriz'd?
Or is he but retir'd to make him ſtrong?

Enter multitudes with halters about their necks.

Clif. He's fled my lord, and all his pow'rs do yield,
And humbly thus with halters on their necks
Expect your Highneſs' doom of life or death.

K. *Henry.* Then, heav'n, ſet ope thy everlaſting gates,
To entertain my vows of thanks and praiſe.
Soldiers, this day have you redeem'd your lives,
And ſhew'd how well you love your Prince and country:
Continue ſtill in this ſo good a mind,
And *Henry*, though he be unfortunate,
Aſſure your ſelves will never be unkind:
And ſo with thanks and pardon to you all,
I do diſmiſs you to your ſeveral countries.

All. God ſave the King! God ſave the King!

Enter Meſſenger.

Meſ. Pleaſe it your grace to be advertiſed,
The Duke of *York* is newly come from *Ireland*,
And with a puiſſant and mighty pow'r
Of gallow-glaſſes and ſtout kernes,
Is marching hitherward in proud array:
And ſtill proclaimeth as he comes along,
His arms are only to remove from thee
The Duke of *Somerſet*, whom he terms a traitor.

K. *Henry*. Thus ſtands my ſtate 'twixt *Cade* and *York* diſtreſt,
Like to a ſhip that having 'ſcap'd a tempeſt
Is ſtraitway claim'd and boarded with a pyrate.
But now is *Cade* driv'n back, his men diſpers'd,
And now is *York* in arms to ſecond him.
I pray thee *Buckingham* go and meet with him,
And ask him what's the reaſon of theſe arms:
Tell him I'll ſend Duke *Edmond* to the *Tower*,
And *Somerſet* we will commit thee thither,
Until his army be diſmiſt from him.

Som. My lord,
I'll yield my ſelf to priſon willingly,
Or unto death, to do my country good.

K. *Henry*. In any caſe be not too rough in terms,
For he is fierce and cannot brook hard language.

Buck. I will, my lord; and doubt not ſo to deal,
As all things ſhall redound unto your good.

K. *Henry*. Come wife let's in, and learn to govern better,
For yet may *England* curſe my wretched reign. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE

SCENE IX.

A garden in Kent.

Enter Jack Cade.

Cade. FIE on ambition; fie on my ſelf that have a ſword, and yet am ready to famiſh. Theſe five days have I hid me in theſe woods and durſt not peep out, for all the country is laid for me: but now am I ſo hungry, that if I might have a leaſe of my life for a thouſand years, I could ſtay no longer. Wherefore on a brick wall have I climb'd into this garden to ſee if I can eat graſs, or pick a ſallet another while, which is not amiſs to cool a man's ſtomach this hot weather; and I think this word ſallet was born to do me good, for many a time but for a † ſallet my brain-pan had been cleft with a brown bill; and many a time when I have been dry, and bravely marching, it hath ſerv'd me inſtead of a quart-pot to drink in; and now the word ſallet muſt ſerve me to feed on.

Enter Iden.

Iden. Lord, who would live turmoiled in the court,
And may enjoy ſuch quiet walks as theſe?
This ſmall inheritance my father left me
Contenteth me, and's worth a monarchy.
I ſeek not to wax great by other's waining,
Or gather wealth I care not with what envy;
Sufficeth, that I have maintains my ſtate,
And ſends the poor well pleaſed from my gate.

Cade. Here's the lord of the ſoil come to ſeize me for a ſtray,

† *a* ſallet, *by corruption from* cælata *a* helmet *(ſays* Skinner) quia galeæ celatæ fuerunt.

for

for entring his fee-ſimple without leave. Ah villain, thou wilt betray me and get a thouſand crowns of the King by carrying my head to him, but I'll make thee eat iron like an oſtridge, and ſwallow my ſword like a great pin ere thou and I part.

Iden. Why, rude companion, whatſoe'er thou be,
I know thee not, why then ſhould I betray thee?
Is't not enough to break into my garden,
And like a thief to come to rob my grounds,
Climbing my walls in ſpight of me the owner,
But thou wilt brave me with theſe ſawcy terms?

Cade. Brave thee? by the beſt blood that ever was broach'd, and beard thee too. Look on me well, I have eat no meat theſe five days, yet come thou and thy five men, and if I do not leave you as dead as a door nail, I pray God I may never eat graſs more.

Iden. Nay, it ſhall ne'er be ſaid while *England* ſtands,
That *Alexander Iden* an Eſquire of *Kent*,
Took odds to combat a poor famiſh'd man.
Oppoſe thy ſtedfaſt gazing eyes to mine,
See if thou canſt out-face me with thy looks:
Set limb to limb, and thou art far the leſſer:
Thy hand is but a finger to my fiſt,
Thy leg a ſtick compared with this truncheon,
My foot ſhall fight with all the ſtrength thou haſt;
And if mine arm be heaved in the air,
Thy grave is digg'd already in the earth:
As for more words, whoſe greatneſs anſwers words,
Let this my ſword report what ſpeech forbears.

Cade. By my valour, the moſt complete champion that ever I heard. Steel, if thou turn thine edge, or cut not out the burly-bon'd clown in chines of beef ere thou ſleep in thy ſheath, I beſeech *Jove* on my knees thou may'ſt be turned into hobnails.

Here they fight.

O I am ſlain! famine and no other hath ſlain me, let ten thouſand devils come againſt me, and give me but the ten meals I have loſt, and I'd defy them all. Wither garden, and be henceforth a burying place to all that do dwell in this houſe, becauſe the unconquer'd ſoul of *Cade* is fled.

Iden. Is't *Cade* that I have ſlain, that monſtrous traitor?
Sword, I will hallow thee for this thy deed,
And hang thee o'er my tomb when I am dead.
Ne'er ſhall this blood be wiped from thy point,
But thou ſhalt wear it as a herald's coat,
To emblaze the honour which thy maſter got.

Cade. Iden farewel, and be proud of thy victory: tell *Kent* from me ſhe hath loſt her beſt man, and exhort all the world to be cowards; for I that never fear'd any, am vanquiſhed by famine, not by valour. [*Dies.*

Iden. How much thou wrong'ſt me, heav'n be my judge;
Die damned wretch, the curſe of her that bare thee:
And as I thruſt thy body in with my ſword,
So wiſh I, I might thruſt thy ſoul to hell.
Hence will I drag thee headlong by the heels
Unto a dunghill which ſhall be thy grave,
And there cut off thy moſt ungracious head,
Which I will bear in triumph to the King,
Leaving thy trunk for crows to feed upon. [*Exit.*

ACT V. SCENE I.

In the fields near London.

Enter York, *and his army of* Iriſh, *with drum and colours.*

YORK.

ROM *Ireland* thus comes *York* to claim his right,
And pluck the crown from feeble *Henry*'s head.
Ring bells aloud, burn bonfires clear and bright,
To entertain great *England*'s lawful King.
Ah Majeſty! who would not buy thee dear?
Let them obey that know not how to rule.
This hand was made to handle nought but gold.
I cannot give due action to my words,
Except a ſword or ſcepter ballance it.
A ſcepter ſhall it have, have I a ſoul,
On which I'll toſs the Flower-de-Luce of *France*.

Enter Buckingham.

Whom have we here? *Buckingham* to diſturb me?
The King hath ſent him ſure: I muſt diſſemble.
Buck. York, if thou meaneſt well, I greet thee well.
York. Humphry of *Buckingham*, I accept thy greeting.
Art thou a meſſenger, or come of pleaſure?
Buck. A meſſenger from *Henry* our dread Liege,
To know the reaſon of theſe arms in peace?
Or why thou being a ſubject as I am,
Againſt thy oath and true allegiance ſworn,

Should raiſe ſo great a power without his leave?
Or dare to bring thy force ſo near the court?
York. Scarce can I ſpeak, my choler is ſo great.
Oh I could hew up rocks and fight with flint,
I am ſo angry at theſe abject terms.
And now like *Ajax Telamonius*,
On ſheep or oxen could I ſpend my fury.
I am far better born than is the King:
More like a King, more kingly in my thoughts.
But I muſt make fair weather yet a while,
'Till *Henry* be more weak and I more ſtrong. [*Aſide.*
O *Buckingham!* I pr'ythee pardon me,
That I have giv'n no anſwer all this while;
My mind was troubled with deep melancholy.
The cauſe why I have brought this army hither,
Is to remove proud *Somerſet* from the King,
Seditious to his grace and to the ſtate.
Buck. That is too much preſumption on thy part;
But if thy arms be to no other end,
The King hath yielded unto thy demand:
The Duke of *Somerſet* is in the *Tower*.
York. Upon thine honour is he priſoner?
Buck. Upon mine honour he is priſoner.
York. Then *Buckingham* I do diſmiſs my powers.
Soldiers, I thank you all; diſperſe your ſelves;
Meet me to-morrow in St. *George*'s field,
You ſhall have pay and ev'ry thing you wiſh.
And let my Soveraign virtuous *Henry*,
Command my eldeſt ſon, nay all my ſons,
As pledges of my fealty and love,
I'll ſend them all as willing as I live;
Lands, goods, horſe, armour, any thing I have
Is his to uſe, ſo *Somerſet* may die.

Buck.

Buck. York, I commend this kind ſubmiſſion,
We twain will go into his Highneſs' tent.

SCENE II.

Enter King Henry *and attendants.*

K. *Henry. Buckingham*, doth *York* intend no harm to us,
That thus he marcheth with thee arm in arm?
York. In all ſubmiſſion and humility,
York doth preſent himſelf unto your Highneſs.
K. *Henry.* Then what intend theſe forces thou doſt bring?
York. To have the traitor *Somerſet* from hence,
And fight againſt that monſtrous rebel *Cade*,
Whom ſince I heard to be diſcomfited.

Enter Iden *with* Cade's *head.*

Iden. If one ſo rude and of ſo mean condition
May paſs into the preſence of a King,
Lo, I preſent your grace a traitor's head;
The head of *Cade*, whom I in combat ſlew.
K. *Henry.* The head of *Cade?* great God! how juſt art thou?
O let me view his viſage being dead,
That living wrought me ſuch exceeding trouble.
Tell me, my friend, art thou the man that ſlew him?
Iden. I was, an't like your Majeſty.
K. *Henry.* How art thou call'd? and what is thy degree?
Iden. Alexander Iden, that's my name,
A poor Eſquire of *Kent* that loves the King.
Buck. So pleaſe it you, my lord, 'twere not amiſs
He were created Knight for his good ſervice.
K. *Henry. Iden*, kneel down; riſe up a Knight:
We give thee for reward a thouſand marks,
And will that thou henceforth attend on us.

Iden.

Iden. May *Iden* live to merit ſuch a bounty,
And never live but true unto his liege.

SCENE III.

Enter Queen Margaret *and* Somerſet.

K. *Henry.* See *Buckingham*, *Somerſet* comes with the Queen;
Go, bid her hide him quickly from the Duke.

Q. *Mar.* For thouſand *Yorks* he ſhall not hide his head,
But boldly ſtand and front him to his face.

York. How now? is *Somerſet* at liberty?
Then, *York*, unlooſe thy long impriſoned thoughts,
And let thy tongue be equal with thy heart.
Shall I endure the ſight of *Somerſet?*
Falſe King, why haſt thou broken faith with me,
Knowing how hardly I can brook abuſe?
King did I call thee? no, thou art no King:
Not fit to govern and rule multitudes,
Which durſt not, no nor canſt not rule a traitor.
That head of thine doth not become a crown:
Thy hand is made to graſp a palmer's ſtaff,
And not to grace an awful princely ſcepter.
That gold muſt round engirt theſe brows of mine,
Whoſe ſmile and frown (like to *Achilles'* ſpear)
Is able with the change to kill and cure.
Here is a hand to hold a ſcepter up,
And with the ſame to act controlling laws:
Give place; by heaven thou ſhalt rule no more
O'er him, whom heav'n created for thy ruler.

Som. O monſtrous traitor! I arreſt thee *York*
Of capital treaſon 'gainſt the King and crown;
Obey, audacious traitor, kneel for grace.

York. Would'ſt have me kneel? firſt, let me ask of thee,

If they can brook I bow a knee to man!
Sirrah, call in my ſons to be my bail:
I know, ere they will let me go to ward,
They'll pawn their ſwords for my enfranchiſement.

Q. *Mar.* Call hither *Clifford*, bid him come amain,
To ſay, if that the baſtard boys of *York*
Shall be the ſurety for their traitor father.

York. O blood beſpotted *Neapolitan*,
Out-caſt of *Naples*, *England*'s bloody ſcourge!
The ſons of *York*, thy betters in their birth,
Shall be their father's bail, and bane to thoſe
That for my ſurety will refuſe the boys.

Enter Edward *and* Richard.

See where they come, I'll warrant they'll make it good.

Enter Clifford.

Q. *Mar.* And here comes *Clifford*, to deny their bail.

Clif. Health and all happineſs to my lord the King.

York. I thank thee, *Clifford*; ſay, what news with thee?
Nay, do not fright me with an angry look:
We are thy ſoveraign, *Clifford*, kneel again;
For thy miſtaking ſo, we pardon thee.

Clif. This is my King, *York*, I do not miſtake,
But thou miſtak'ſt me much to think I do;
To *Bedlam* with him, is the man grown mad?

K. *Henry.* Ay, *Clifford*, a *Bedlam* and ambitious humour
Makes him oppoſe himſelf againſt his King.

Clif. He is a traitor, let him to the *Tower*,
And crop away that factious pate of his.

Q. *Mar.* He is arreſted, but will not obey:
His ſons, he ſays, ſhall give their words for him.

York. Will you not, ſons?

E. Plan. Ay, noble father, if our words will ſerve.
R. Plan. And if words will not, then our weapons ſhall.
Clif. Why, what a brood of traitors have we here?
York. Look in a glaſs, and call thy image ſo.
I am the King, and thou a falſe-heart traitor;
Call hither to the ſtake my two brave bears,
That with the very ſhaking of their chains
They may aſtoniſh theſe fell-lurking curs:
Bid *Salisbury* and *Warwick* come to me.

SCENE IV.

Enter the Earls of Warwick *and* Salisbury.

Clif. Are theſe thy bears? we'll bait thy bears to death,
And manacle the bearward in their chains,
If thou dar'ſt bring them to the baiting place.
R. Plan. Oft have I ſeen a hot o'er-weening cur
Run back and bite, becauſe he was with-held,
Who being ſuffer'd with the bear's fell paw,
Hath clapt his tail betwixt his legs and cry'd:
And ſuch a piece of ſervice will you do,
If you oppoſe your ſelves to match lord *Warwick.*
Clif. Hence, heap of wrath, foul indigeſted lump,
As crooked in thy manners, as thy ſhape.
York. Nay, we ſhall heat you thoroughly anon.
Clif. Take heed leaſt by your heat you burn your ſelves.
K. *Henry.* Why, *Warwick,* hath thy knee forgot to bow?
Old *Salisbury,* ſhame to thy ſilver hair,
Thou mad miſ-leader of thy brain-ſick ſon,
What, wilt thou on thy death-bed play the ruffian,
And ſeek for ſorrow with thy ſpectacles?
Oh where is faith? oh where is loyalty?
If it be baniſh'd from the froſty head,

Where ſhall it find a harbour in the earth?
Wilt thou go dig a grave to find out war,
And ſhame thine honourable age with blood?
Why art thou old, and want'ſt experience?
Or wherefore doſt abuſe it, if thou haſt it?
For ſhame, in duty bend thy knee to me,
That bows unto the grave with milky age.
Sal. My lord, I have conſider'd with my ſelf
The title of this moſt renowned Duke,
And in my conſcience do repute his grace
The rightful heir to *England*'s royal ſeat.
K. *Henry.* Haſt thou not ſworn allegiance unto me?
Sal. I have.
K. *Henry.* Canſt thou diſpenſe with heav'n for ſuch an oath?
Sal. It is great ſin to ſwear unto a ſin;
But greater ſin to keep a ſinful oath:
Who can be bound by any ſolemn vow
To do a murd'rous deed, to rob a man,
To force a ſpotleſs virgin's chaſtity,
To reave the orphan of his patrimony,
To wring the widow from her cuſtom'd right,
And have no other reaſon for his wrong,
But that he was bound by a ſolemn oath?
Q. *Mar.* A ſubtle traitor needs no ſophiſter.
K. *Henry.* Call *Buckingham*, and bid him arm himſelf.
York. Call *Buckingham* and all the friends thou haſt,
I am reſolv'd for death or dignity.
Old Clif. The firſt, I warrant thee; if dreams prove true.
War. You were beſt go to bed and dream again,
To keep thee from the tempeſt of the field.
Old Clif. I am reſolv'd to bear a greater ſtorm
Than any thou canſt conjure up to-day:
And that I'll write upon thy burgonet,

Might I but know thee by thy houſe's badge.

War. Now by my father's badge, old *Nevil*'s creſt,
The rampant bear chain'd to the ragged ſtaff,
This day I'll wear aloft my burgonet,
(As on a mountain top the cedar ſhews,
That keeps his leaves in ſpight of any ſtorm,)
Ev'n to affright thee with the view thereof.

Old Clif. And from thy burgonet I'll rend thy bear,
And tread it under foot with all contempt,
Deſpight the bear-ward that protects the bear.

Y. Clif. And ſo to arms, victorious noble father,
To quel the rebels and their complices.

R. Plan. Fie, charity for ſhame, ſpeak not in ſpight,
For you ſhall ſup with Jeſu Chriſt to-night.

Y. Clif. Foul ſtigmatick, that's more than thou canſt tell.

R. Plan. If not in heav'n, you'll ſurely ſup in hell. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

The Battle at St. Albans.

Enter Warwick.

War. CLIFFORD of *Cumberland*, 'tis *Warwick* calls;
And if thou doſt not hide thee from the bear,
Now when the angry trumpet ſounds alarum,
And dy'ing mens cries do fill the empty air,
Clifford I ſay, come forth and fight with me,
Proud northern lord, *Clifford* of *Cumberland*,
Warwick is hoarſe with calling thee to arms.

Enter York.

War. How now, my noble lord? what all a-foot?

York. The deadly-handed *Clifford* ſlew my ſteed:

But

But match to match I have encountred him,
And made a prey for carrion kites and crows
Even of the bonny beaſt he lov'd ſo well.

Enter Clifford.

War. Of one or both of us the time is come.
York. Hold *Warwick*: ſeek thee out ſome other chaſe,
For I my ſelf muſt hunt this deer to death.
War. Then nobly *York*, 'tis for a crown thou fight'ſt:
As I intend, *Clifford*, to thrive to-day,
It grieves my ſoul to leave thee unaſſail'd. [*Exit* War.
Clif. What ſeeſt thou in me, *York*? why doſt thou pauſe?
York. With thy brave bearing ſhould I be in love,
But that thou art ſo faſt mine enemy.
Clif. Nor ſhould thy proweſs want praiſe and eſteem,
But that 'tis ſhewn ignobly, and in treaſon.
York. So let it help me now againſt thy ſword,
As I in juſtice and true right expreſs it.
Clif. My ſoul and body on the action both.
York. A dreadful lay, addreſs thee inſtantly. [*Fight.*
Clif. *La fin couronné les œuvres.* [*Dies.*
York. Thus war hath given thee peace, for thou art ſtill;
Peace with his ſoul, heav'n, if it be thy will. [*Exit.*

Enter young Clifford.

Y. Clif. Shame and confuſion! all is on the rout:
Fear frames diſorder, and diſorder wounds
Where it ſhould guard. O war! thou ſon of hell,
Whom angry heav'ns do make their miniſter,
Throw in the frozen boſoms of our part
Hot coals of vengeance. Let no ſoldiers flie.
He that is truly dedicate to war
Hath no ſelf-love; for he that loves himſelf

Hath not eſſentially, but by circumſtance,
The name of valour. O let the vile world end,
And the premiſed flames of the laſt day
Knit earth and heav'n together.
Now let the general trumpet blow his blaſt,
Particularities and petty ſounds
To ceaſe. Waſt thou ordained, O dear father,
To loſe thy youth in peace, and to atchieve
The ſilver livery of adviſed age;
And in thy reverence, and thy chair-days, thus
To die in ruffian battle? Even at this ſight
My heart is turn'd to ſtone; and while 'tis mine,
It ſhall be ſtony. *York* not our old men ſpares:
No more will I their babes: tears virginal
Shall be to me even as the dew to fire;
And beauty, that the tyrant oft reclaims,
Shall to my flaming wrath be oil and flax.
Henceforth I will not have to do with pity.
Meet I an infant of the houſe of *York*,
Into as many gobbits will I cut it,
As wild *Medea* young *Abſirtus* did.
In cruelty will I ſeek out my fame.
Come, thou new ruin of old *Clifford*'s houſe:
As did *Æneas* old *Anchiſes* bear,
So bear I thee upon my manly ſhoulders;
But then *Æneas* bare a living load,
Nothing ſo heavy as theſe woes of mine.

[*Exit, bearing off his Father.*

Enter Richard Plantagenet *and* Somerſet, *to fight.*

R. Plan. So, lye thou there: [Somerſet *is kill'd.*
For underneath an ale-houſe paltry ſign,
The caſtle in St. *Albans*, *Somerſet*

Hath

Hath made the wizard famous in his death;
Sword, hold thy temper; heart, be wrathful ſtill:
Prieſts pray for enemies, but princes kill.

SCENE VI.

Fight. Excurſions. Enter King Henry, *Queen* Margaret, *and others.*

Q. *Mar.* Away my lord, you are ſlow, for ſhame away.
K. *Henry.* Can we out-run the heav'ns? good *Marg'ret* ſtay.
Q. *Mar.* What are you made of? you'll not fight nor fly:
Now is it manhood, wiſdom, and defence,
To give the enemy way, and to ſecure us
By what we can, which can no more but fly. [*Alarum afar off.*
If you be ta'en, we then ſhould ſee the bottom
Of all our fortunes; but if we haply ſcape,
(As well we may, if not through your neglect,)
We ſhall to *London* get, where you are lov'd,
And where this breach now in our fortunes made
May readily be ſtopt.

Enter Clifford.

Clif. But that my heart's on future miſchief ſet,
I would ſpeak blaſphemy ere bid you fly;
But fly you muſt: uncurable diſcomfit
Reigns in the hearts of all our preſent parts.
Away for your relief, and we will live
To ſee their day, and them our fortune give.
Away my lord, away. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

Alarum. Retreat. Enter York, Richard Plantagenet, Warwick, *and Soldiers, with Drum and Colours.*

York. Of *Salisbury*, who can report of him?
That winter lion, who in rage forgets
Aged contuſions and all bruſh of time;
And like a gallant in the brow of youth,
Repairs him with occaſion. This happy day
Is not it ſelf, nor have we won one foot,
If *Salisbury* be loſt.

R. Plan. My noble father,
Three times to-day I holp him to his horſe,
Three times he ſtrid him; thrice I led him off,
Perſuaded him from any further act:
But ſtill where danger was, ſtill there I met him,
And like rich hangings in an homely houſe,
So was his will in his old feeble body.
But noble as he is, look where he comes.

Enter Salisbury.

Sal. Now, by my ſword, well haſt thou fought to-day;
By th' maſs ſo did we all. I thank you *Richard.*
God knows how long it is I have to live;
And it hath pleas'd him that three times to-day
You have defended me from imminent death.
Well lords, we have not got that which we have,
'Tis not enough our foes are this time fled,
Being oppoſites of ſuch repairing nature.

York. I know our ſafety is to follow them,
For, as I hear, the King is fled to *London*,
To call a preſent court of parliament.

Let us purſue him ere the writs go forth.
What ſays lord *Warwick*, ſhall we after them?

War. After them! nay, before them, if we can.
Now by my hand, lords, 'twas a glorious day.
St. *Alban*'s battel, won by famous *York*,
Shall be eterniz'd in all age to come.
Sound drum and trumpets, and to *London* all,
And more ſuch days as theſe to us befall. [*Exeunt.*

The

The THIRD PART of

HENRY

THE

SIXTH.

With the DEATH of the

DUKE of *YORK.*

Dramatis Perſonæ.

KING Henry VI.
Edward, *Son to the King, and Prince of* Wales.
Duke of Somerſet,
Earl of Northumberland,
Earl of Oxford,
Earl of Exeter,
Earl of Weſtmorland,
Lord Clifford,
} *Lords of King* Henry's *ſide.*
Earl of Richmond, *a Youth, afterwards King* Henry VII.
Richard, *Duke of* York.
Edward, *Eldeſt Son to the Duke of* York, *afterwards King* Edward IV.
George, *Duke of* Clarence, *ſecond Son to the Duke of* York.
Richard, *Duke of* Glouceſter, *third Son to the Duke of* York, *afterwards King* Richard III.
Edmund, *Earl of* Rutland, *youngeſt Son to the Duke of* York.
Duke of Norfolk,
Marquis of Montague,
Earl of Warwick,
Earl of Salisbury,
Earl of Pembroke,
Lord Haſtings,
Lord Stafford,
} *of the Duke of* York's *Party.*
Sir John Mortimer,
Sir Hugh Mortimer,
} *Uncles to the Duke of* York.
Sir William Stanly, *afterwards Earl of* Derby.
Lord Rivers, *Brother to the lady* Gray.
Sir John Montgomery.
Lieutenant of the Tower.
Mayor of Coventry.
Mayor and Aldermen of York.
Humphry *and* Sinklo, *two Huntſmen.*

Lewis, *King of* France.
Bourbon, *Admiral of* France.

Queen Margaret.
Bona, *Siſter to the* French *King.*
Lady Gray, *Widow of Sir* Richard Gray, *afterwards Queen to* Edward IV.

Soldiers and other Attendants on King Henry, *and King* Edward.

In Part of the Third Act the SCENE *is laid in* France, *during all the reſt of the Play in* England.

The

† The THIRD PART of King *HENRY* VI.

ACT I. SCENE I.

LONDON.

Alarum. Enter Duke of York, Edward, Richard, Norfolk, Montague, Warwick, *and Soldiers.*

WARWICK.

Wonder how the King eſcap'd our hands?

York. While we purſu'd the horſemen of the north,
He ſlily ſtole away and left his men:
Whereat the great lord of *Northumberland*,
Whoſe warlike ears could never brook retreat,
Chear'd up the drooping army; and himſelf,
Lord *Clifford* and lord *Stafford* all a-breaſt,
Charg'd our main battel's front; and breaking in,
Were by the ſwords of common ſoldiers ſlain.

Edw. Lord *Stafford*'s father, Duke of *Buckingham*,

† *Firſt printed under the title of The true Tragedy of* Richard *Duke of* York, *and the good King* Henry *the Sixth; or the ſecond part of the Contention of* York *and* Lancaſter. 1600.

Is either ſlain or wounded dangerous.
I cleft his beaver with a down-right blow:
That this is true, father, behold his blood.
Mont. And brother, here's the Earl of *Wiltſhire*'s blood,
Whom I encounter'd as the battels join'd.
Rich. Speak thou for me, and tell them what I did.
York. *Richard* hath beſt deſerv'd of all my ſons:
Is his grace dead, my lord of *Somerſet?*
Norf. Such hope have all the line of *John* of *Gaunt.*
Rich. Thus do I hope to ſhake King *Henry*'s head.
War. And ſo do I, victorious Prince of *York.*
Before I ſee thee ſeated in the throne,
Which now the houſe of *Lancaſter* uſurps,
I vow by heav'n theſe eyes ſhall never cloſe.
This is the palace of the fearful King,
And this the regal ſeat; poſſeſs it *York,*
For this is thine, and not King *Henry*'s heirs.
York. Aſſiſt me then, ſweet *Warwick,* and I will;
For hither we have broken in by force.
Norf. We'll all aſſiſt you; he that flies ſhall die.
York. Thanks, gentle *Norfolk;* ſtay by me my lords,
And ſoldiers ſtay and lodge by me this night. [*They go up.*
War. And when the King comes, offer him no violence,
Unleſs he ſeek to thruſt you out by force.
York. The Queen this day here holds her parliament,
But little thinks we ſhall be of her council;
By words or blows here let us win our right.
Rich. Arm'd as we are, let's ſtay within this houſe.
War. The bloody parliament ſhall this be call'd,
Unleſs *Plantagenet* Duke of *York* be King,
And baſhful *Henry* depos'd, whoſe cowardiſe
Hath made us by-words to our enemies.
York. Then leave me not, my lords, be reſolute;

I mean to take poſſeſſion of my right.

War. Neither the King, nor he that loves him beſt,
The proudeſt he that holds up *Lancaſter*,
Dares ſtir a wing, if *Warwick* ſhake his bells.
I'll plant *Plantagenet*, root him up who dare:
Reſolve thee *Richard*, claim the *Engliſh* crown.

SCENE II.

Enter King Henry, Clifford, Northumberland, Weſtmorland, Exeter, *and others.*

K. *Henry.* My lords, look where the ſturdy rebel ſits,
Even in the chair of ſtate; belike he means
(Back'd by the power of *Warwick*, that falſe peer,)
T' aſpire unto the crown, and reign as King.
Earl of *Northumberland*, he ſlew thy father,
And thine lord *Clifford*, and you vow'd revenge
On him, his ſons, his fav'rites, and his friends.

North. If I be not, heav'ns be reveng'd on me.

Clif. The hope thereof makes *Clifford* mourn in ſteel.

Weſt. What, ſhall we ſuffer this? let's pluck him down.
My heart for anger burns, I cannot brook it.

K. *Henry.* Be patient gentle Earl of *Weſtmorland.*

Clif. Patience is for poltroons, and ſuch is he:
He durſt not ſit there had your father liv'd.
My gracious lord, here in the parliament
Let us aſſail the family of *York.*

North. Well haſt thou ſpoken, couſin be it ſo.

K. *Henry.* Ah, know you not the city favours them,
And they have troops of ſoldiers at their beck?

Weſt. But when the Duke is ſlain, they'll quickly fly.

K. *Henry.* Far be the thought of this from *Henry*'s heart,
To make a ſhambles of the parliament houſe.

Couſin

Couſin of *Exeter*, frowns, words and threats,
Shall be the war that *Henry* means to uſe.
Thou factious Duke of *York* deſcend my throne, [*To the Duke.*
And kneel for grace and mercy at my feet,
I am thy Soveraign.

York. *Henry*, I am thine.

Exe. For ſhame come down: he made thee Duke of *York.*

York. 'Twas my inheritance, as the Earldom was.

Exe. Thy father was a traitor to the crown.

War. *Exeter*, thou art a traitor to the crown,
In following this uſurping *Henry.*

Clif. Whom ſhould he follow but his natural King?

War. True, *Clifford*, and that's *Richard* Duke of *York.*

K. *Henry.* And ſhall I ſtand, and thou ſit in my throne?

York. It muſt and ſhall be ſo, content thy ſelf.

War. Be Duke of *Lancaſter*, let him be King.

Weſt. He is both King and Duke of *Lancaſter*,
And that the lord of *Weſtmorland* ſhall maintain.

War. And *Warwick* ſhall diſprove it. You forget,
That we are thoſe which chas'd you from the field,
And ſlew your fathers, and with colours ſpread
March'd through the city to the palace gates.

North. Yes *Warwick*, I remember it to my grief.
And by his ſoul thou and thy houſe ſhall rue it.

Weſt. *Plantagenet*, of thee and theſe thy ſons,
Thy kinſmen and thy friends, I'll have more lives
Than drops of blood were in my father's veins.

Clif. Urge it no more, leſt that inſtead of words
I ſend thee, *Warwick*, ſuch a meſſenger,
As ſhall revenge his death before I ſtir.

War. Poor *Clifford!* how I ſcorn his worthleſs threats.

York. Will you, we ſhew our title to the crown?
If not, our ſwords ſhall plead it in the field.

K. *Henry.*

K. *Henry.* What title haſt thou, traitor, to the crown?
Thy father was, as thou art, Duke of *York*;
Thy grandfather *Roger Mortimer*, Earl of *March*.
I am the ſon of *Henry* the Fifth,
Who made the Dauphin and the *French* to ſtoop,
And ſeiz'd upon their towns and provinces.

War. Talk not of *France* ſith thou haſt loſt it all.

K. *Henry.* The lord Protector loſt it, and not I;
When I was crown'd I was but nine months old.

Rich. You are old enough now, and yet methinks you loſe:
Father, tear the crown from the uſurper's head.

Edw. Sweet father do ſo, ſet it on your head.

Mont. Good brother, as thou lov'ſt and honour'ſt arms
Let's fight it out, and not ſtand cavelling thus.

Rich. Sound drums and trumpets, and the King will fly.

York. Sons, peace.

K. *Henry.* Peace thou, and give King *Henry* leave to ſpeak.

War. Plantagenet ſhall ſpeak firſt: hear him lords,
And be you ſilent and attentive too,
For he that interrupts him ſhall not live.

K. *Henry.* Think'ſt thou that I will leave my kingly throne,
Wherein my grandſire and my father ſat?
No: firſt ſhall war unpeople this my realm;
Ay, and their colours often born in *France*,
And now in *England* to our heart's great ſorrow,
Shall be my winding ſheet: why faint you, lords?
My title's good and better far than his.

War. But prove it *Henry*, and thou ſhalt be King.

K. *Henry.* *Henry* the Fourth by conqueſt got the crown.

York. 'Twas by rebellion againſt his King.

K. *Henry.* I know not what to ſay, my title's weak:
Tell me, may not a King adopt an heir?

York.

York. What then?

K. *Henry.* And if he may, then am I lawful King:
For *Richard* in the view of many lords,
Reſign'd the crown to *Henry* the Fourth,
Whoſe heir my father was, and I am his.

York. He roſe againſt him, being his Soveraign,
And made him to reſign his crown perforce.

War. Suppoſe, my lords, he did it unconſtrain'd,
Think you 'twere prejudicial to his crown?

Exe. No, for he could not ſo reſign his crown,
But that the next heir ſhould ſucceed and reign.

K. *Henry.* Art thou againſt us, Duke of *Exeter?*

Exe. His is the right, and therefore pardon me.

York. Why whiſper you, my lords, and anſwer not?

Exe. My conſcience tells me he is lawful King.

K. *Henry.* All will revolt from me and turn to him.

North. Plantagenet, for all the claim thou lay'ſt,
Think not that *Henry* ſhall be ſo depos'd.

War. Depos'd he ſhall be in deſpight of all.

North. Thou art deceiv'd: 'tis not thy ſouthern power
Of *Eſſex*, *Norfolk*, *Suffolk*, nor of *Kent*,
Which makes thee thus preſumptuous and proud,
Can ſet the Duke up in deſpight of me.

Clif. King *Henry*, be thy title right or wrong,
Lord *Clifford* vows to fight in thy defence;
May that ground gape and ſwallow me alive,
Where I ſhall kneel to him that ſlew my father.

K. *Henry.* Oh *Clifford*, how thy words revive my heart.

York. Henry of *Lancaſter*, reſign thy crown:
What mutter you, or what conſpire you, lords?

War. Do right unto this princely Duke of *York*,
Or I will fill this houſe with armed men,
And o'er the chair of ſtate where now he ſits

Write

Write up his title with uſurping blood.

[*He ſtamps with his foot, and the ſoldiers ſhew themſelves.*

K. *Henry.* My lord of *Warwick*, hear me but one word;
Let me for this time reign as King.

York. Confirm the crown to me and to mine heirs,
And thou ſhalt reign in quiet while thou liv'ſt.

K. *Henry.* I am content: *Richard Plantagenet*,
Enjoy the kingdom after my deceaſe.

Clif. What wrong is this unto the Prince your ſon?

War. What good is this to *England* and himſelf?

Weſt. Baſe, fearful and deſpairing *Henry!*

Clif. How haſt thou injur'd both thy ſelf and us!

Weſt. I cannot ſtay to hear theſe articles.

North. Nor I.

Clif. Come couſin, let us tell the Queen theſe news.

Weſt. Farewel, faint-hearted and degen'rate King,
In whoſe cold blood no ſpark of honour bides.

North. Be thou a prey unto the houſe of *York*,
And die in bands for this unmanly deed.

Clif. In dreadful war may'ſt thou be overcome,
Or live in peace abandon'd and deſpis'd.

[*Exeunt* Nor. Cliff. Weſtm.

SCENE III.

War. Turn this way *Henry*, and regard them not.

Exe. They ſeek revenge, and therefore will not yield.

K. *Henry.* Ah *Exeter!* -----

War. Why ſhould you ſigh, my lord?

K. *Henry.* Not for my ſelf, lord *Warwick*, but my ſon,
Whom I unnaturally ſhall diſinherit.
But be it as it may; I here entail
The crown to thee, and to thine heirs for ever;

Conditionally, that here thou take an oath
To ceaſe this civil war; and whilſt I live
To honour me as thy King and Soveraign:
Neither by treaſon nor hoſtility
To ſeek to put me down, and reign thy ſelf.

York. This oath I willingly take, and will perform.

War. Long live King *Henry: Plantagenet*, embrace him.

K. *Henry.* And long live thou, and theſe thy forward ſons.

York. Now *York* and *Lancaſter* are reconcil'd.

Exe. Accurſt be he that ſeeks to make them foes.

[*Sonet. Here they come down.*

York. Farewel my gracious lord, I'll to my caſtle.

War. And I'll keep *London* with my ſoldiers.

Norf. And I to *Norfolk* with my followers.

Mont. And I unto the ſea, from whence I came. [*Ex.*

K. *Henry.* And I with grief and ſorrow to the court.

Enter the Queen, and the Prince of Wales.

Exe. Here comes the Queen, whoſe looks bewray her anger: I'll ſteal away.

K. *Henry.* So *Exeter* will I. [*Going.*

Queen. Nay, go not from me, I will follow thee-----

K. *Henry.* Be patient, gentle Queen, and I will ſtay.

Queen. Who can be patient in ſuch extreams?
Ah wretched man! would I had dy'd a maid,
And never ſeen thee, never born thee ſon,
Seeing thou haſt prov'd ſo unnat'ral a father.
Hath he deſerv'd to loſe his birth-right thus?
Hadſt thou but lov'd him half ſo much as I,
Or felt that pain which I did for him once,
Or nouriſht him as I did with my blood;
Thou wouldſt have left thy deareſt heart-blood there,

Rather

Rather than made that ſavage Duke thine heir,
And diſinherited thine only ſon.

Prince. Father, you cannot diſinherit me:
If you be King, why ſhould not I ſucceed?

K. *Henry.* Pardon me, *Marg'ret*; pardon me, ſweet ſon;
The Earl of *Warwick* and the Duke enforc'd me.

Queen. Enforc'd thee? art thou King, and wilt be forc'd?
I ſhame to hear thee ſpeak; ah tim'rous wretch!
Thou haſt undone thy ſelf, thy ſon, and me,
And given unto the houſe of *York* ſuch head,
As thou ſhalt reign but by their ſufferance.
To entail him and's heirs unto the crown,
What is it but to make thy ſepulchre,
And creep into it far before thy time?
Warwick is chancellor and the lord of *Calais*,
Stern *Faulconbridge* commands the narrow ſeas,
The Duke is make Protector of the realm,
And yet ſhalt thou be ſafe? ſuch ſafety finds
The trembling lamb, invironed with wolves.
Had I been there, which am a ſilly woman,
The ſoldiers ſhould have toſs'd me on their pikes,
Before I would have granted to that act.
But thou preferr'ſt thy life before thine honour.
And ſeeing thou doſt, I here divorce my ſelf
Both from thy table, *Henry*, and thy bed,
Until that act of parliament be repealed,
Whereby my ſon is diſinherited.
The northern lords, that have forſworn thy colours,
Will follow mine, if once they ſee them ſpread:
And ſpread they ſhall be, to thy foul diſgrace,
And utter ruin of the houſe of *York*.
Thus do I leave thee; come ſon, let's away,
Our army's ready, come, we'll after them.

K. *Henry.* Stay gentle *Margaret,* and hear me ſpeak.
Queen. Thou haſt ſpoke too much already; get thee gone.
K. *Henry.* Gentle ſon *Edward,* thou wilt ſtay with me?
Queen. Ay, to be murther'd by his enemies.
Prince. When I return with victory from the field
I'll ſee your grace; 'till then I'll follow her.
Queen. Come, ſon, away, we may not linger thus.
[*Exeunt Queen and Prince.*
K. *Henry.* Poor Queen, how love to me and to her ſon
Hath made her break out into terms of rage.
Reveng'd may ſhe be on that hateful Duke,
Whoſe haughty ſpirit winged with deſire
Will coſt my crown, and like an empty eagle
Tire on the fleſh of me and of my ſon.
The loſs of thoſe three lords torments my heart;
I'll write unto them, and intreat them fair;
Come, couſin, you ſhall be the meſſenger.
Exe. And as I hope ſhall reconcile them all. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

Changes to Sandal-*Caſtle in* Yorkſhire.

Enter Richard, Edward, *and* Montague.

Rich. BROTHER, though I be youngeſt, give me leave.
Edw. No, I can better play the orator.
Mont. But I have reaſons ſtrong and forcible.

Enter the Duke of York.

York. Why how now ſons and brother, at a ſtrife?
What is your quarrel? how began it firſt?
Edw. No quarrel, but a ſlight contention.
York. About what?

Rich.

Rich. About that which concerns your grace and us,
The crown of *England*, father, which is yours.
York. Mine, boy? not 'till King *Henry* be dead.
Rich. Your right depends not on his life or death.
Edw. Now you are heir, therefore enjoy it now:
By giving th' houſe of *Lancaſter* leave to breathe,
It will out-run you, father, in the end.
York. I took an oath that he ſhould quietly reign.
Edw. But for a kingdom any oath may be broken:
I'd break a thouſand oaths to reign one year.
Rich. No; God forbid your grace ſhould be forſworn.
York. I ſhall be, if I claim by open war.
Rich. I'll prove the contrary, if you'll hear me ſpeak.
York. Thou can'ſt not, ſon, it is impoſſible.
Rich. An oath is of no moment, being not took
Before a true and lawful magiſtrate,
That hath authority o'er him that ſwears.
Henry had none, but did uſurp the place.
Then ſeeing 'twas he that made you to depoſe,
Your oath, my lord, is vain and frivolous,
Therefore to arms: and, father, do but think
How ſweet a thing it is to wear a crown,
Within whoſe circuit is *Elyſium*
And all that poets feign of bliſs and joy.
Why do we linger thus? I cannot reſt,
Until the white roſe that I wear be dy'd
Even in the lukewarm blood of *Henry*'s heart.
York. *Richard*, enough: I will be King, or die.
Brother, thou ſhalt to *London* preſently,
And whet on *Warwick* to this enterprize.
Thou, *Richard*, ſhalt to th' Duke of *Norfolk* go,
And tell him privily of our intent.
You, *Edward*, ſhall unto my lord *Cobham*,

With

With whom the *Kentiſhmen* will willingly riſe.
In them I truſt; for they are ſoldiers,
Witty, courteous, liberal, full of ſpirit.
While you are thus employ'd, what reſteth more
But that I ſeek occaſion how to riſe?
And yet the King not privy to my drift,
Nor any of the houſe of *Lancaſter*.

Enter Gabriel.

But ſtay, what news? why com'ſt thou in ſuch poſt?

Gab. The Queen, with all the northern Earls and lords,
Intends here to beſiege you in your caſtle.
She is hard by with twenty thouſand men;
And therefore fortifie your hold, my lord.

York. Ay, with my ſword. What, think'ſt thou that we fear them?
Edward and *Richard*, you ſhall ſtay with me;
My brother *Montague* ſhall poſt to *London*.
Let noble *Warwick*, *Cobham*, and the reſt,
Whom we have left Protectors of the King,
With powerful policy ſtrengthen themſelves,
And truſt not ſimple *Henry* nor his oaths.

Mont. Brother, I go; I'll win them, fear it not.
And thus moſt humbly I do take my leave. [*Exit* Montague.

Enter Sir John Mortimer *and Sir* Hugh Mortimer.

York. Sir *John* and Sir *Hugh Mortimer*, mine uncles,
You are come to *Sandal* in a happy hour.
The army of the Queen means to beſiege us.

Sir John. She ſhall not need, we'll meet her in the field.

York. What, with five thouſand men?

Rich. Ay, with five hundred, father, for a need.
A woman's general; what ſhould we fear? [*A March afar off.*

Edw.

Edw. I hear their drums: let's ſet our men in order,
And iſſue forth and bid them battel ſtrait.
York. Five men to twenty! though the odds be great,
I doubt not uncle of our victory.
Many a battel have I won in *France*,
When as the enemy hath been ten to one:
Why ſhould I not now have the like ſucceſs? [*Alarm. Exit.*

SCENE V.

Enter Rutland *and his Tutor.*

Rut. Ah, whither ſhall I fly to ſcape their hands?
Ah, tutor, look where bloody *Clifford* comes.

Enter Clifford.

Clif. Chaplain away, thy prieſthood ſaves thy life;
As for the brat of this accurſed Duke,
Whoſe father ſlew my father, he ſhall die.
Tutor. And I, my lord, will bear him company.
Clif. Soldiers, away with him.
Tutor. Ah *Clifford*, murther not this innocent child,
Leſt thou be hated both of God and man. [*Exit.*
Clif. How now? is he dead already? or is it fear
That makes him cloſe his eyes? I'll open them.
Rut. So looks the pent-up Lion o'er the wretch
That trembles under his devouring paws;
And ſo he walks inſulting o'er his prey,
And ſo he comes to rend his limbs aſunder.
Ah gentle *Clifford*, kill me with thy ſword,
And not with ſuch a cruel threatning look.
Sweet *Clifford*, hear me ſpeak before I die:
I am too mean a ſubject of thy wrath,
Be thou reveng'd on men, and let me live.

Clif. In vain thou ſpeak'ſt, poor boy: my father's blood
Hath ſtopt the paſſage where thy words ſhould enter.
Rut. Then let my father's blood open't again:
He is a man, and, *Clifford*, cope with him.
Clif. Had I thy brethren here, their lives and thine
Were not revenge ſufficient for me:
No, if I digg'd up thy forefathers graves,
And hung their rotten coffins up in chains,
It could not ſlake mine ire nor eaſe my heart.
The ſight of any of the houſe of *York*
Is as a fury to torment my ſoul:
And 'till I root out their accurſed line,
And leave not one alive, I live in hell.
Therefore-----
Rut. O let me pray before I take my death:
To thee I pray-----ſweet *Clifford* pity me.
Clif. Such pity as my rapier's point affords.
Rut. I never did thee harm; why wilt thou ſlay me?
Clif. Thy father hath.
Rut. But 'twas ere I was born.
Thou haſt one ſon, for his ſake pity me,
Leſt in revenge thereof (ſith God is juſt)
He be as miſerably ſlain as I.
Ah, let me live in priſon all my days,
And when I give occaſion of offence,
Then let me die, for now thou haſt no cauſe.
Clif. No cauſe!
Thy father ſlew my father, therefore die. [Clif. *ſtabs him.*
Rut. Dii faciant laudis ſumma ſit iſta tuæ!
Clif. Plantagenet, I come *Plantagenet*,
And this thy ſon's blood cleaving to my blade
Shall ruſt upon my weapon, 'till thy blood
Congeal'd with this do make me wipe off both. [*Exit.*

SCENE

SCENE VI.

Alarum. Enter Richard *Duke of* York.

York. The army of the Queen hath got the field:
My uncles both are ſlain in reſcuing me,
And all my followers to the eager foe
Turn back, and fly like ſhips before the wind,
Or lambs purſu'd by hunger-ſtarved wolves.
My ſons, God knows what hath bechanced them:
But this I know, they have demean'd themſelves
Like men born to renown, by life or death.
Three times did *Richard* make a lane to me,
And thrice cry'd, courage father, fight it out:
And full as oft came *Edward* to my ſide,
With purple falchion painted to the hilt
In blood of thoſe that had encounter'd him:
And when the hardieſt warriors did retire,
Richard cry'd, Charge! and give no foot of ground;
And cry'd, a crown or elſe a glorious tomb,
A ſcepter or an earthly ſepulcher.
With this we charg'd again; but out alas,
We bodg'd again; as I have ſeen a Swan
With bootleſs labour ſwim againſt the tide,
And ſpend her ſtrength with over-matching waves.
[*A ſhort alarum within.*
Ah hark, the fatal followers do purſue,
And I am faint and cannot fly their fury.
And were I ſtrong, I would not ſhun their fury.
The ſands are number'd that make up my life,
Here muſt I ſtay, and here my life muſt end.

Enter the Queen, Clifford, Northumberland, *the Prince of* Wales, *and Soldiers.*

Come, bloody *Clifford*, rough *Northumberland*,
I dare your quenchleſs fury to more rage:
I am your butt, and I abide your ſhot.

North. Yield to our mercy, proud *Plantagenet.*

Clif. Ay, to ſuch mercy as his ruthleſs arm
With downright payment ſhew'd unto my father.
Now *Phaeton* hath tumbled from his car,
And made an evening at the noon-tide prick.

York. My aſhes, as the Phœnix, may bring forth
A bird that will revenge upon you all:
And in that hope I throw mine eyes to heav'n,
Scorning whate'er you can afflict me with.
Why come you not? what! multitudes and fear?

Clif. So cowards fight when they can fly no farther;
So doves do peck the falcon's piercing talons;
So deſp'rate thieves, all hopeleſs of their lives,
Breathe out invectives 'gainſt the officers.

York. Oh *Clifford*, but bethink thee once again,
And in thy thought o'er-run my former time;
And if thou canſt for bluſhing view this face,
And bite thy tongue that ſlanders him with cowardiſe,
Whoſe frown hath made thee faint and fly ere this.

Clif. I will not bandy with thee word for word,
But buckler with thee blows twice two for one.

Queen. Hold, valiant *Clifford*, for a thouſand cauſes
I would prolong a while the traitor's life:
Wrath makes him deaf; ſpeak thou *Northumberland.*

North. Hold *Clifford*, do not honour him ſo much,
To prick thy finger, though to wound his heart.

What

What valour were it, when a cur doth grin,
For one to thruſt his hand between his teeth,
When he might ſpurn him with his foot away?
It is war's prize to take all vantages,
And ten to one is no impeach of valour.

Clif. Ay ay, ſo ſtrives the woodcock with the gin.

North. So doth the cony ſtruggle in the net.

York. So triumph thieves upon their conquer'd booty;
So true men yield, with robbers ſo o'er-matcht.

North. What would your grace have done unto him now?

Queen. Brave warriors, *Clifford* and *Northumberland*,
Come make him ſtand upon this mole-hill here,
That raught at mountains with out-ſtretched arms,
Yet parted but the ſhadow with his hand.
What, was it you that would be *England*'s King?
Was't you that revell'd in our parliament,
And made a preachment of your high deſcent?
Where are your meſs of ſons to back you now,
The wanton *Edward*, and the luſty *George*?
And where's that valiant crook-back prodigy,
Dicky your boy, that with his grumbling voice
Was wont to cheer his dad in mutinies?
Or with the reſt, where is your darling *Rutland*?
Look *York*, I ſtain'd this napkin with the blood
That valiant *Clifford* with his rapier's point
Made iſſue from the boſom of the boy:
And if thine eyes can water for his death,
I give thee this to dry thy cheeks withal.
Alas poor *York*, but that I hate thee deadly,
I ſhould lament thy miſerable ſtate.
I pr'ythee grieve, to make me merry, *York*.
What, hath thy fiery heart ſo parcht thine intrails,
That not a tear can fall for *Rutland*'s death?

Why art thou patient, man? thou ſhould'ſt be mad;
And I, to make thee mad, do mock thee thus:
Stamp, rave and fret, that I may ſing and dance.
Thou would'ſt be fee'd I ſee, to make me ſport:
York cannot ſpeak unleſs he wear a crown.
A crown for *York*----- and, lords, bow low to him:
Hold you his hands whilſt I do ſet it on.
[*Putting a paper crown on his head.*
Ay marry Sir, now looks he like a King:
Ay, this is he that took King *Henry*'s chair,
And this is he was his adopted heir.
But how is it, that great *Plantagenet*
Is crown'd ſo ſoon, and broke his ſolemn oath?
As I bethink me, you ſhould not be King
'Till our King *Henry* had ſhook hands with death.
And will you pale your head in *Henry*'s glory,
And rob his temples of the diadem,
Now in this life, againſt the holy oath?
Oh, 'tis a fault too too unpardonable:
Off with the crown, and with the crown his head,
And whilſt we breathe take time to do him dead.

Clif. That is my office, for my father's ſake.

Queen. Nay ſtay, let's hear the oriſons he makes.

York. She-wolf of *France*, but worſe than wolves of *France*,
Whoſe tongue more poiſons than the adder's tooth;
How ill-beſeeming is it in thy ſex
To triumph like an *Amazonian* trull,
Upon their woes whom fortune captivates?
But that thy face is vizard-like, unchanging,
Made impudent with uſe of evil deeds,
I would aſſay, proud Queen, to make thee bluſh.
To tell thee whence thou cam'ſt, of whom deriv'd,
Were ſhame enough to ſhame thee, wert thou not ſhameleſs:

Thy father bears the type of King of *Naples*,
Of both the *Sicils* and *Jeruſalem*,
Yet not ſo wealthy as an *Engliſh* yeoman.
Hath that poor monarch taught thee to inſult?
It needs not, nor it boots thee not, proud Queen,
Unleſs the adage muſt be verify'd,
That beggars mounted run their horſe to death.
'Tis beauty that doth oft make women proud,
But God he knows thy ſhare thereof is ſmall.
'Tis virtue that doth make them moſt admir'd,
The contrary doth make thee wonder'd at.
'Tis government that makes them ſeem divine,
The want thereof makes thee abominable.
Thou art as oppoſite to every good,
As the Antipodes are unto us,
Or as the ſouth to the *Septentrion*.
Oh tyger's heart wrapt in a woman's hide,
How could'ſt thou drain the life-blood of the child,
To bid the father wipe his eyes withal,
And yet be ſeen to wear a woman's face?
Women are ſoft, mild, pitiful and flexible;
Thou ſtern, obdurate, flinty, rough, remorſeleſs.
Bidſt thou me rage? why now thou haſt thy wiſh.
Would'ſt have me weep? why now thou haſt thy will.
For raging wind blows up inceſſant ſhow'rs.
And when the rage allays, the rain begins.
Theſe tears are my ſweet *Rutland*'s obſequies,
And ev'ry drop cries vengeance to his death,
'Gainſt thee fell *Clifford*, and thee falſe *French* woman.

North. Beſhrew me but his paſſions move me ſo,
That hardly can I check mine eyes from tears.

York. That face of his
The hungry canibals would not have toucht,

Would

Would not have ſtain'd the roſes juſt with blood:
But you are more inhuman, more inexorable,
Oh ten times more, than tygers of *Hyrcania*.
See, ruthleſs Queen, a hapleſs father's tears:
This cloth thou dip'dſt in blood of my ſweet boy,
And I with tears do waſh the blood away.
Keep thou the napkin, and go boaſt of this;
And if thou tell'ſt the heavy Story right,
Upon my ſoul the hearers will ſhed tears:
Yea, even my foes will ſhed faſt-falling tears,
And ſay, alas, it was a piteous deed.
There take the crown, and, with the crown, my curſe.
And in thy need ſuch comfort come to thee,
As now I reap at thy too cruel hand.
Hard-hearted *Clifford*, take me from the world,
My ſoul to heav'n, my blood upon your heads.

North. Had he been ſlaughter-man to all my kin,
I ſhould not for my life but weep with him,
To ſee how inly ſorrow gripes his ſoul.

Queen. What, weeping ripe, my lord *Northumberland?*
Think but upon the wrong he did us all,
And that will quickly dry thy melting tears.

Clif. Here's for my oath, here's for my father's death.
[*Stabbing him.*

Queen. And here's to right our gentle-hearted King.

York. Open thy gate of mercy, gracious God.
My ſoul flies through theſe wounds, to ſeek out thee [*Dies.*

Queen. Off with his head, and ſet it on *York* gates;
So *York* may overlook the town of *York*. [*Exeunt.*

ACT II. SCENE I.

A March. Enter Edward, Richard, *and their Power.*

EDWARD.

I Wonder how our princely father ſcap'd;
Or whether he be ſcap'd away, or no,
From *Clifford*'s and *Northumberland*'s purſuit?
Had he been ta'en, we ſhould have heard the news;
Had he been ſlain, we ſhould have heard the news;
Or had he ſcap'd, methinks we ſhould have heard
The happy tidings of his good eſcape.
How fares my brother? why is he ſo ſad?

Rich. I cannot joy, until I be reſolv'd
Where our right valiant father is become.
I ſaw him in the battel range about,
And watcht him how he ſingled *Clifford* forth;
Methought he bore him in the thickeſt troop,
As doth a lion in a herd of neat;
Or as a bear encompaſs'd round with dogs,
Who having pincht a few and made them cry,
The reſt ſtand all aloof and bark at him.
So far'd our father with his enemies,
So fled his enemies my warlike father:
Methinks 'tis prize enough to be his ſon.
See how the morning opes her golden gates,
And takes her farewel of the glorious ſun;
How well reſembles it the prime of youth,

Trim'd

Trim'd like a yonker prancing to his love?

Edw. Dazle mine eyes? or do I see three suns?

Rich. Three glorious suns, each one a perfect sun,
Not separated with the racking clouds,
But sever'd in a pale clear shining sky.
See, see they join, embrace, and seem to kiss,
As if they vow'd some league inviolable:
Now are they but one lamp, one light, one sun.
In this the heaven figures some event.

Edw. 'Tis wond'rous strange, the like yet never heard of.
I think it cites us, brother, to the field,
That we the sons of brave *Plantagenet*,
Each one already blazing by our meeds,
Should notwithstanding join our lights together,
And over-shine the earth, as this the world.
Whate'er it bodes, henceforward will I bear
Upon my target three fair shining suns.

Rich. Nay, bear three daughters: by your leave, I speak it,
You love the breeder better than the male.

Enter a Messenger.

But what art thou, whose heavy looks foretel
Some dreadful story hanging on thy tongue?

Mes. Ah! one that was a woful looker on
When as the noble Duke of *York* was slain,
Your princely father, and my loving lord.

Edw. Oh speak no more! for I have heard too much.

Rich. Say how he dy'd, for I will hear it all.

Mes. Environed he was with many foes,
And stood against them, as the hope of *Troy*
Against the *Greeks* that would have entred *Troy*.
But *Hercules* himself must yield to odds;
And many stroaks, though with a little ax,

Hew

Hew down and fell the hardeſt timber'd oak.
By many hands your father was ſubdu'd,
But only ſlaughter'd by the ireful arm
Of unrelenting *Clifford* and the Queen;
Who crown'd the gracious Duke in high deſpight,
Laugh'd in his face; and when with grief he wept,
The ruthleſs Queen gave him, to dry his cheek,
A napkin ſteeped in the harmleſs blood
Of ſweet young *Rutland*, by rough *Clifford* ſlain:
And after many ſcorns, many foul taunts,
They took his head, and on the gates of *York*
They ſet the ſame, and there it doth remain
The ſaddeſt ſpectacle that e'er I view'd.

Edw. Sweet Duke of *York*, our prop to lean upon,
Now thou art gone we have no ſtaff, no ſtay.
Oh *Clifford*, boiſt'rous *Clifford*, thou haſt ſlain
The flower of *Europe* for his chivalry,
And treacherouſly haſt thou vanquiſh'd him;
For hand to hand he would have vanquiſh'd thee.
Now my ſoul's palace is become a priſon:
Ah, would ſhe break from hence, that this my body
Might in the ground be cloſed up in reſt;
For never henceforth ſhall I joy again,
Never, oh never ſhall I ſee more joy.

Rich. I cannot weep, for all my body's moiſture
Scarce ſerves to quench my furnace-burning heart:
Nor can my tongue unload my heart's great burthen:
For ſelf-ſame wind that I ſhould ſpeak withal
Is kindling coals that fire up all my breaſt,
And burn me up with flames that tears would quench.
To weep, is to make leſs the depth of grief:
Tears then for babes; blows and revenge for me!
Richard, I bear thy name, I'll venge thy death,

Or die renowned by attempting it.

Edw. His name that valiant Duke hath left with thee:
His Dukedom and his chair with me is left.

Rich. Nay, if thou be that princely eagle's bird,
Shew thy deſcent, by gazing 'gainſt the ſun:
For chair and Dukedom, throne and kingdom ſay,
Either that's thine, or elſe thou wert not his.

March. Enter Warwick, *Marquis of* Montague, *and their army.*

War. How now, fair lords? what fare? what news abroad?

Rich. Great lord of *Warwick*, if we ſhould recount
Our baleful news, and at each word's deliv'rance
Stab poniards in our fleſh 'till all were told,
The words would add more anguiſh than the wounds.
O valiant lord, the Duke of *York* is ſlain.

Edw. O *Warwick! Warwick!* that *Plantagenet*
Which held thee dearly as his ſoul's redemption,
Is by the ſtern lord *Clifford* done to death.

War. Ten days ago I drown'd theſe news in tears;
And now, to add more meaſure to your woes,
I come to tell you things ſith then befaln.
After the bloody fray at *Wakefield* fought,
Where your brave father breath'd his lateſt gaſp,
Tidings, as ſwiftly as the poſt could run,
Were brought me of your loſs and his depart.
I then in *London*, keeper of the King,
Muſter'd my ſoldiers, gather'd flocks of friends,
March'd towards St. *Albans* t' intercept the Queen,
Bearing the King in my behalf along:
For by my ſcouts I was advertiſed
That ſhe was coming, with a full intent
To daſh our late decree in parliament,
Touching King *Henry*'s oath, and your ſucceſſion:

Short

Short tale to make, we at St. *Albans* met,
Our battels join'd, and both ſides fiercely fought:
But whether 'twas the coldneſs of the King,
Who look'd full gently on his warlike Queen,
That robb'd my ſoldiers of their heated ſpleen;
Or whether 'twas report of her ſucceſs,
Or more than common fear of *Clifford*'s rigour,
Who thunders to his captives blood and death,
I cannot judge: but to conclude with truth,
Their weapons like to lightning came and went;
Our ſoldiers like the night-owl's lazy flight,
Or like a lazy thraſher with a flail,
Fell gently down, as if they ſtruck their friends.
I cheer'd them up with juſtice of our cauſe,
With promiſe of high pay and great reward;
But all in vain, they had no heart to fight,
And we, in them, no hope to win the day,
So that we fled; the King unto the Queen,
Lord *George* your brother, *Norfolk*, and my ſelf,
In haſte, poſt haſte, are come to join with you:
For in the marches here we heard you were,
Making another head to fight again.

Edw. Where is the Duke of *Norfolk*, gentle *Warwick?*
And when came *George* from *Burgundy* to *England?*

War. Some ſix miles off the Duke is with the ſoldiers;
And for your brother, he was lately ſent
From your kind aunt, Dutcheſs of *Burgundy*,
With aid of ſoldiers to this needful war.

Rich. 'Twas odds belike when valiant *Warwick* fled;
Oft have I heard his praiſes in purſuit,
But ne'er, till now, his ſcandal of retire.

War. Nor now my ſcandal, *Richard*, doſt thou hear:
For thou ſhalt know this ſtrong right hand of mine

Can pluck the diadem from faint *Henry*'s head,
And wring the awful ſcepter from his fiſt,
Were he as famous and as bold in war,
As he is fam'd for mildneſs, peace and prayer.

Rich. I know it well, lord *Warwick*, blame me not,
'Tis love I bear thy glories makes me ſpeak.
But in this troublous time what's to be done?
Shall we go throw away our coats of ſteel,
And wrap our bodies in black mourning gowns,
Numb'ring our *Ave Maries* with our beads?
Or ſhall we on the helmets of our foes
Tell our devotion with revengeful arms?
If for the laſt, ſay ay, and to it lords.

War. Why therefore *Warwick* came to ſeek you out,
And therefore comes my brother *Montague*.
Attend me lords: the proud inſulting Queen,
With *Clifford*, and the haught *Northumberland*,
And of their feather many more proud birds,
Have wrought the eaſie-melting King, like wax.
He ſwore conſent to your ſucceſſion,
His oath enrolled in the parliament:
And now to *London* all the crew are gone,
To fruſtrate both his oath, and what beſide
May make againſt the houſe of *Lancaſter*.
Their power, I think, is thirty thouſand ſtrong:
Now if the help of *Norfolk* and my ſelf,
With all the friends that thou brave Earl of *March*,
Amongſt the loving *Welchmen* canſt procure,
Will but amount to five and twenty thouſand:
Why *Via!* to *London* will we march,
And once again beſtride our foaming ſteeds,
And once again cry charge upon our foes,
But never once again turn back and fly.

Rich.

Rich. Ay, now methinks I hear great *Warwick* ſpeak;
Ne'er may he live to ſee a ſun-ſhine day
That cries retire, if *Warwick* bid him ſtay.

Edw. Lord *Warwick*, on thy ſhoulder will I lean,
And when thou fail'ſt (as God forbid the hour)
Muſt *Edward* fall, which peril heav'n forfend.

War. No longer Earl of *March*, but Duke of *York*;
The next degree is *England*'s royal throne:
For King of *England* ſhalt thou be proclaim'd
In every borough as we paſs along:
And he that throws not up his cap for joy,
Shall for the fault make forfeit of his head.
King *Edward*, valiant *Richard*, *Montague*,
Stay we no longer dreaming of renown,
But ſound the trumpets, and about our task.

Rich. Then *Clifford* were thy heart as hard as ſteel,
As thou haſt ſhewn it flinty by thy deeds,
I come to pierce it, or to give thee mine.

Edw. Then ſtrike up drums, God and St. *George* for us.

Enter a Meſſenger.

War. How now? what news?

Meſ. The Duke of *Norfolk* ſends you word by me,
The Queen is coming with a puiſſant hoſt,
And craves your company for ſpeedy counſel.

War. Why then it ſorts, brave warriors let's away.

SCENE

SCENE III.

YORK.

Enter King Henry, *the Queen*, Clifford, Northumberland, *and the Prince of* Wales, *with Drums and Trumpets.*

Queen. WELCOME, my lord, to this brave town of *York*.
Yonder's the head of that arch-enemy
That ſought to be encompaſt with your crown.
Doth not the object cheer your heart, my lord?

K. *Henry.* Ay, as the rocks cheer them that fear their wrack;
To ſee this ſight it irks my very ſoul:
With-hold revenge, dear God, 'tis not my fault,
Nor wittingly have I infring'd my vow.

Clif. My gracious liege, this too much lenity
And harmleſs pity muſt be laid aſide:
To whom do lions caſt their gentle looks?
Not to the beaſt that would uſurp their den.
Whoſe hand is that the foreſt bear doth lick?
Not his that ſpoils her young before her face.
Who ſcapes the lurking ſerpent's mortal ſting?
Not he that ſets his foot upon her back.
The ſmalleſt worm will turn, being trodden on,
And doves will peck in ſafeguard of their brood.
Ambitious *York* did level at thy crown,
Thou ſmiling, while he knit his angry brows.
He but a Duke, would have his ſon a King,
And raiſe his iſſue like a loving ſire;
Thou being a King, bleſt with a goodly ſon,
Didſt yield conſent to diſinherit him;
Which argu'd thee a moſt unloving father.
Unreaſonable creatures feed their young,

And

And tho' man's face be fearful to their eyes,
Yet in protection of their tender ones
Who hath not ſeen them (even with thoſe wings
Which ſometimes they have us'd with fearful flight)
Make war with him that climb'd unto their neſt,
Offering their own lives in their young's defence?
For ſhame my liege, make them your preſident.
Were it not pity, that this goodly boy
Should loſe his birth-right by his father's fault,
And long hereafter ſay unto his child,
What my great-grandfather and grandſire got,
My careleſs father fondly gave away,
Ah, what a ſhame was this? look on the boy,
And let his manly face, which promiſeth
Succeſsful fortune, ſteel thy melting heart
To hold thine own, and leave thine own with him.

King. Full well hath *Clifford* plaid the orator,
Inferring arguments of mighty force:
But, *Clifford*, tell me, didſt thou never hear,
That things ill got had ever bad ſucceſs.
And happy always was it for that ſon,
Whoſe father for his hoarding went to hell.
I'll leave my ſon my virtuous deeds behind;
And would my father had left me no more:
For all the reſt is held at ſuch a rate,
As brings a thouſand-fold more care to keep,
Than in poſſeſſion any jot of pleaſure.
Ah couſin *York*, would thy beſt friends did know
How it doth grieve me that thy head is here.

Queen. My lord cheer up your ſpirits, our foes are nigh,
And this ſoft courage makes your followers faint:
You promis'd Knighthood to our forward ſon,
Unſheath your ſword, and dub him preſently.

Edward,

Edward, kneel down.

King. *Edward Plantagenet*, ariſe a Knight,
And learn this leſſon, draw thy ſword in right.

Prince. My gracious father, by your kingly leave,
I'll draw it as Apparent to the crown,
And in that quarrel uſe it to the death.

Clif. Why that is ſpoken like a toward Prince.

Enter a Meſſenger.

Meſ. Royal commanders be in readineſs,
For with a band of thirty thouſand men
Comes *Warwick*, backing of the Duke of *York*.
And in the towns as they do march along
Proclaims him King, and many fly to him.
Darraign your battel, they are near at hand.

Clif. I would your highneſs would depart the field:
The Queen hath beſt ſucceſs when you are abſent.

Queen. Ay good my lord, and leave us to our fortune.

K. *Henry.* Why that's my fortune too, therefore I'll ſtay.

North. Be it with reſolution then to fight.

Prince. My royal father, cheer theſe noble lords,
And hearten thoſe that fight in your defence:
Unſheath your ſword, good father; cry St. *George*.

SCENE IV.

March. *Enter* Edward, Warwick, Richard, Clarence, Norfolk, Montague, *and Soldiers.*

Edw. Now perjur'd *Henry*, wilt thou kneel for grace,
And ſet thy diadem upon my head;
Or bide the mortal fortune of the field?

Queen. Go rate thy minions, proud inſulting boy.
Becomes it thee to be thus bold in terms

Before

Before thy Soveraign and thy lawful King?
Edw. I am his King, and he ſhould bow his knee;
I was adopted heir by his conſent;
Since when his oath is broke: for as I hear,
You that are King, though he do wear the crown,
Have caus'd him by new act of parliament
To blot out me and put his own ſon in.
Clif. And reaſon too:
Who ſhould ſucceed the father, but the ſon?
Rich. Are you there, butcher? O, I cannot ſpeak.
Clif. Ay, crook-back, here I ſtand to anſwer thee,
Or any he the proudeſt of thy ſort.
Rich. 'Twas you that kill'd young *Rutland*, was it not?
Clif. Ay, and old *York*, and yet not ſatisfy'd.
Rich. For God's ſake, lords, give ſignal to the fight.
War. What ſay'ſt thou *Henry*, wilt thou yield the crown?
Queen. Why how now long-tongu'd *Warwick*, dare you ſpeak?
When you and I met at St. *Alban*'s laſt,
Your legs did better ſervice than your hands.
War. Then 'twas my turn to fly, and now 'tis thine.
Clif. You ſaid ſo much before, and yet you fled.
War. 'Twas not your valour, *Clifford*, drove me thence.
North. No, nor your manhood that durſt make you ſtay.
Rich. *Northumberland*, I hold thee reverently.
Break off the parley, for ſcarce I can refrain
The execution of my big-ſwoln heart
Upon that *Clifford*, that cruel child-killer.
Clif. I ſlew thy father, call'ſt thou him a child?
Rich. Ay, like a daſtard and a treacherous coward,
As thou didſt kill our tender brother *Rutland*:
But ere ſun ſet I'll make thee curſe the deed. [ſpeak.
K. *Henry.* Have done with words, my lords, and hear me
Queen. Defie them then, or elſe hold cloſe thy lips.

K. *Henry.* I pr'ythee give no limits to my tongue,
I am a King, and privileg'd to ſpeak.

Clif. My liege, the wound that bred this meeting here
Cannot be cur'd by words, therefore be ſtill.

Rich. Then, execution, re-unſheath thy ſword:
By him that made us all, I am reſolv'd
That *Clifford*'s manhood lyes upon his tongue.

Edw. Say *Henry*, ſhall I have my right or no?
A thouſand men have broke their faſts to-day,
That ne'er ſhall dine unleſs thou yield the crown.

War. If thou deny, their blood upon thy head,
For *York* in juſtice puts his armour on.

Prince. If that be right which *Warwick* ſays is right,
There is no wrong, but every thing is right.

Rich. Who ever got thee, there thy mother ſtands,
For well I wot thou haſt thy mother's tongue.

Queen. But thou art neither like thy ſire nor dam,
But like a foul miſhapen ſtigmatick,
Mark'd by the deſtinies to be avoided,
As venomous toads, or lizards dreadful ſtings.

Rich. Iron of *Naples* hid with *Engliſh* gilt,
Whoſe father bears the title of a King,
(As if a channel ſhould be call'd the ſea)
Sham'ſt thou not, knowing whence thou art extraught,
To let thy tongue detect thy baſe-born heart.

Edw. A wiſp of ſtraw were worth a thouſand crowns,
To make this ſhameleſs callet know her ſelf.
Helen of *Greece* was fairer far than thou,
Although thy husband may be *Menelaus*;
And ne'er was *Agamemnon*'s brother wrong'd
By that falſe woman, as this King by thee.
His father revell'd in the heart of *France*,
And tam'd the King, and made the Dauphin ſtoop:

And had he match'd according to his ſtate,
He might have kept that glory to this day.
But when he took a beggar to his bed,
And grac'd thy poor Sire with his bridal day,
Even then that ſun-ſhine brew'd a ſhow'r for him,
That waſh'd his father's fortunes forth of *France*,
And heap'd ſedition on his crown at home:
For what hath broach'd this tumult but thy pride?
Hadſt thou been meek, our title ſtill had ſlept,
And we in pity of the gentle King
Had ſlipt our claim until another age.

Cla. But when we ſaw our ſun-ſhine made thy ſpring,
And that thy ſummer bred us no increaſe,
We ſet the ax to thy uſurping root;
And though the edge hath ſomething hit our ſelves,
Yet know thou, ſince we have begun to ſtrike,
We'll never leave 'till we have hewn thee down,
Or bath'd thee growing with our heated bloods.

Edw. And in this reſolution I defie thee,
Not willing any longer conference,
Since thou deny'dſt the gentle King to ſpeak.
Sound trumpets, let our bloody colours wave,
And either victory or elſe a grave.

Queen. Stay *Edward*-----

Edw. No, wrangling woman, we'll no longer ſtay.
Theſe words will coſt ten thouſand lives this day.

[*Exeunt omnes.*

SCENE V.

Alarum. Excurſions. Enter Warwick.

War. Fore-ſpent with toil, as runners with a race,
I lay me down a little while to breathe:

For ſtrokes receiv'd and many blows repaid
Have robb'd my ſtrong-knit ſinews of their ſtrength,
And ſpight of ſpight needs muſt I reſt a while.

Enter Edward *running.*

Edw. Smile, gentle heav'n; or ſtrike, ungentle death;
For this world frowns, and *Edward*'s ſun is clouded.
War. How now, my lord, what hap? what hope of good?

Enter Clarence.

Cla. Our hap is loſs, our hope but ſad deſpair,
Our ranks are broke, and ruin follows us.
What counſel give you? whither ſhall we fly?
Edw. Bootleſs is flight, they follow us with wings;
And weak we are, and cannot ſhun purſuit.

Enter Richard.

Rich. Ah *Warwick,* why haſt thou withdrawn thy ſelf?
Thy brother's blood the thirſty earth hath drunk,
Broach'd with the ſteely point of *Clifford*'s lance:
And in the very pangs of death he cry'd,
(Like to a diſmal clangor heard from far)
Warwick, revenge; brother, revenge my death.
So underneath the belly of his ſteeds,
That ſtain'd their fetlocks in his ſmoaking blood,
The noble gentleman gave up the ghoſt.
War. Then let the earth be drunken with our blood;
I'll kill my horſe becauſe I will not fly:
Why ſtand we like ſoft-hearted women here,
Wailing our loſſes, whiles the foe doth rage.
And look upon, as if the tragedy
Were plaid in jeſt by counterfeiting actors.
Here on my knee I vow to God above,

I'll never pauſe again, never ſtand ſtill,
'Till either death hath clos'd theſe eyes of mine,
Or fortune given me meaſure of revenge.

Edw. O *Warwick*, I do bend my knee with thine,
And in this vow do chain my ſoul to thine.
And ere my knee riſe from the earth's cold face,
I throw my hands, mine eyes, my heart to thee,
Thou ſetter up and plucker down of Kings!
Beſeeching thee (if with thy will it ſtands
That to my foes this body muſt be prey)
Yet that thy brazen gates of heav'n may ope,
And give ſweet paſſage to my ſinful ſoul.
Now lords take leave untill we meet again,
Where-e'er it be, in heav'n or on earth.

Rich. Brother give me thy hand, and gentle *Warwick*
Let me embrace thee in my weary arms:
I that did never weep, now melt with woe;
That winter ſhould cut off our ſpring-time ſo.

War. Away, away: once more, ſweet lords, farewel.

Cla. Yet let us all together to our troops;
And give them leave to fly that will not ſtay;
And call them pillars that will ſtand to us;
And if we thrive, promiſe them ſuch rewards,
As victors wear at the *Olympian* games.
This may plant courage in their quailing breaſts,
For yet is hope of life and victory;
Fore-ſlow no longer, make we hence amain. [*Exeunt.*

Excurſions. *Enter* Richard *and* Clifford.

Rich. Now *Clifford* I have ſingled thee alone,
Suppoſe this arm is for the Duke of *York*,
And this for *Rutland*, both bound to revenge,
Wert thou environ'd with a brazen wall.

Clif.

Clif. Now *Richard* I am with thee here alone,
This is the hand that ſtabb'd thy father *York*,
And this the hand that ſlew thy brother *Rutland*,
And here's the heart that triumphs in their death,
And cheers theſe hands that ſlew thy ſire and brother
To execute the like upon thy ſelf,
And ſo have at thee.

They fight. Warwick *enters*, Clifford *flies.*

Rich. Nay *Warwick* ſingle out ſome other chaſe,
For I my ſelf will hunt this wolf to death. [*Exeunt*

SCENE VI.

Alarum. Enter King Henry *alone.*

K. *Henry.* This battel fares like to the morning's war,
When dying clouds contend with growing light,
What time the ſhepherd blowing of his nails,
Can neither call it perfect day nor night.
Now ſways it this way, like the ſelf-ſame ſea
Forc'd by the tide to combat with the wind:
Now ſways it that way, like the ſelf-ſame ſea
Forc'd to retire by fury of the wind.
Sometime the flood prevails, and then the wind;
Now one the better, then another beſt,
Both tugging to be victors, breaſt to breaſt,
Yet neither conqueror nor conquered;
So is the equal poize of this fell war.
Here on this mole-hill will I ſit me down:
To whom God will, there be the victory:
For *Margaret* my Queen and *Clifford* too
Have chid me from the battel, ſwearing both
They proſper beſt of all when I am thence.

Would

Would I were dead, if God's good will were ſo:
For what is in this world but grief and woe?
'O God! methinks it were a happy life
'To be no better than a homely ſwain,
'To ſit upon a hill, as I do now,
'To carve out dials queintly, point by point,
'Thereby to ſee the minutes how they run:
'How many makes the hour full compleat,
'How many hours bring about the day,
'How many days will finiſh up the year,
'How many years a mortal man may live.
'When this is known, then to divide the times:
'So many hours muſt I tend my flock,
'So many hours muſt I take my reſt,
'So many hours muſt I contemplate,
'So many hours muſt I ſport my ſelf;
'So many days my ewes have been with young,
'So many weeks ere the poor fools will ean,
'So many months ere I ſhall ſheer the fleece:
'So minutes, hours, days, weeks, months and years
'Paſt over, to the end they were created,
'Would bring white hairs unto a quiet grave.
Ah! what a life were this! how ſweet, how lovely!
Gives not the haw-thorn buſh a ſweeter ſhade
To ſhepherds looking on their ſilly ſheep,
Than doth a rich embroider'd canopy
To Kings that fear their ſubjects treachery?
O yes it doth, a thouſand-fold it doth.
And to conclude, the ſhepherd's homely curds,
His cold thin drink out of his leather bottle,
His wonted ſleep under a freſh tree's ſhade,
All which ſecure and ſweetly he enjoys,
Is far beyond a Prince's delicates,

His viands ſparkling in a golden cup,
His body couched in a curious bed,
When care, miſtruſt and treaſons wait on him.

SCENE VII.

Alarum. Enter a Son that had kill'd his Father at one door, and a Father that had kill'd his Son at another door.

Son. Ill blows the wind that profits no body.
This man, whom hand to hand I ſlew in fight,
May be poſſeſſed with ſome ſtore of crowns,
And I that, haply, take them from him now,
May yet, ere night, yield both my life and them
To ſome man elſe, as this dead man doth me.
Who's this? oh God! it is my father's face,
Whom in this conflict I unawares have kill'd:
Oh heavy times, begetting ſuch events!
From *London* by the King was I preſt forth,
My father being the Earl of *Warwick*'s man
Came on the part of *York*, preſt by his maſter;
And I, who at his hands receiv'd my life,
Have by my hands of life bereaved him.
Pardon me, God, I knew not what I did;
And pardon, father, for I knew not thee.
My tears ſhall wipe away theſe bloody marks:
And no more words, 'till they have flow'd their fill.

K. *Henry.* O piteous ſpectacle! O bloody times!
Whiles lions war and battle for their dens,
Poor harmleſs lambs abide their enmity.
Weep, wretched man, I'll aid thee tear for tear;
And let our hearts and eyes, like civil war,
Be blind with tears, and break o'er-charg'd with grief.

Enter a Father, bearing his Son.

Fath. Thou that ſo ſtoutly haſt reſiſted me,
Give me thy gold, if thou haſt any gold:
For I have bought it with an hundred blows.
But let me ſee: is this our foe-man's face?
Ah no, no, no, it is my only ſon!
Ah boy, if any life be left in thee,
Throw up thine eye; ſee, ſee what ſhowers ariſe,
Blown with the windy tempeſt of my heart
Upon thy wounds, that kill mine eye and heart.
O pity, God, this miſerable age!
What ſtratagems, how fell, how butcherly,
Erroneous, mutinous, and unnatural,
This deadly quarrel daily doth beget!
O boy! thy father gave thee life too ſoon,
And hath bereft thee of thy life too late.

K. *Henry.* Woe above woe; grief, more than common grief;
O that my death would ſtay theſe rueful deeds:
O pity, pity, gentle heaven, pity.
The red roſe and the white are on his face,
The fatal colours of our ſtriving houſes.
The one his purple blood right well reſembles,
The other his pale cheek, methinks, preſenteth:
Wither one roſe, and let the other flouriſh;
If you contend, a thouſand lives muſt wither.

Son. How will my mother, for a father's death,
Take on with me, and ne'er be ſatisfy'd?

Fath. How will my wife, for ſlaughter of my ſon,
Shed ſeas of tears, and ne'er be ſatisfy'd?

K. *Henry.* How will the country, for theſe woful chances,
Miſ-think the King, and not be ſatisfy'd?

Son. Was ever ſon ſo rew'd a father's death?

Fath. Was ever father ſo bemoan'd his ſon?
K. *Henry.* Was ever King ſo griev'd for ſubjects woe?
Much is your ſorrow; mine, ten times ſo much.
Son. I'll bear thee hence, where I may weep my fill.
Fath. Theſe arms of mine ſhall be thy winding-ſheet,
My heart, ſweet boy, ſhall be thy ſepulcher,
For from my heart thine image ne'er ſhall go.
My ſighing breaſt ſhall be thy funeral bell:
And ſo obſequious will thy father be,
Sad for the loſs of thee, having no more,
As *Priam* was for all his valiant ſons.
I'll bear thee hence, and let them fight that will,
For I have murther'd where I ſhould not kill. [*Exit.*
K. *Henry.* Sad-hearted men, much overgone with care;
Here ſits a King more woful than you are.

SCENE VIII.

Alarums. Excurſions. Enter the Queen, Prince of Wales, *and* Exeter.

Prince. Fly, father, fly; for all your friends are fled;
And *Warwick* rages like a chafed bull:
Away, for death doth hold us in purſuit.
Queen. Mount you my lord, towards *Berwick* poſt amain.
Edward and *Richard*, like a brace of grey-hounds
Having the fearful flying hare in ſight,
With fiery eyes ſparkling for very wrath,
And bloody ſteel graſpt in their ireful hands,
Are at our backs, and therefore hence amain.
Exe. Away; for vengeance comes along with them.
Nay, ſtay not to expoſtulate, make ſpeed.
Or elſe come after, I'll away before.
K. *Henry.* Nay, take me with thee, good ſweet *Exeter*;

Not

Not that I fear to ſtay, but love to go
Whither the Queen intends. Forward, away. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IX.

A loud Alarum. Enter Clifford *wounded.*

Clif. Here burns my candle out; ay, here it dies,
Which while it laſted, gave King *Henry* light.
O *Lancaſter!* I fear thy overthrow,
More than my body's parting with my ſoul.
My love and fear glew'd many friends to thee, [*Falling.*
And now I fall, thy tough commixtures melt,
Impairing *Henry*, ſtrengthning miſ-proud *York*;
And whither fly the gnats, but to the ſun?
And who ſhines now, but *Henry*'s enemies?
O *Phœbus!* hadſt thou never giv'n conſent
That *Phaeton* ſhould check thy fiery ſteeds,
Thy burning car had never ſcorch'd the earth:
And *Henry*, hadſt thou ſway'd as Kings ſhould do,
Or as thy father and his father did,
Giving no ground unto the houſe of *York*,
They never then had ſprung like ſummer flies.
I, and ten thouſand in this luckleſs realm,
Had left no mourning widows for our death;
And thou this day hadſt kept thy chair in peace.
For what doth cheriſh weeds, but gentle air?
And what makes robbers bold, but too much lenity?
Bootleſs are plaints, and cureleſs are my wounds,
No way to fly, nor ſtrength to hold out flight:
The foe is mercileſs, and will not pity;
For at their hands I have deſerv'd no pity.
The air hath got into my deadly wounds,

And much effuſe of blood doth make me faint:
Come *York* and *Richard*, *Warwick* and the reſt,
I ſtabb'd your father's boſom; ſplit my breaſt. [*He faints.*

Alarum and Retreat. Enter Edward, Warwick, Richard, Montague, Clarence, *and Soldiers.*

Edw. Now breathe we lords, good fortune bids us pauſe,
And ſmooth the frowns of war with peaceful looks.
Some troops purſue the bloody-minded Queen,
That led calm *Henry*, though he were a King,
As doth a Sail fill'd with a fretting guſt
Command an Argoſie to ſtem the waves.
But think you lords that *Clifford* fled with them?

War. No, 'tis impoſſible he ſhould eſcape:
For though before his face I ſpeak the word,
Your brother *Richard* mark'd him for the grave;
And whereſoe'er he is, he's ſurely dead. [Clifford *groans.*

Rich. Whoſe ſoul is that which takes her heavy leave?
A deadly groan, like life and death's departing.
See who it is.

Edw. And now the battel's ended,
If friend or foe, let him be gently uſed.

Rich. Revoke that doom of mercy, for 'tis *Clifford*,
Who not contented that he lopp'd the branch,
In hewing *Rutland* when his leaves put forth;
But ſet his murth'ring knife unto the root
From whence that tender ſpray did ſweetly ſpring,
I mean our princely father, Duke of *York*.

War. From off the gates of *York* fetch down the head,
Your father's head, which *Clifford* placed there:
Inſtead whereof let his ſupply the room.
Meaſure for meaſure muſt be anſwered.

Edw. Bring forth that fatal ſcreech-owl to our houſe,

That

That nothing ſung but death to us and ours:
Now death ſhall ſtop his diſmal threatning ſound,
And his ill-boading tongue no more ſhall ſpeak.
War. I think his underſtanding is bereft:
Speak *Clifford*, doſt thou know who ſpeaks to thee?
Dark cloudy death o'er-ſhades his beams of life,
And he nor ſees, nor hears us what we ſay.
Rich. O would he did; and ſo perhaps he doth.
'Tis but his policy to counterfeit,
Becauſe he would avoid ſuch bitter taunts
As in the time of death he gave our father.
Cla. If ſo thou think'ſt, vex him with eager words.
Rich. *Clifford*, ask mercy, and obtain no grace.
Edw. *Clifford*, repent in bootleſs penitence.
War. *Clifford*, deviſe excuſes for thy faults.
Cla. While we deviſe fell tortures for thy faults.
Rich. Thou didſt love *York*, and I am ſon to *York*.
Edw. Thou pitied'ſt *Rutland*, I will pity thee.
Cla. Where's captain *Margaret* to fence you now?
War. They mock thee *Clifford*, ſwear as thou waſt wont.
Rich. What not an oath! nay then the world goes hard,
When *Clifford* cannot ſpare his friends an oath:
I know by that he's dead; and by my ſoul,
If this right hand would buy but two hours life,
That I in all deſpight might rail at him,
This hand ſhould chop it off; and with the iſſuing blood
Stifle the villain, whoſe unſtanched thirſt
York and young *Rutland* could not ſatisfie.
War. Ay but he's dead. Off with the traitor's head,
And rear it in the place your father's ſtands.
And now to *London* with triumphant march,
There to be crowned *England*'s royal King:
From whence ſhall *Warwick* cut the ſea to *France*,

And

And ask the lady *Bona* for thy Queen.
So ſhalt thou ſinew both theſe lands together.
And having *France* thy friend, thou ſhalt not dread
The ſcatter'd foe that hopes to riſe again:
For though they cannot greatly ſting to hurt,
Yet look to have them buz t' offend thine ears.
Firſt will I ſee the coronation,
And then to *Britany* I'll croſs the ſea,
T' effect this marriage, ſo it pleaſe my lord.

Edw. Ev'n as thou wilt, ſweet *Warwick*, let it be;
For on thy ſhoulder do I build my ſeat:
And never will I undertake the thing
Wherein thy counſel and conſent is wanting.
Richard, I will create thee Duke of *Glo'ſter*,
And *George* of *Clarence*; *Warwick* as our ſelf
Shall do and undo, as him pleaſeth beſt.

Rich. Let me be Duke of *Clarence*, *George* of *Glo'ſter*,
For *Glo'ſter*'s Dukedom is too ominous.

War. Tut, that's a fooliſh obſervation:
Richard, be Duke of *Glo'ſter:* now to *London*,
To ſee theſe honours in poſſeſſion. [*Exeunt.*

ACT III. SCENE I.

Enter Sinklo *and* Humphry, *with croſs-bows in their hands.*

SINKLO.

UNDER this thick-grown brake we'll ſhroud our ſelves,
For through this laund anon the Deer will come;
And in this covert will we make our ſtand,
Culling the principal of all the Deer.

Hum. I'll ſtay above the hill, ſo both may ſhoot.

Sink. That cannot be: the noiſe of thy croſs-bow
Will ſcare the herd, and ſo my ſhoot is loſt:
Here ſtand we both, and aim we at the beſt.
And, for the time ſhall not ſeem tedious,
I'll tell thee what befell me on a day,
In this ſelf-place where now we mean to ſtand.

Sink. Here comes a man, let's ſtay 'till he be paſt.

Enter King Henry, *with a prayer-book.*

K. *Henry.* From *Scotland* am I ſtol'n ev'n of pure love,
To greet mine own land with my wiſhful ſight:
No *Harry, Harry*, 'tis no land of thine,
Thy place is fill'd, thy ſcepter wrung from thee,
Thy balm waſht off wherewith thou waſt anointed:
No bending knee will call thee *Cæſar* now,
No humble ſuitors preſs to ſpeak for right:
No, not a man comes for redreſs to thee;

For how can I help them, and not my ſelf?

Sink. Ay, here's a deer, whoſe skin's a keeper's fee:
This is the *quondam* King, let's ſeize upon him.

K. *Henry.* Let me embrace [a] theſe four adverſities,
For wiſe men ſay it is the wiſeſt courſe.

Hum. Why linger we? let us lay hands upon him.

Sink. Forbear a while, we'll hear a little more.

K. *Henry.* My Queen and ſon are gone to *France* for aid:
And as I hear, the great commanding *Warwick*
Is thither gone to crave the *French* King's ſiſter
To wife for *Edward.* If this news be true,
Poor Queen and ſon! your labour is but loſt:
For *Warwick* is a ſubtle orator,
And *Lewis* a Prince ſoon won with moving words:
By this account then *Margaret* may win him,
For ſhe's a woman to be pitied much:
Her ſighs will make a batt'ry in his breaſt;
Her tears will pierce into a marble heart;
The Tyger will be mild while ſhe doth mourn,
And *Nero* would be tainted with remorſe,
To hear and ſee her plaints, her briniſh tears.
Ay, but ſhe's come to beg, *Warwick* to give:
She on his left ſide craving aid for *Henry*;
He on his right, asking a wife for *Edward.*
She weeps, and ſays her *Henry* is depos'd;
He ſmiles, and ſays his *Edward* is inſtall'd;
That ſhe, poor wretch, for grief can ſpeak no more!
While *Warwick* tells his title, ſmooths the wrong,
Inferreth arguments of mighty ſtrength,
And in concluſion wins the King from her,
With promiſe of his ſiſter, and what elſe,
To ſtrengthen and ſupport King *Edward*'s place.
O *Marg'ret*, thus 'twill be, and thou (poor ſoul)

[a] *the four adverſaries.*

Art thou forſaken, as thou went'ſt forlorn.

Hum. Say, what art thou that talk'ſt of Kings and Queens?

K. *Henry.* More than I ſeem, and leſs than I was born to;
A man at leaſt, for leſs I ſhould not be;
And men may talk of Kings, and why not I?

Hum. Ay, but thou talk'ſt as if thou wert a King.

K. *Henry.* Why ſo I am in mind, and that's enough.

Hum. But if thou be a King, where is thy crown?

K. *Henry.* My crown is in my heart, not on my head:
Not deck'd with diamonds and *Indian* ſtones;
Not to be ſeen: my crown is call'd *Content*,
A crown it is that ſeldom Kings enjoy.

Hum. Well, if you be a King crown'd with content,
Your crown Content and you muſt be contented
To go along with us. For as we think,
You are the King, King *Edward* hath depos'd:
And we his ſubjects, ſworn in all allegiance,
Will apprehend you as his enemy.

K. *Henry.* But did you never ſwear, and break an oath?

Hum. No, never ſuch an oath, and will not now.

K. *Henry.* Where did you dwell when I was King of *England?*

Hum. Here in this country where we now remain.

K. *Henry.* I was anointed King at nine months old,
My father and my grandfather were Kings;
And you were ſworn true ſubjects unto me:
And tell me then, have you not broke your oaths?

Sink. No, we were ſubjects but while you were King.

K. *Henry.* Why, am I dead? do I not breathe a man?
Ah ſimple men, you know not what you ſwear:
Look, as I blow this feather from my face,
And as the air blows it to me again,
Obeying with my wind when I do blow,
And yielding to another when it blows,

Commanded always by the greater guſt;
Such is the lightneſs of you common men.
But do not break your oath, for of that ſin
My mild intreaty ſhall not make you guilty.
Go where you will, the King ſhall be commanded,
And be you Kings, command, and I'll obey.

Sink. We are true ſubjects to the King, King *Edward.*

K. *Henry.* So would you be again to *Henry*,
If he were ſeated as King *Edward* is.

Sink. We charge you in God's name and in the King's
To go with us unto the officers.

K. *Henry.* In God's name lead, your King's name be obey'd;
And what God will, that let your King perform,
And what he will I humbly yield unto. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.

Enter King Edward, Glouceſter, Clarence, *and Lady* Gray.

K. *Edw.* BROTHER of *Glo'ſter*, at St. *Alban*'s field
This lady's husband, [a]Sir *John Gray*, was ſlain,
His land then ſeiz'd on by the conqueror:
Her ſuit is now to repoſſeſs thoſe lands,
Which we in juſtice cannot well deny,
Becauſe in quarrel of the houſe of *York*
The worthy gentleman did loſe his life.

Glo. Your Highneſs ſhall do well to grant her ſuit:
It were diſhonour to deny it her.

K. *Edw.* It were no leſs; but yet I'll make a pauſe.

Glo. Yea! is it ſo?
I ſee the lady hath a thing to grant,
Before the King will grant her humble ſuit.

Clar. He knows the game, how true he keeps the wind?

Glo.

[a] *Vid* Hall. 3 *year of* Edw. 4. *fol.* 5. *It was hitherto falſely printed* Richard.

Glo. Silence.

K. *Edw.* Widow, we will conſider of your ſuit,
And come ſome other time to know our mind.

Gray. Right gracious lord, I cannot brook delay.
May't pleaſe your Highneſs to reſolve me now;
And what your pleaſure is ſhall ſatisfie me.

Glo. Ay, widow! then I'll warrant you all your lands,
And if what pleaſes him ſhall pleaſure you:
Fight cloſer, or good faith you'll catch a blow.

Clar. I fear her not, unleſs ſhe chance to fall.

Glo. God forbid that, for he'll take vantages.

K. *Edw.* How many children haſt thou, widow? tell me.

Clar. I think he means to beg a child of her.

Glo. Nay whip me then: he'll rather give her two.

Gray. Three, my moſt gracious lord.

Glo. You ſhall have four, if you'll be rul'd by him.

K. *Edw.* 'Twere pity they ſhould loſe their father's lands.

Gray. Be pitiful, dread lord, and grant it then.

K. *Edw.* Lords give us leave, I'll try this widow's wit.

Glo. Ay, good leave have you, for you will have leave,
'Till youth take leave, and leave you to the crutch.

K. *Edw.* Now tell me madam, do you love your children?

Gray. Ay, full as dearly as I love my ſelf.

K. *Edw.* And would you not do much to do them good?

Gray. To do them good, I would ſuſtain ſome harm.

K. *Edw.* Then get your husband's lands, to do them good.

Gray. Therefore I came unto your Majeſty.

K. *Edw.* I'll tell you how theſe lands are to be got.

Gray. So ſhall you bind me to your Highneſs' ſervice.

K. *Edw.* What ſervice wilt thou do me, if I give them?

Gray. What you command that reſts in me to do.

K. *Edw.* But you will take exceptions to my boon.

Gray. No, gracious lord, except I cannot do it.

K. *Edw.* Ay but thou canſt do what I mean to ask.
Gray. Why then I will do what your grace commands.
Glo. He plies her hard, and much rain wears the marble.
Clar. As red as fire! nay then her wax muſt melt.
Gray. Why ſtops my lord? ſhall I not hear my task?
K. *Edw.* An eaſie task, 'tis but to love a King.
Gray. That's ſoon perform'd, becauſe I am a ſubject.
K. *Edw.* Why then thy husband's lands I freely give thee.
Gray. I take my leave with many thouſand thanks.
Glo. The match is made, ſhe ſeals it with a curtſie.
K. *Edw.* But ſtay thee, 'tis the fruits of love I mean.
Gray. The fruits of love I mean, my loving liege.
K. *Edw.* Ay, but I fear me in another ſenſe.
What love think'ſt thou I ſue ſo much to get?
Gray. My love 'till death, my humble thanks, my prayers;
That love which virtue begs, and virtue grants.
K. *Edw.* No by my troth, I did not mean ſuch love.
Gray. Why then you mean not as I thought you did.
K. *Edw.* But now you partly may perceive my mind.
Gray. My mind will never grant what I perceive
Your Highneſs aims at, if I aim aright.
K. *Edw.* To tell thee plain, I aim to lye with thee.
Gray. To tell you plain, I'd rather lye in priſon.
K. *Edw.* Why then thou ſhalt not have thy husband's lands.
Gray. Why then mine honeſty ſhall be my dower,
For by that loſs I will not purchaſe them.
K. *Edw.* Therein thou wrong'ſt thy children mightily.
Gray. Herein your Highneſs wrongs both them and me:
But, mighty lord, this merry inclination
Accords not with the ſadneſs of my ſuit;
Pleaſe you diſmiſs me, or with ay or no.
K. *Edw.* Ay; if thou wilt ſay Ay to my requeſt:
No; if thou doſt ſay No to my demand.

Gray.

Gray. Then no, my lord; my ſuit is at an end.
Glo. The widow likes him not, ſhe knits her brows.
Clar. He is the blunteſt wooer in chriſtendom.
K. *Edw.* Her looks do argue her replete with modeſty,
Her words do ſhew her wit incomparable,
All her perfections challenge ſovereignty;
One way or other ſhe is for a King,
And ſhe ſhall be my love, or elſe my Queen.
Say that King *Edward* take thee for his Queen?
Gray. 'Tis better ſaid than done, my gracious lord;
I am a ſubject fit to jeſt withal,
But far unfit to be a ſoveraign.
K. *Edw.* Sweet widow, by my ſtate I ſwear to thee,
I ſpeak no more than what my ſoul intends,
And that is, to enjoy thee for my love.
Gray. And that is more than I will yield unto:
I know I am too mean to be your Queen,
And yet too good to be your concubine.
K. *Edw.* You cavil, widow; I did mean my Queen.
Gray. 'Twill grieve your grace my ſons ſhall call you father.
K. *Edw.* No more than when my daughters call thee mother.
Thou art a widow, and thou haſt ſome children;
And by God's mother, I being but a batchelor
Have other ſome: why 'tis a happy thing,
To be the father unto many ſons.
Anſwer no more, for thou ſhalt be my Queen.
Glo. The ghoſtly father now hath done his ſhrift.
Clar. When he was made a ſhriver, it was for a ſhift.
K. *Edw.* Brothers, you muſe what chat we two have had.
Glo. The widow likes it not, for ſhe looks ſad.
K. *Edw.* You'd think it ſtrange, if I ſhould marry her.
Clar. To whom, my lord?
K. *Edw.* Why *Clarence*, to my ſelf.

Glo.

Glo. That would be ten days wonder at the leaſt.
Clar. That's a day longer than a wonder laſts.
Glo. By ſo much is the wonder in extreams.
K. *Edw.* Well, jeſt on brothers, I can tell you both,
Her ſuit is granted for her husband's lands.

Enter a Nobleman.

Nob. My gracious lord, *Henry* your foe is taken,
And brought your priſoner to your palace gate.
K. *Edw.* See that he be convey'd unto the *Tower:*
And go we brothers, to the man that took him,
To queſtion of his apprehenſion.
Widow, go you along: Lords, uſe her honourably. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

Manet Glouceſter.

Glo. Ay, *Edward* will uſe women honourably.
Would he were waſted, marrow, bones, and all,
That from his loins no hopeful branch may ſpring,
To croſs me from the golden time I look for.
And yet between my ſoul's deſire and me,
(The luſtful *Edward*'s title buried)
Is *Clarence*, *Henry*, and his ſon young *Edward*,
And all th' unlook'd-for iſſue of their bodies,
To take their rooms ere I can place my ſelf.
A cold premeditation for my purpoſe!
Why then I do but dream on Sov'reignty,
Like one that ſtands upon a promontory
And ſpyes a far-off ſhore where he would tread,
Wiſhing his foot were equal with his eye,
And chides the ſea that ſunders him from thence,
Saying he'll lade it dry to have his way:

So

So do I wiſh the crown being ſo far off,
And ſo I chide the means that keep me from it,
And ſo (I ſay) I'll cut the cauſes off,
Flatt'ring my mind with things impoſſible.
My eye's too quick, my heart o'er-weens too much,
Unleſs my hand and ſtrength could equal them.
Well, ſay there is no kingdom then for *Richard:*
What other pleaſure can the world afford?
I'll make my heaven in a lady's lap,
And deck my body in gay ornaments,
And 'witch ſweet ladies with my words and looks.
Oh miſerable thought! and more unlikely,
Than to accompliſh twenty golden crowns.
Why love forſwore me in my mother's womb,
And, for I ſhould not deal in her ſoft laws,
She did corrupt frail nature with ſome bribe
To ſhrink mine arm like to a wither'd ſhrub;
To make an envious mountain on my back,
Where ſits deformity to mock my body;
To ſhape my legs of an unequal ſize;
To diſproportion me in every part:
Like to a Chaos, or unlick'd bear-whelp
That carries no impreſſion like the dam.
And am I then a man to be belov'd?
Oh monſtrous fault, to harbour ſuch a thought!
Then ſince this earth affords no joy to me,
But to command, to check, to o'er-bear ſuch
As are of better perſon than my ſelf;
I'll make my heav'n to dream upon the crown,
And while I live t'account this world but hell,
Until the miſ-ſhap'd trunk that bears this head
Be round-impaled with a glorious crown.
And yet I know not how to get the crown,

For many lives ſtand between me and home:
And I, (like one loſt in a thorny wood,
That rends the thorns, and is rent with the thorns,
Seeking a way, and ſtraying from the way,
Not knowing how to find the open air,
But toiling deſp'rately to find it out)
Torment my ſelf to catch the *Engliſh* crown.
And from that torment I will free my ſelf,
Or hew my way out with a bloody ax.
Why I can ſmile, and murther while I ſmile,
And cry content to that which grieves my heart,
And wet my cheeks with artificial tears,
And frame my face to all occaſions:
I'll drown more ſailors then the Mermaid ſhall,
I'll ſlay more gazers than the Baſilisk,
I'll play the orator as well as *Neſtor*,
Deceive more ſlily than *Ulyſſes* could,
And like a *Sinon*, take another *Troy*:
I can add colours ev'n to the Camelion,
Change ſhapes with *Proteus*, for advantages,
And ſet the murth'rous *Machiavel* to ſchool.
Can I do this, and cannot get a crown?
Tut, were it farther off, I'll pluck it down. [*Exit.*

SCENE IV.

Changes to FRANCE.

Flouriſh. Enter King Lewis, *Lady* Bona, Bourbon, *Prince of* Wales, *Queen* Margaret, *and the Earl of* Oxford. Lewis *ſits, and riſeth up again.*

K. *Lew.* FAIR Queen of *England*, worthy *Margaret*,
Sit down with us; it ill befits thy ſtate,

And

And birth, that thou ſhould'ſt ſtand while *Lewis* ſits.

Queen. No, mighty King of *France*; now *Margaret*
Muſt ſtrike her ſail, and learn a while to ſerve,
Where Kings command. I was, I muſt confeſs,
Great *Albion*'s Queen in former golden days:
But now miſchance hath trod my title down,
And with diſhonour laid me on the ground,
Where I muſt take like ſeat unto my fortune,
And to my humble ſeat conform my ſelf.

K. *Lew.* Why ſay, fair Queen, whence ſprings this deep deſpair?

Queen. From ſuch a cauſe as fills mine eyes with tears
And ſtops my tongue, while my heart's drown'd in cares.

K. *Lew.* Whate'er it be, be thou ſtill like thy ſelf,
And ſit thee by our ſide. [*Seats her by him.*
Yield not thy neck
To fortune's yoak, but let thy dauntleſs mind
Still ride in triumph over all miſchance.
Be plain, Queen *Margaret*, and tell thy grief;
It ſhall be eas'd, if *France* can yield relief.

Queen. Thoſe gracious words revive my drooping thoughts,
And give my tongue-ty'd ſorrows leave to ſpeak.
Now therefore be it known to noble *Lewis*,
That *Henry*, ſole poſſeſſor of my love,
Is of a King become a baniſh'd man,
And forc'd to live in *Scotland* a forlorn;
While proud ambitious *Edward* Duke of *York*
Uſurps the regal title, and the ſeat
Of *England*'s true anointed lawful King.
This is the cauſe that I poor *Margaret*,
With this my ſon Prince *Edward*, *Henry*'s heir,
Am come to crave thy juſt and lawful aid:
And if thou fail us, all our hope is done.
Scotland hath will to help, but cannot help:

Our people and our Peers are both miſ-led,
Our treaſure ſeiz'd, our ſoldiers put to flight,
And as thou ſeeſt, our ſelves in heavy plight.

K. *Lew.* Renowned Queen, with patience calm the ſtorm,
While we bethink a means to break it off.

Queen. The more we ſtay, the ſtronger grows our foe.

K. *Lew.* The more I ſtay, the more I'll ſuccour thee.

Queen. O but impatience waiteth on true ſorrow:
And ſee where comes the breeder of my ſorrow.

SCENE V.

Enter Warwick.

K. *Lew.* What's he approacheth boldly to our preſence?

Queen. Our Earl of *Warwick*, *Edward*'s greateſt friend.

K. *Lew.* Welcome, brave *Warwick*, what brings thee to *France?* [*He deſcends. She ariſeth.*

Queen. Ay, now begins a ſecond ſtorm to riſe,
For this is he that moves both wind and tide.

War. From worthy *Edward*, King of *Albion*,
My lord and Sov'raign, and thy vowed friend,
I come (in kindneſs and unfeigned love)
Firſt to do greetings to thy royal perſon,
And then to crave a league of amity;
And laſtly, to confirm that amity
With nuptial knot, if thou vouchſafe to grant
That virtuous lady *Bona*, thy fair ſiſter,
To *England*'s King in lawful marriage.

Queen. If that go forward, *Henry*'s hope is done.

War. And gracious madam, in our King's behalf,
[*Speaking to* Bona.
I am commanded, with your leave and favour,
Humbly to kiſs your hand, and with my tongue

To

To tell the paſſion of my Sov'raign's heart;
Where fame late ent'ring at his heedful ears,
Hath plac'd thy beauty's image and thy virtue.
Queen. King *Lewis*, and lady *Bona*, hear me ſpeak,
Before you anſwer *Warwick*. His demand
Springs not from *Edward*'s well-meant honeſt love,
But from deceit bred by neceſſity:
For how can tyrants ſafely govern home,
Unleſs abroad they purchaſe great alliance?
To prove him tyrant this reaſon may ſuffice,
That *Henry* liveth ſtill; but were he dead,
Yet here Prince *Edward* ſtands, King *Henry*'s ſon.
Look therefore *Lewis* that by this league and marriage
Thou draw not on thy danger and diſhonour:
For tho' uſurpers ſway the rule a while,
Yet heav'ns are juſt, and time ſuppreſſeth wrongs.
War. Injurious *Margaret*.
Prince. And why not Queen?
War. Becauſe thy father *Henry* did uſurp,
And thou no more art Prince than ſhe is Queen.
Oxf. Then *Warwick* diſanuls great *John* of *Gaunt*,
Which did ſubdue the greateſt part of *Spain*;
And after *John* of *Gaunt*, *Henry* the fourth,
Whoſe wiſdom was a mirror to the wiſeſt;
And after that wiſe Prince, *Henry* the fifth,
Who by his proweſs conquered all *France*:
From theſe our *Henry* lineally deſcends.
War. Oxford, how haps it in this ſmooth diſcourſe,
You told not how *Henry* the ſixth hath loſt
All that which *Henry* the fifth had gotten;
Methinks theſe peers of *France* ſhould ſmile at that.
But for the reſt; you tell a pedigree
Of threeſcore and two years, a ſilly time

To make preſcription for a kingdom's worth.

Oxf. Why *Warwick*, canſt thou ſpeak againſt thy liege
Whom thou obeyedſt thirty and ſix years,
And not bewray thy treaſon with a bluſh?

War. Can *Oxford*, that did ever fence the right,
Now buckler falſhood with a pedigree?
For ſhame leave *Henry*, and call *Edward* King.

Oxf. Call him my King, by whoſe injurious doom
My elder brother, the lord *Aubrey Vere*,
Was done to death? and more than ſo, my father,
Even in the downfal of his mellow'd years,
When nature brought him to the door of death?
No *Warwick*, no; while life upholds this arm,
This arm upholds the houſe of *Lancaſter*.

War. And I the houſe of *York*.

K. *Lew.* Queen *Margaret*, Prince *Edward*, and *Oxford*
Vouchſafe at our requeſt to ſtand aſide,
While I uſe farther conference with *Warwick*.

[*They ſtand aloof.*

Queen. Heav'ns grant that *Warwick*'s words bewitch him not.

K. *Lew.* Now *Warwick* tell me even upon thy conſcience,
Is *Edward* your true King? for I were loth
To link with him that were not lawful choſen.

War. Thereon I pawn my credit and mine honour.

K. *Lew.* But is he gracious in the people's eyes?

War. The more that *Henry* was unfortunate.

K. *Lew.* Then further; all diſſembling ſet aſide,
Tell me for truth the meaſure of his love
Unto our ſiſter *Bona*.

War. Such it ſeems
As may beſeem a monarch like himſelf:
My ſelf have often heard him ſay and ſwear

That

That this his love was an external plant,
Whereof the root was fix'd in virtue's ground,
The leaves and fruit maintain'd with beauty's ſun,
Exempt from envy, but not from diſdain,
Unleſs the lady *Bona* quit his pain.

K. *Lew.* Now ſiſter, let us hear your firm reſolve.

Bona. Your grant or your denial ſhall be mine.
Yet I confeſs, that often ere this day, [*Speaks to* Warwick.
When I have heard your King's deſert recounted,
Mine ear hath tempted judgment to deſire.

K. *Lew.* Then *Warwick*, this: our ſiſter ſhall be *Edward*'s.
And now forthwith ſhall articles be drawn
Touching the jointure that your King muſt make,
Which with her dowry ſhall be counterpois'd.
Draw near Queen *Margaret*, and be a witneſs
That *Bona* ſhall be wife to th' *Engliſh* King.

Prince. To *Edward*, but not to the *Engliſh* King.

Queen. Deceitful *Warwick*, it was thy device
By this alliance to make void my ſuit;
Before thy coming *Lewis* was *Henry*'s friend.

K. *Lew.* And ſtill is friend to him and *Margaret*;
But if your title to the crown be weak,
As may appear by *Edward*'s good ſucceſs;
Then 'tis but reaſon that I be releas'd
From giving aid, which late I promiſed.
Yet ſhall you have all kindneſs at my hand,
That your eſtate requires and mine can yield.

War. Henry now lives in *Scotland* at his eaſe,
Where having nothing, nothing can he loſe.
And as for you your ſelf, our *quondam* Queen,
You have a father able to maintain you,
And better 'twere you troubled him than *France*.

Queen. Peace impudent and ſhameleſs *Warwick*, peace,

Proud

Proud ſetter-up and puller down of Kings.
I will not hence, 'till with my talk and tears
(Both full of truth) I make King *Lewis* behold
Thy ſly conveyance, and thy lord's falſe love,
[*Poſt blowing a horn within.*
For both of you are birds of ſelf-ſame feather.
K. *Lew.* *Warwick*, this is ſome poſt to us or thee.

SCENE VI.

Enter a Poſt.

Poſt. My lord ambaſſador, theſe letters are for you;
[*To* Warwick.
Sent from your brother, Marquis *Montague.*
Theſe from our King unto your Majeſty. [*To K.* Lew.
And madam, theſe for you, [*To the Queen.*
From whom I know not. [*They all read their Letters.*
Oxf. I like it well, that our fair Queen and miſtreſs
Smiles at her news, while *Warwick* frowns at his.
Prince. Nay mark how *Lewis* ſtamps as he were nettled.
I hope all's for the beſt.
K. *Lew.* *Warwick*, what are thy news? and yours, fair Queen?
Queen. Mine ſuch as fills my heart with unhop'd joys.
War. Mine full of ſorrow and heart's diſcontent.
K. *Lew.* What! has your King marry'd the lady *Gray?*
And now, to ſooth your forgery and his,
Sends me a paper to perſwade me patience?
Is this th' alliance that he ſeeks with *France?*
Dare he preſume to ſcorn us in this manner?
Queen. I told your Majeſty as much before;
This proveth *Edward*'s love and *Warwick*'s honeſty.
War. King *Lewis*, I here proteſt in ſight of heav'n,

And

And by the hope I have of heav'nly bliſs,
That I am clear from this miſdeed of *Edward*'s:
No more my King; for he diſhonours me,
But moſt himſelf, if he could ſee his ſhame.
Did I forget that by the houſe of *York*
My father came untimely to his death?
Did I let paſs th' abuſe done to my niece?
Did I impale him with the regal crown?
Did I put *Henry* from his native right?
And am I guerdon'd at the laſt with ſhame?
Shame on himſelf, for my deſert is honour.
And to repair my honour loſt for him,
I here renounce him, and return to *Henry*.
My noble Queen, let former grudges paſs,
And henceforth I am thy true ſervitor:
I will revenge his wrong to lady *Bona*,
And replant *Henry* in his former ſtate.

Queen. *Warwick*, theſe words have turn'd my hate to love,
And I forgive and quite forget old faults,
And joy that thou becom'ſt King *Henry*'s friend.

War. So much his friend, ay, his unfeigned friend,
That if King *Lewis* vouchſafe to furniſh us
With ſome few bands of choſen ſoldiers,
I'll undertake to land them on our coaſt,
And force the tyrant from his ſeat by war.
'Tis not his new-made bride ſhall ſuccour him:
And as for *Clarence*, as my letters tell me,
He's very likely now to fall from him,
For matching more for wanton luſt than honour,
Or than for ſtrength and ſafety of our country.

Bona. Dear brother, how ſhall *Bona* be reveng'd,
But by thy help to this diſtreſſed Queen?

Queen. Renowned Prince, how ſhall poor *Henry* live,

Unleſs

Unleſs thou reſcue him from foul deſpair?

Bona. My quarrel and this *Engliſh* Queen's are one.

War. And mine fair lady *Bona*, joins with yours.

K. *Lew.* And mine, with hers, and thine, and *Margaret*'s.
Therefore at laſt I firmly am reſolv'd
You ſhall have aid.

Queen. Let me give humble thanks for all at once.

K. *Lew.* Then *England*'s meſſenger return in poſt,
And tell falſe *Edward*, thy ſuppoſed King,
That *Lewis* of *France* is ſending over maskers
To revel it with him and his new bride.
Thou ſeeſt what's paſt, go fear thy King withal.

Bona. Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower ſhortly,
I wear the willow garland for his ſake.

Queen. Tell him, my mourning weeds are laid aſide,
And I am ready to put armor on.

War. Tell him from me, that he hath done me wrong,
And therefore I'll uncrown him ere't be long.
There's thy reward, be gone. [*Exit Poſt.*

K. *Lew.* But *Warwick*,
Thou and *Oxford* with five thouſand men
Shall croſs the ſeas, and bid falſe *Edward* battel:
And as occaſion ſerves, this noble Queen
And Prince ſhall follow with a freſh ſupply.
Yet ere thou go, but anſwer me one doubt:
What Pledge have we of thy firm loyalty?

War. This ſhall aſſure my conſtant loyalty,
That if our Queen and this young Prince agree,
I'll join my eldeſt daughter and my joy
To him forthwith, in holy wedlock bands.

Queen. Yes I agree, and thank you for your motion.
Son *Edward*, ſhe is fair and virtuous,
Therefore delay not, give thy hand to *Warwick*,

And

And with thy hand, thy faith irrevocable,
That only *Warwick*'s daughter ſhall be thine.

Prince. Yes, I accept her, for ſhe well deſerves it:
And here to pledge my vow, I give my hand.
[*He gives his hand to* Warwick.

K. *Lew.* Why ſtay we now? theſe ſoldiers ſhall be levy'd,
And thou lord *Bourbon*, our high admiral,
Shall waft them over with our royal fleet.
I long 'till *Edward* fall by war's miſchance,
For mocking marriage with a dame of *France*.
[*Exeunt.* *Manet* Warwick.

War. I came from *Edward* as ambaſſador,
But I return his ſworn and mortal foe:
Matter of marriage was the charge he gave me,
But dreadful war ſhall anſwer his demand.
Had he none elſe to make a ſtale but me?
Then none but I ſhall turn his jeſt to ſorrow.
I was the chief that rais'd him to the crown,
And I'll be chief to bring him down again:
Not that I pity *Henry*'s miſery,
But ſeek revenge on *Edward*'s mockery. [*Exit.*

ACT IV. SCENE I.

Changes to England.

Enter Glouceſter, Clarence, Somerſet *and* Montague.

GLOUCESTER.

NOW tell me, brother *Clarence*, what think you
Of this new marriage with the lady *Gray*?
Hath not our brother made a worthy choice?
Clar. Alas, you know 'tis far from hence to *France*:
How could he ſtay 'till *Warwick* made return?
Som. My lords, forbear this talk: here comes the King.

Flouriſh. Enter King Edward, *Lady* Gray *as Queen*, Pembroke, Stafford, *and* Haſtings: *Four ſtand on one ſide, and four on the other.*

Glo. And his well-choſen bride.
Clar. I mind to tell him plainly what I think.
K. *Edw.* Now brother *Clarence*, how like you our choice,
That you ſtand penſive as half malecontent?
Clar. As well as *Lewis* of *France*, or th' Earl of *Warwick*,
Which are ſo weak of courage, and in judgment,
That they'll take no offence at our abuſe.
K. *Edw.* Suppoſe they take offence without a cauſe:
They are but *Lewis* and *Warwick*, I am *Edward*,
Your King and *Warwick*'s, and muſt have my will.
Glo. And you ſhall have your will, becauſe our King.
Yet haſty marriage ſeldom proveth well.

K. *Edw.*

K. *Edw.* Yea, brother *Richard*, you offended too?

Glo. Not I; no: God forbid that I ſhould wiſh
Them ſevered whom God hath join'd together.
Pity to ſunder them, that yoak ſo well.

K. *Edw.* Setting your ſcorns and your miſlike aſide,
Tell me ſome reaſon why the lady *Gray*
Should not become my wife, and *England*'s Queen?
And you too, *Somerſet* and *Montague*,
Speak freely what you think.

Clar. Then this is my opinion; that King *Lewis*
Becomes your enemy, for mocking him
About the marriage of the lady *Bona*.

Glo. And *Warwick*, doing what you gave in charge,
Is now diſhonoured by this new marriage.

K. *Edw.* What if both *Lewis* and *Warwick* be appeas'd,
By ſuch invention as I can deviſe?

Mont. Yet to have join'd with *France* in ſuch alliance,
Would more have ſtrengthen'd this our commonwealth
'Gainſt foreign ſtorms, than any home-bred marriage.

Haſt. Why, knows not *Montague* that of it ſelf
England is ſafe, if true within it ſelf?

Mont. Yes, but the ſafer when 'tis back'd with *France*.

Haſt. 'Tis better uſing *France*, than truſting *France*.
Let us be back'd with God, and with the ſeas,
Which he hath giv'n for fence impregnable,
And with their helps alone defend our ſelves:
In them, and in our ſelves, our ſafety lyes.

Clar. For this one ſpeech, lord *Haſtings* well deſerves
To have the heir of the lord *Hungerford*.

K. *Edw.* Ay, what of that? it was my will and grant,
And for this once my will ſhall ſtand for law.

Glo. And yet methinks your grace hath not done well,
To give the heir and daughter of lord *Scales*

Unto the brother of your loving bride;
She better would have fitted me or *Clarence*;
But in your bride you bury brotherhood.

Clar. Or elſe you would not have beſtow'd the heir
Of the lord *Bonvill* on your new wife's ſon,
And leave your brothers to go ſpeed elſewhere.

K. *Edw.* Alas, poor *Clarence!* is it for a wife
That thou art malecontent? I will provide thee.

Clar. In chuſing for your ſelf, you ſhew'd your judgment;
Which being ſhallow, you ſhall give me leave
To play the broker in mine own behalf;
And to that end I ſhortly mind to leave you.

K. *Edw.* Leave me, or tarry, *Edward* will be King;
And not be ty'd unto his brother's will.

L. *Gray.* My lords, before it pleas'd his Majeſty
To raiſe my ſtate to title of a Queen,
Do me but right, and you muſt all confeſs
That I was not ignoble of deſcent,
And meaner than my ſelf have had like fortune.
But as this title honours me and mine,
So your diſlikes, to whom I would be pleaſing,
Do cloud my joys with danger and with ſorrow.

K. *Edw.* My love, forbear to fawn upon their frowns;
What danger or what ſorrow can befall thee,
So long as *Edward* is thy conſtant friend,
And their true Sov'raign, whom they muſt obey?
Nay whom they ſhall obey, and love thee too,
Unleſs they ſeek for hatred at my hands:
Which if they do, yet will I keep thee ſafe,
And they ſhall feel the vengeance of my wrath.

Glo. I hear, yet ſay not much, but think the more.

SCENE

SCENE II.

Enter a Poſt.

K. *Edw.* Now meſſenger, what letters or what news from *France?*

Poſt. My Soveraign Liege, no letters and few words,
But ſuch as I (without your ſpecial pardon)
Dare not relate.

K. *Edw.* Go to, we pardon thee:
So tell their words, as near as thou canſt gueſs them.
What anſwer makes King *Lewis* to our letters?

Poſt. At my depart, theſe were his very words;
Go tell falſe *Edward,* thy ſuppoſed King,
That *Lewis* of *France* is ſending over maskers
To revel it with him and his new bride.

K. *Edw.* Is *Lewis* ſo brave? belike he thinks me *Henry.*
But what ſaid lady *Bona* to my marriage?

Poſt. Theſe were her words, utter'd with mild diſdain:
Tell him, in hope he'll prove a widower ſhortly,
I'll wear the willow garland for his ſake.

K. *Edw.* I blame not her, ſhe could ſay little leſs;
She had the wrong. But what ſaid *Henry*'s Queen?
For ſo I heard that ſhe was there in place.

Poſt. Tell him (quoth ſhe) my mourning weeds are done,
And I am ready to put armour on.

K. *Edw.* Belike ſhe minds to play the *Amazon.*
But what ſaid *Warwick* to theſe injuries?

Poſt. He, more incens'd againſt your Majeſty
Than all the reſt, diſcharg'd me with theſe words;
Tell him from me that he hath done me wrong,

And

And therefore I'll uncrown him ere't be long.

K. *Edw.* Ha! durſt the traitor breath out ſo proud words?
Well, I will arm me, being thus fore-warn'd:
They ſhall have wars, and pay for their preſumption.
But ſay, is *Warwick* friends with *Margaret?*

Poſt. Ay, gracious Sov'raign, they're ſo link'd in friendſhip,
The young Prince *Edward* marries *Warwick*'s daughter.

Clar. Belike the elder; *Clarence* will have the younger.
Now brother King farewel, and ſit you faſt,
For I will hence to *Warwick*'s other daughter,
That though I want a kingdom, yet in marriage
I may not prove inferior to your ſelf.
You that love me and *Warwick*, follow me.

[*Exit* Clarence, *and* Somerſet *follows.*

Glo. Not I: my thoughts aim at a further matter:
I ſtay not for love of *Edward*, but the crown. [*Aſide.*

K. *Edw. Clarence* and *Somerſet* both gone to *Warwick?*
Yet am I arm'd againſt the worſt can happen;
And haſte is needful in this deſp'rate caſe!
Pembroke and *Stafford*, you in our behalf
Go levy men, and make prepare for war;
They are already, or will ſoon be landed:
My ſelf in perſon will ſtraight follow you.

[*Ex.* Pembroke *and* Stafford.

But ere I go, *Haſtings* and *Montague*
Reſolve my doubt: you twain of all the reſt
Are near to *Warwick* by blood and by alliance;
Tell me if you love *Warwick* more than me?
If it be ſo, then both depart to him:
I rather wiſh you foes than hollow friends.
But if you mind to hold your true obedience,
Give me aſſurance with ſome friendly vow,

That

That I may never have you in ſuſpect.
Mon. So God help *Montague*, as he proves true.
Haſt. And *Haſtings*, as he favours *Edward*'s cauſe.
K. *Edw.* Now, brother *Richard*, will you ſtand by us?
Glo. Ay, in deſpight of all that ſhall withſtand you.
K. *Edw.* Why ſo, then am I ſure of victory.
Now therefore let us hence, and loſe no hour
'Till we meet *Warwick* with his foreign power. [*Exe.*

SCENE III.

Enter Warwick *and* Oxford *in* England, *with* French *Soldiers.*

War. TRUST me, my lord, all hitherto goes well,
The common people ſwarm by numbers to us.

Enter Clarence *and* Somerſet.

But ſee where *Somerſet* and *Clarence* come:
Speak ſuddenly my lords, are we all friends?
Clar. Fear not that, my lord.
War. Then gentle *Clarence*, welcome unto *Warwick*,
And welcome *Somerſet*: I hold it cowardize
To reſt miſtruſtful, where a noble heart
Hath pawn'd an open hand in ſign of love.
Elſe might I think, that *Clarence*, *Edward*'s brother,
Were but a feigned friend to our proceedings.
But welcome friend, my daughter ſhall be thine.
And now what reſts, but in night's coverture,
Thy brother being careleſly encamp'd,
His ſoldiers lurking in the town about,
And but attended by a ſimple guard,

We

We may ſurprize and take him at our pleaſure?
Our ſcouts have found th' adventure very eaſie:
That as *Ulyſſes* and ſtout *Diomede*
With ſlight and manhood ſtole to *Rheſus'* Tents,
And brought from thence the *Thracian* fatal ſteeds;
So we, well cover'd with the night's black mantle,
At unawares may beat down *Edward's* guard,
And ſeize himſelf: I ſay not, ſlaughter him,
For I intend but only to ſurprize him.
You that will follow me to this attempt,
Applaud the name of *Henry* with your leader.

[*They all cry* Henry.

Why then, let's on our way in ſilent ſort,
For *Warwick* and his friends, God and Saint *George*. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

Enter the Watchmen to guard the King's Tent.

1 *Watch.* Come on my maſters, each man take his ſtand:
The King by this has ſet him down to ſleep.

2 *Watch.* What, will he not to bed?

1 *Watch.* Why no; for he hath made a ſolemn vow,
Never to lye and take his natural reſt,
'Till *Warwick*, or himſelf, be quite ſuppreſt.

2 *Watch.* To-morrow then belike ſhall be the day,
If *Warwick* be ſo near as men report.

3 *Watch.* But ſay, I pray, what nobleman is that
That with the King here reſteth in his tent?

1 *Watch.* 'Tis the lord *Haſtings*, the King's chiefeſt friend.

3 *Watch.* O, is it ſo? but why commands the King
That his chief followers lodge in towns about him,

While he himſelf keeps in the cold field?

2 *Watch.* 'Tis the more honour, becauſe the more dangerous.

3 *Watch.* Ay, but give me worſhip and quietneſs,
I like it better than a dang'rous honour.
If *Warwick* knew in what eſtate he ſtands,
'Tis to be doubted he would waken him.

1 *Watch.* Unleſs our halberds did ſhut up his paſſage.

2 *Watch.* Ay; wherefore elſe guard we this royal tent,
But to defend his perſon from night-foes?

Enter Warwick, Clarence, Oxford, Somerſet, *and* French *Soldiers, ſilent all.*

War. This is his tent, and ſee where ſtands his guard:
Courage, my maſters: honour now or never!
But follow me, and *Edward* ſhall be ours.

1 *Watch.* Who goes there?

2 *Watch.* Stay, or thou dieſt.

[Warwick *and the reſt cry all,* Warwick! Warwick! *and ſet upon the Guard, who fly, crying Arms! Arms!* Warwick *and the reſt following them.*

The Drum beating, and Trumpets ſounding,

Enter Warwick, Somerſet, *and the reſt, bringing the King out in a gown, ſitting in a chair;* Glo'ſter *and* Haſtings *flying over the Stage.*

Som. What are they that fly there?

War. *Richard* and *Haſtings*; let them go, here is
The Duke.

K. *Edw.* The Duke! why *Warwick,* when we parted
Thou call'dſt me King?

War. Ay, but the caſe is alter'd.
When you diſgrac'd me in my Ambaſſade,

Then I degraded you from being King,
And come now to create you Duke of *York*.
Alas, how ſhould you govern any kingdom,
That know not how to uſe ambaſſadors,
Nor how to be contented with one wife,
Nor how to uſe your brothers brotherly,
Nor how to ſtudy for the people's welfare,
Nor how to ſhrowd your ſelf from enemies?

K. *Edw.* Brother of *Clarence*, and art thou here too?
Nay then I ſee that *Edward* muſt needs down.
Yet *Warwick*, in deſpight of all miſchance,
Of thee thy ſelf, and all thy complices,
Edward will always bear himſelf as King:
Though fortune's malice overthrow my ſtate,
My mind exceeds the compaſs of her wheel.

War. Then for his mind be *Edward England*'s King;
[*Takes off his Crown.*
But *Henry* now ſhall wear the *Engliſh* crown,
And be true King indeed; thou but a ſhadow.
My lord of *Somerſet*, at my requeſt,
See that forthwith Duke *Edward* be convey'd
Unto my brother, Archbiſhop of *York*:
When I have fought with *Pembroke* and his fellows,
I'll follow you, and tell you what reply
Lewis and lady *Bona* ſent to him:
Now for a while farewel, good Duke of *York*.
[*They lead him out forcibly.*

K. *Edw.* What fates impoſe, that men muſt needs abide;
It boots not to reſiſt both wind and tide. [*Exeunt.*

Oxf. What now remains, my lords, for us to do,
But march to *London* with our ſoldiers?

War. Ay, that's the firſt thing that we have to do,

To

To free King *Henry* from impriſonment,
And ſee him ſeated in the regal Throne. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

Enter Rivers, *and the Lady* Gray.

Riv. MADAM, what makes you in this ſudden change?
La. Gray. Why brother *Rivers*, are you yet to learn
What late misfortune has befaln King *Edward?*
Riv. What! loſs of ſome pitcht battel againſt *Warwick?*
La. Gray. No, but the loſs of his own royal perſon.
Riv. Then is my Soveraign ſlain?
La. Gray. Ay, almoſt ſlain, for he is taken priſoner.
Either betray'd by falſhood of his guard,
Or by his foe ſurpriz'd at unawares:
And as I further have to underſtand,
Is now committed to the Biſhop of *York*,
Fell *Warwick*'s brother, and by that our foe.
Riv. Theſe news I muſt confeſs are full of grief:
Yet, gracious madam, bear it as you may;
Warwick may loſe, that now hath won the day.
La. Gray. 'Till then fair hope muſt hinder life's decay.
And I the rather wean me from deſpair,
For love of *Edward*'s Off-ſpring in my womb:
This is't that makes me bridle in my paſſion,
And bear with mildneſs my misfortune's croſs:
Ay, ay, for this I draw in many a tear,
And ſtop the riſing of blood-ſucking ſighs,
Leſt with my ſighs or tears I blaſt or drown
King *Edward*'s fruit, true heir to th' *Engliſh* crown.
Riv. But madam, where is *Warwick* then become?
La. Gray. I am inform'd that he comes towards *London*,

To ſet the crown once more on *Henry*'s head:
Gueſs thou the reſt, King *Edward*'s friends muſt down.
But to prevent the tyrant's violence,
(For truſt not him that once hath broken faith,)
I'll hence forthwith unto the ſanctuary,
To ſave at leaſt the heir of *Edward*'s right.
There ſhall I reſt ſecure from force and fraud:
Come therefore let us fly, while we may fly;
If *Warwick* take us, we are ſure to die. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI.

In *YORKSHIRE.*

Enter Glouceſter, *Lord* Haſtings, *and Sir* William Stanley.

Glo. NOW my lord *Haſtings*, and Sir *William Stanley*,
Leave off to wonder why I drew you hither,
Into this chiefeſt thicket of the park.
Thus ſtands the caſe; you know our King, my brother,
Is pris'ner to the biſhop, at whoſe hands
He hath good uſage and great liberty,
And often but attended with weak guard
Comes hunting this way to diſport himſelf.
I have advertis'd him by ſecret means,
That if about this hour he make this way
Under the colour of his uſual game,
He ſhall here find his friends with horſe and men
To ſet him free from his captivity,

Enter King Edward, *and a Huntſman with him.*

Hunt. This way, my lord, for this way lyes the game.
K. *Edw.* Nay this way, man, ſee where the huntſmen ſtand.
Now brother *Glo'ſter*, *Haſtings* and the reſt,

Stand

Stand you thus close to steal the bishop's deer?
Glo. Brother, the time and case requireth haste,
Your horse stands ready at the park-corner.
K. *Edw.* But whither shall we then?
Hast. To *Lyn*, my lord,
And ship from thence to *Flanders*.
Glo. Well guest, believe me, for that was my meaniug.
K. *Edw.* *Stanley*, I will requite thy forwardness.
Glo. But wherefore stay we? 'tis no time to talk.
K. *Edw.* Huntsman, what say'st thou? wilt thou go along?
Hunt. Better do so, than tarry and be hang'd.
Glo. Come then away, let's ha' no more ado.
K. *Edw.* Bishop farewel, shield thee from *Warwick*'s frown,
And pray that I may repossess the crown. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

LONDON.

Enter King Henry, Clarence, Warwick, Somerset, *young* Richmond, Oxford, Montague, *and Lieutenant of the* Tower.

K. *Henry.* MR. Lieutenant, now that God and friends
Have shaken *Edward* from the regal seat,
And turn'd my captive state to liberty,
My fear to hope, my sorrows unto joys;
At our enlargement what are thy due fees?
Lieu. Subjects may challenge nothing of their Sov'raigns,
But if an humble prayer may prevail,
I then crave pardon of your Majesty.
K. *Henry.* For what, lieutenant? for well using me?
Nay, be thou sure I'll well requite thy kindness,
For that it made imprisonment a pleasure:
Ay, such a pleasure as incaged birds

Conceive, when after many moody thoughts,
At laſt, by notes of houſhold harmony,
They quite forget their loſs of liberty.
But *Warwick*, after God, thou ſett'ſt me free,
And chiefly therefore I thank God and thee:
He was the author, thou the inſtrument.
Therefore that I may conquer fortune's ſpight,
By living low, where fortune cannot hurt me,
And that the people of this bleſſed land
May not be puniſh'd with my thwarting ſtars;
Warwick, although my head ſtill wear the crown,
I here reſign my government to thee,
For thou art fortunate in all thy deeds.

War. Your grace hath ſtill been fam'd for virtuous,
And now may ſeem as wiſe as virtuous,
By ſpying and avoiding fortune's malice,
For few men rightly temper with the ſtars:
Yet in this one thing let me blame your grace,
For chuſing me when *Clarence* is in place.

Clar. No, *Warwick*, thou art worthy of the ſway,
To whom the heav'ns in thy nativity
Adjudg'd an olive branch and lawrel crown,
As likely to be bleſt in peace and war;
And therefore I yield thee my free conſent.

War. And I chuſe *Clarence* only for Protector.

K. *Henry.* *Warwick* and *Clarence*, give me both your hands.
Now join your hands, and with your hands, your hearts,
That no diſſention hinder government.
I make you both Protectors of this land,
While I my ſelf will lead a private life;
And in devotion ſpend my latter days,
To ſin's rebuke and my creator's praiſe.

War. What anſwers *Clarence* to his Sov'raign's will?

Clar.

Clar. That he conſents, if *Warwick* yield conſent,
For on thy fortune I repoſe my ſelf.
War. Why then, though loth, yet muſt I be content:
We'll yoak together, like a double ſhadow
To *Henry*'s body, and ſupply his place;
I mean, in bearing weight of government,
While he enjoys the honour, and his eaſe.
And *Clarence*, now then it is more than needful
Forthwith that *Edward* be pronounc'd a traitor,
And all his lands and goods confiſcated.
Clar. What elſe? and that ſucceſſion be determin'd.
War. Ay, therein *Clarence* ſhall not want his part.
K. *Henry.* But with the firſt of all our chief affairs,
Let me intreat, for I command no more,
That *Margaret* your Queen and my ſon *Edward*
Be ſent for, to return from *France* with ſpeed.
For 'till I ſee them here, by doubtful fear
My joy of liberty is half eclips'd.
Clar. It ſhall be done, my Sov'raign, with all ſpeed.
K. *Henry.* My lord of *Somerſet*, what youth is that
Of whom you ſeem to have ſo tender care?
Som. My liege, it is young *Henry*, Earl of *Richmond.*
K. *Henry.* Come hither, *England*'s hope: if ſecret powers
[*Lays his hand on his head.*
Suggeſt but truth to my divining thoughts,
This pretty lad will prove our country's bliſs.
His looks are full of peaceful Majeſty,
His head by nature fram'd to wear a crown,
His hand to wield a ſcepter, and himſelf
Likely in time to bleſs a regal throne.
Make much of him, my lords; for this is he
Muſt help you more, than you are hurt by me.

Enter

Enter a Poſt.

War. What news, my friend?

Poſt. That *Edward* is eſcaped from your brother,
And fled, as he hears ſince, to *Burgundy*.

War. Unſavory news; but how made he eſcape?

Poſt. He was convey'd by *Richard* Duke of *Glo'ſter*,
And the lord *Haſtings*, who attended him
In ſecret ambuſh on the foreſt ſide,
And from the biſhop's huntſmen reſcu'd him:
For hunting was his daily exerciſe.

War. My brother was too careleſs of his charge.
But let us hence, my Sov'raign, to provide
A ſalve for any ſore that may betide. [*Exeunt.*

Manet Somerſet, Richmond, *and* Oxford.

Som. My lord, I like not of this flight of *Edward*'s:
For doubtleſs *Burgundy* will yield him help,
And we ſhall have more wars before't be long.
As *Henry*'s late preſaging prophecy
Did glad my heart, with hope of this young *Richmond*;
So doth my heart miſ-give me, in theſe conflicts
What may befal him, to his harm and ours.
Therefore, lord *Oxford*, to prevent the worſt,
Forthwith we'll ſend him hence to *Britany*,
'Till ſtorms be paſt of civil enmity.

Oxf. Ay, for if *Edward* re-poſſeſs the crown,
'Tis like that *Richmond* with the reſt ſhall down.

Som. It ſhall be ſo; he ſhall to *Britany*.
Come therefore, let's about it ſpeedily. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE

SCENE VIII.

Changes to YORK.

Enter King Edward, Gloceſter, Haſtings, *and Soldiers.*

K. *Edw.* NOW brother *Richard*, *Haſtings*, and the reſt,
Yet thus far Fortune maketh us amends,
And ſays, that once more I ſhall enterchange
My wained ſtate for *Henry*'s regal crown.
Well have we paſs'd, and now repaſs'd the ſeas,
And brought deſired help from *Burgundy*.
What then remains, we being thus arriv'd
From *Ravenſpurg*, before the gates of *York*,
But that we enter, as into our Dukedom?

Glo. The gates made faſt! brother, I like not this.
For many men that ſtumble at the threſhold,
Are well foretold that danger lurks within.

K. *Edw.* Tuſh man, aboadments muſt not now affright us:
By fair or foul means we muſt enter in,
For hither will our friends repair to us.

Haſt. My liege, I'll knock once more to ſummon them.

Enter on the Walls the Mayor of York *and his Brethren.*

Mayor. My lords, we were fore-warned of your coming,
And ſhut the gates for ſafety of our ſelves;
For now we owe allegiance unto *Henry*.

K. *Edw.* But maſter Mayor, if *Henry* be your King,
Yet *Edward* at the leaſt is Duke of *York*.

Mayor. True, my good lord, I know you for no leſs.

K. *Edw.* Why, and I challenge nothing but my Dukedom,
As being well content with that alone.

Glo. But when the fox has once got in his noſe,

He'll ſoon find means to make the body follow. [*Aſide.*

Haſt. Why maſter Mayor, why ſtand you in a doubt?
Open the gates, we are King *Henry*'s friends.

Mayor. Ay, ſay you ſo? the gates ſhall then be open'd.
[*He deſcends.*

Glo. A wiſe ſtout captain, and perſuaded ſoon.

Haſt. The good old man would fain that all were well,
So 'twere not long of him; but being enter'd,
I doubt not, I, but we ſhall ſoon perſuade
Both him and all his brothers unto reaſon.

Enter the Mayor and two Aldermen.

K. *Edw.* So, maſter Mayor; theſe gates muſt not be ſhut
But in the night, or in the time of war.
What, fear not man, but yield me up the keys,
[*Takes his Keys.*
For *Edward* will defend the town and thee,
And all thoſe friends that deign to follow me.

March. Enter Montgomery, *with Drum and Soldiers.*

Glo. Brother, this is Sir *John Montgomery*,
Our truſty friend, unleſs I be deceiv'd.

K. *Edw.* Welcome, Sir *John*; but why come you in arms?

Mont. To help King *Edward* in his time of ſtorm,
As every loyal ſubject ought to do.

K. *Edw.* Thanks, good *Montgom'ry:* but we now forget
Our title to the crown, and only claim
Our Dukedom, 'till God pleaſe to ſend the reſt.

Mont. Then fare you well, for I will hence again;
I came to ſerve a King, and not a Duke:
Drummer ſtrike up, and let us march away.
[*The Drum begins a March.*

K. *Edw.* Nay ſtay, Sir *John*, a while, and we'll debate

By

By what ſafe means the crown may be recover'd.

Mont. What talk you of debating? in few words,
If you'll not here proclaim your ſelf our King,
I'll leave you to your fortune, and be gone
To keep them back that come to ſuccour you.
Why ſhall we fight, if you pretend no title?

Glo. Why brother, wherefore ſtand you on nice points?

K. *Edw.* When we grow ſtronger, then we'll make our claim:
'Till then 'tis wiſdom to conceal our meaning.

Haſt. Away with ſcrupulous wit, now arms muſt rule.

Glo. And fearleſs minds climb ſooneſt unto crowns.
Brother, we will proclaim you out of hand,
The bruit thereof will bring you many friends.

K. *Edw.* Then be it as you will; for 'tis my right,
And *Henry* but uſurps the diadem.

Mont. Ay, now my Sov'raign ſpeaketh like himſelf,
And now will I be *Edward*'s champion.

Haſt. Sound trumpet, *Edward* ſhall be here proclaim'd:
Come fellow-ſoldier, make thou proclamation. [*Flouriſh.*

Sold. Edward *the fourth, by the grace of God, King of* England *and* France, *and lord of* Ireland, *&c.*

Mont. And whoſoe'er gain-ſays King *Edward*'s right,
By this I challenge him to ſingle fight.
[*Throws down his Gauntlet.*

All. Long live *Edward* the fourth!

K. *Edw.* Thanks, brave *Montgomery*; and thanks to all.
If fortune ſerve me, I'll requite this kindneſs.
Now for this night let's harbour here at *York:*
And when the morning ſun ſhall raiſe his car
Above the border of this horizon,
We'll forward towards *Warwick* and his mates;
For well I wot that *Henry* is no ſoldier.
Ah froward *Clarence,* evil it beſeems thee

To flatter *Henry*, and forſake thy brother!
Yet as we may, we'll meet both thee and *Warwick*.
Come on brave ſoldiers, doubt not of the day;
And that once gotten, doubt not of large pay. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IX.

Changes again to LONDON.

Enter King Henry, Warwick, Montague, Clarence, Oxford, *and* Somerſet.

War. WHAT counſel, lords? *Edward* from *Belgia*,
With haſty *Germans*, and blunt *Hollanders*,
Hath paſs'd in ſafety through the narrow ſeas,
And with his troops doth march amain to *London*,
And many giddy people flock to him.

K. *Henry*. Let's levy men, and beat him back again.

Clar. A little fire is quickly trodden out,
Which being ſuffer'd, rivers cannot quench.

War. In *Warwickſhire* I have true-hearted friends,
Not mutinous in peace, yet bold in war,
Thoſe will I muſter up; and thou, Son *Clarence*,
Shalt ſtir, in *Suffolk*, *Norfolk*, and in *Kent*,
The knights and gentlemen to come with thee.
Thou brother *Montague*, in *Buckingham*,
Northampton, and in *Leiceſterſhire* ſhalt find
Men well inclin'd to hear what thou command'ſt.
And thou, brave *Oxford*, wondrous well belov'd,
In *Oxfordſhire* ſhalt muſter up thy friends.
My Sov'raign, with the loving citizens,
(Like to his Iſland girt with th' Ocean,
Or modeſt *Dian* circled with her nymphs,)
Shall reſt in *London*, 'till we come to him:

Fair lords take leave, and ſtand not to reply.
Farewel my Soveraign,

K. *Henry.* Farewel my *Hector*, and my *Troy*'s true hope.

Clar. In ſign of truth, I kiſs your Highneſs' hand.

K. *Henry.* Well-minded *Clarence*, be thou fortunate.

Mont. Comfort, my lord, and ſo I take my leave.

Oxf. And thus I ſeal my truth, and bid adieu.

K. *Henry.* Sweet *Oxford*, and my loving *Montague*,
And all at once, once more a happy farewel.

War. Farewel, ſweet lords; let's meet at *Coventry*. [*Exeunt.*

K. *Henry.* Here at the palace will I reſt a while.
Couſin of *Exeter*, what thinks your lordſhip?
Methinks the pow'r that *Edward* hath in field
Should not be able to encounter mine.

Exe. The doubt is, that he will ſeduce the reſt.

K. *Henry.* That's not my fear, my meed hath got me fame:
'I have not ſtopt mine ears to their demands,
'Nor poſted off their ſuits with ſlow delays;
'My pity hath been balm to heal their wounds,
'My mildneſs hath allay'd their ſwelling griefs,
'My mercy dry'd their water-flowing tears.
'I have not been deſirous of their wealth,
'Nor much oppreſt them with great ſubſidies,
'Nor forward of revenge, though they much err'd.
Then why ſhould they love *Edward* more than me?
No, *Exeter*, theſe graces challenge grace:
And when the lion fawns upon the lamb,
The lamb will never ceaſe to follow him.

[*Shout within. A* Lancaſter! *a* Lancaſter!

Exe. Hark, hark, my lord, what ſhouts are theſe?

Enter King Edward *and his Soldiers*

K. *Edw.* Seize on the ſhame-fac'd *Henry*, bear him hence,

And

And once again proclaim us King of *England*.
You are the fount that make ſmall brooks to flow,
Now ſtops thy ſpring, my ſea ſhall ſuck them dry,
And ſwell ſo much the higher, by their ebb.
Hence with him to the *Tower*, let him not ſpeak.
[*Ex. with King* Henry.
And lords, to *Coventry* bend we our courſe,
Where peremptory *Warwick* now remains.
The ſun ſhines hot, and if we uſe delay
Cold biting winter mars our hop'd-for hay.
Glo. Away betimes before his forces join,
And take the great-grown traitor unawares:
Brave warriors, march amain towards *Coventry*. [*Exeunt.*

ACT V. SCENE I.

Enter Warwick, *the Mayor of* Coventry, *two Meſſengers and others, upon the Walls.*

WARWICK.

WHERE is the poſt that came from valiant *Oxford*?
How far hence is thy lord, mine honeſt fellow?
1 *Meſ.* By this at *Dunſmore*, marching hitherward.
War. How far off is our brother *Montague*?
Where is the poſt that came from *Montague*?
2 *Meſ.* By this at *Daintry*, with a puiſſant troop.

Enter Somervile.

War. Say *Somervile*, what ſays my loving ſon?

And by thy gueſs how nigh is *Clarence* now?
Somerv. At *Southam* I did leave him with his forces,
And do expect him here ſome two hours hence.
War. Then *Clarence* is at hand, I hear his drum.
Somerv. It is not his, my lord: here *Southam* lyes:
The drum your honour hears, marcheth from *Warwick.*
War. Who ſhould that be? belike, unlook'd-for friends.
Somerv. They are at hand, and you ſhall quickly know.

March. Flouriſh. Enter King Edward, Gloceſter, *and Soldiers.*

K. *Edw.* Go, trumpet, to the walls, and ſound a parle.
Glo. See how the ſurly *Warwick* mans the wall.
War. Oh unbid ſpight! is ſportful *Edward* come?
Where ſlept our ſcouts, or how are they ſeduc'd,
That we could hear no news of his repair?
K. *Edw.* Now *Warwick*, wilt thou ope the city gates,
Speak gentle words, and humbly bend thy knee,
Call *Edward* King, and at his hands beg mercy?
And he ſhall pardon thee theſe outrages.
War. Nay rather, wilt thou draw thy forces hence,
Confeſs who ſet thee up and pluck'd thee down,
Call *Warwick* patron, and be penitent?
And thou ſhalt ſtill remain the Duke of *York.*
Glo. I thought at leaſt he would have ſaid the King,
Or did he make the jeſt againſt his will?
War. Is not a Dukedom, Sir, a goodly gift?
Glo. Ay by my faith, for a poor Earl to give:
I'll do thee ſervice for ſo good a gift.
War. 'Twas I that gave the kingdom to thy brother.
K. *Edw.* Why then 'tis mine, if but by *Warwick*'s gift.
War. Thou art no *Atlas* for ſo great a weight:
And weakling, *Warwick* takes his gift again,
And *Henry* is my King, *Warwick* his ſubject.

K. *Edw.*

K. *Edw.* But *Warwick*'s King is *Edward*'s priſoner:
And gallant *Warwick*, do but anſwer this,
What is the body when the head is off?

Glo. Alas, that *Warwick* had no more fore-caſt,
But while he thought to ſteal the ſingle ten,
The King was ſlily finger'd from the deck:
You left poor *Henry* at the biſhop's palace,
And ten to one you'll meet him in the *Tower*.

K. *Edw.* 'Tis even ſo, yet you are *Warwick* ſtill.

Glo. Come *Warwick*, take the time, kneel down, kneel down:
Nay when? ſtrike now, or elſe the iron cools.

War. I'd rather chop this hand off at a blow,
And with the other fling it at thy face,
Than bear ſo low a ſail to ſtrike to thee.

K. *Edw.* Sail how thou canſt, have wind and tide thy friend,
This hand, faſt wound about thy coal-black hair,
Shall, while thy head is warm and new cut off,
Write in the duſt this ſentence with thy blood,
Wind-changing Warwick *now can change no more.*

SCENE II.

Enter Oxford, *with Drum and Colours.*

War. O chearful colours, ſee where *Oxford* comes!

Oxf. Oxford! Oxford! for *Lancaſter!*

Glo. The gates are open, let us enter too.

K. *Edw.* So other foes may ſet upon our backs.
Stand we in good array; for they no doubt
Will iſſue out again and bid us battel:
If not, the city being of ſmall defence,
We'll quickly rouze the traitors in the ſame.

War. O welcome *Oxford*, for we want thy help.

Enter

Enter Montague, *with Drum and Colours.*

Mont. Montague! Montague! for *Lancaſter.*

Glo. Thou and thy brother both ſhall buy this treaſon
Ev'n with the deareſt blood your bodies bear.

K. *Edw.* The harder match'd, the greater victory,
My mind preſageth happy gain and conqueſt.

Enter Somerſet, *with Drum and Colours.*

Som. Somerſet! Somerſet! for *Lancaſter.*

Glo. Two of thy name, both Dukes of *Somerſet,*
Have ſold their lives unto the houſe of *York,*
And thou ſhalt be the third, if this ſword hold.

Enter Clarence, *with Drum and Colours.*

War. And lo where *George* of *Clarence* ſweeps along,
Of force enough to bid his brother battel:
With whom an upright zeal to right prevails
More than the nature of a brother's love.
Come *Clarence,* come; thou wilt, if *Warwick* call.

Clar. Father of *Warwick,* know you what this means?
Look here, I throw my infamy at thee:
I will not ruinate my father's houſe,
Who gave his blood to lime the ſtones together,
And ſet up *Lancaſter.* Why, trow'ſt thou, *Warwick,*
That *Clarence* is ſo harſh, ſo blunt, unnatural,
To bend the fatal inſtruments of war
Againſt his brother, and his lawful King?
Perhaps thou wilt object my holy oath:
To keep that oath were more impiety,
Than *Jepthah*'s, when he ſacrific'd his daughter.
I am ſo ſorry for my treſpaſs made,
That to deſerve well at my brother's hands,

I here proclaim my ſelf thy mortal foe:
With reſolution, whereſoe'er I meet thee,
(As I will meet thee, if thou ſtir abroad,)
To plague thee for thy foul miſ-leading me.
And ſo proud-hearted *Warwick* I defie thee,
And to my brother turn my bluſhing cheeks.
Pardon me, *Edward*, I will make amends:
And *Richard*, do not frown upon my faults,
For I will henceforth be no more unconſtant.

K. *Edw.* Now welcome more, and ten times more belov'd,
Than if thou never hadſt deſerv'd our hate.

Glo. Welcome, good *Clarence*, this is brother-like.

War. O paſſing traitor, perjur'd and unjuſt!

K. *Edw.* What *Wawick*, wilt thou leave the town and fight?
Or ſhall we beat the ſtones about thine ears?

War. Alas, I am not coop'd here for defence:
I will away towards *Barnet* preſently,
And bid thee battel, *Edward*, if thou dar'ſt.

K. *Edw.* Yes *Warwick*, *Edward* dares, and leads the way:
Lords to the field; St. *George* and victory. [*Exeunt.*

March. Warwick *and his Company follows.*

SCENE III.

BARNET.

Alarm and Excurſions. Enter Edward *bringing forth* Warwick *wounded.*

K. *Edw.* SO, lye thou there; die thou, and die our fear,
For *Warwick* was a bug that ſcar'd us all.
Now *Montague* ſit faſt, I ſeek for thee,
That *Warwick*'s bones may keep thine company. [*Exit.*

War.

War. Ah, who is nigh? come to me, friend, or foe,
And tell me who is victor, *York*, or *Warwick?*
Why ask I that? my mangled body ſhews,
My blood, my want of ſtrength, my ſick heart ſhews,
That I muſt yield my body to the earth,
And by my fall, the conqueſt to my foe.
Thus yields the Cedar to the ax's edge,
Whoſe arms gave ſhelter to the princely eagle,
Under whoſe ſhade the ramping lion ſlept,
Whoſe top-branch over-peer'd *Jove*'s ſpreading tree,
And kept low ſhrubs from winter's pow'rful wind.
Theſe eyes that now are dim'd with death's black veil,
Have been as piercing as the mid-day ſun,
To ſearch the ſecret treaſons of the world.
The wrinkles in my brow, now fill'd with blood,
Were lik'ned oft to kingly ſepulchres:
For who liv'd King, but I could dig his grave?
And who durſt ſmile, when *Warwick* bent his brow?
Lo, now my glory ſmear'd in duſt and blood,
My parks, my walks, my manors that I had,
Ev'n now forſake me; and of all my lands
Is nothing left me, but my body's length.
Why, what is pomp, rule, reign, but earth and duſt?
And live we how we can, yet die we muſt.

Enter Oxford *and* Somerſet.

Som. Ah *Warwick*, *Warwick*, wert thou as we are,
We might recover all our loſs again:
The Queen from *France* hath brought a puiſſant power.
Ev'n now we heard the news: ah, could'ſt thou fly!
War. Why then I would not fly.---Ah *Montague*,
If thou be there, ſweet brother, take my hand,
And with thy lips keep in my ſoul a while.

Thou lov'ſt me not; for, brother, if thou didſt,
Thy tears would waſh this cold congealed blood,
That glews my lips, and will not let me ſpeak.
Come quickly *Montague*, or I am dead.

Som. Ah *Warwick*, *Montague* hath breath'd his laſt,
And to the lateſt gaſp cry'd out for *Warwick:*
And ſaid, Commend me to my valiant brother.
And more he would have ſaid, and more he ſpoke,
Which ſounded like a cannon in a vault,
That might not be diſtinguiſh'd; but at laſt
I well might hear deliver'd with a groan,
O farewel *Warwick.*

War. Sweetly reſt his ſoul!
Fly lords and ſave your ſelves, for *Warwick* bids
You all farewel, to meet again in heaven. [*Dies.*

Oxf. Away, away, to meet the Queen's great power.

[*They bear away his Body, and Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

Flouriſh. Enter King Edward *in triumph, with* Glouceſter, Clarence, *and the reſt.*

K. *Edw.* THUS far our fortune keeps an upward courſe,
And we are grac'd with wreaths of victory.
But in the midſt of this bright-ſhining day,
I ſpy a black, ſuſpicious, threat'ning cloud,
That will encounter with our glorious ſun,
Ere he attain his eaſeful weſtern bed:
I mean, my lords, thoſe powers that the Queen
Hath rais'd in *Gallia*, have arriv'd our coaſt,
And, as we hear, march on to fight with us.

Clar. A little gale will ſoon diſperſe that cloud,
And blow it to the ſource from whence it came.

Thy very beams will dry thoſe vapours up;
For every cloud engenders not a ſtorm.

Glo. The Queen is valued thirty thouſand ſtrong,
And *Somerſet*, with *Oxford*, fled to her.
If ſhe hath time to breathe, be well aſſur'd
Her faction will be full as ſtrong as ours.

K. *Edw.* We are advertis'd by our loving friends,
That they do hold their courſe tow'rd *Tewksbury*.
We having now the beſt at *Barnet* field,
Will thither ſtraight, for willingneſs rids way:
And as we march, our ſtrength will be augmented
In every county as we go along:
Strike up the drum, cry courage, and away. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

TEWKSBURY.

March. Enter the Queen, Prince of Wales, Somerſet, Oxford, *and Soldiers.*

Queen. GREAT lords, wiſe men ne'er ſit and wail their loſs,
But chearly ſeek how to redreſs their harms.
What though the maſt be now blown over-board,
The cable broke, the holding-anchor loſt,
And half our ſailors ſwallow'd in the flood?
Yet lives our Pilot ſtill. Is't meet that he
Should leave the helm, and like a fearful lad
With tear-ful eyes add water to the ſea,
And give more ſtrength to that which hath too much?
While in his moan the ſhip ſplits on the rock,
Which induſtry and courage might have ſav'd?
Ah what a ſhame, ah what a fault were this!
Say *Warwick* was our anchor; what of that?

And *Montague* our top-maſt; what of him?
Our ſlaughter'd friends, the tackle; what of theſe?
Why is not *Oxford* here another anchor?
And *Somerſet* another goodly maſt?
The friends of *France* our ſhrouds and tacklings ſtill?
And though unskilful, why not *Ned* and I
For once allow'd the skilful pilot's charge?
We will not from the helm to ſit and weep,
But keep our courſe though the rough wind ſay no,
From ſhelves and rocks that threaten us with wrack:
As good to chide the waves, as ſpeak them fair.
And what is *Edward*, but a ruthleſs ſea?
What *Clarence*, but a quick-ſand of deceit?
And *Richard*, but a ragged fatal rock?
All theſe, the enemies to our poor bark.
Say you can ſwim; alas, 'tis but a while;
Tread on the ſand, why there you quickly ſink;
Beſtride the rock, the tide will waſh you off,
Or elſe you famiſh, that's a three-fold death.
This ſpeak I, lords, to let you underſtand,
In caſe ſome one of you would fly from us,
That there's no hop'd-for mercy with the brothers,
More than with ruthleſs waves with ſands and rocks.
Why courage then! what cannot be avoided,
'Twere childiſh weakneſs to lament, or fear.

Prince. Methinks a woman of this valiant ſpirit
Should, if a coward heard her ſpeak theſe words,
Infuſe his breaſt with magnanimity,
And make him, naked, foil a man at arms.
I ſpeak not this, as doubting any here:
For did I but ſuſpect a fearful man,
He ſhould have leave to go away betimes;
Leſt in our need he might infect another,

And

And make him of like ſpirit to himſelf.
If any ſuch be here, as God forbid,
Let him depart before we need his help.

Oxf. Women and children of ſo high a courage!
And warriors faint! why 'twere perpetual ſhame.
Oh brave young Prince! thy famous grandfather
Doth live again in thee; long may'ſt thou live,
To bear his image, and renew his glories.

Som. And he that will not fight for ſuch a hope,
Go home to bed, and like the owl by day,
If he ariſe, be mock'd and wonder'd at.

Queen. Thanks gentle *Somerſet*, ſweet *Oxford* thanks.

Prin. And take his thanks, that yet hath nothing elſe.

Enter a Meſſenger.

Meſ. Prepare you, lords, for *Edward* is at hand,
Ready to fight; therefore be reſolute.

Oxf. I thought no leſs; it is his policy
To haſte thus faſt, to find us unprovided.

Som. But he's deceiv'd, we are in readineſs.

Queen. This chears my heart, to ſee your forwardneſs.

Oxf. Here pitch our battel, hence we will not budge.

SCENE VI.

March. Enter King Edward, Gloceſter, Clarence, *and Soldiers.*

K. *Edw.* Brave followers, yonder ſtands the thorny wood,
Which, by the heav'ns aſſiſtance and your ſtrength,
Muſt by the roots be hewn up yet ere night.
I need not add more fuel to your fire,
For well I wot, ye blaze, to burn them out:
Give ſignal to the fight, and to it, lords.

Queen. Lords, Knights, and gentlemen, what I ſhould ſay

My

My tears gain-ſay; for every word I ſpeak,
Ye ſee I drink the water of my eye:
Therefore no more but this; *Henry*, your Sov'raign,
Is priſoner to the foe, his ſtate uſurp'd,
His realm a ſlaughter-houſe, his ſubjects ſlain,
His ſtatutes cancell'd, and his treaſure ſpent:
And yonder is the wolf that makes this ſpoil.
You fight in juſtice: then in God's name, lords,
Be valiant, and give ſignal to the battle.

Alarm. Retreat. Excurſions.

Re-Enter King Edward, Gloceſter, Clarence, &c. *The Queen*, Oxford, *and* Somerſet *Priſoners.*

K. *Edw.* Now here's a period of tumultuous broils.
Away with *Oxford* to *Hammes* caſtle ſtraight:
For *Somerſet*, off with his guilty head.
Go bear them hence, I will not hear them ſpeak.
Oxf. For my part, I'll not trouble thee with words.
Som. Nor I, but ſtoop with patience to my fortune. [*Exeunt.*
Queen. So part we ſadly in this troublous world,
To meet with joy in ſweet *Jeruſalem.*
K. *Edw.* Is proclamation made, that who finds *Edward*
Shall have a high reward, and he his life?
Glo. It is, and lo where youthful *Edward* comes.

Enter the Prince of Wales

K. *Edw.* Bring forth the gallant, let us hear him ſpeak.
What? can ſo young a thorn begin to prick?
Edward, what ſatisfaction canſt thou make,
For bearing arms, for ſtirring up my ſubjects,
And all the trouble thou haſt turn'd me to?
Prince. Speak like a ſubject, proud ambitious *York.*

Sup-

Suppoſe that I am now my father's mouth,
Reſign thy chair, and where I ſtand kneel thou,
Whilſt I propoſe the ſelf-ſame words to thee,
Which, traitor, thou wouldſt have me anſwer to.

Queen. Ah! that thy father had been ſo reſolv'd.

Glo. That you might ſtill have worn the petticoat,
And ne'er have ſtoln the breech from *Lancaſter.*

Prince. Let *Æſop* fable in a winter's night,
His curriſh riddles ſort not with this place.

Glo. By heaven, brat, I'll plague ye for that word.

Queen. Ay, thou waſt born to be a plague to men.

Glo. For God's ſake, take away this captive ſcold.

Prince. Nay, take away this ſcolding crook-back rather.

K. *Edw.* Peace, wilful boy, or I will charm your tongue.

Cla. Untutor'd lad, thou art too malapert.

Prince. I know my duty, you're undutiful:
Laſcivious *Edward,* and thou perjur'd *George,*
And thou miſ-ſhapen *Dick,* I tell ye all,
I am your better, traitors as ye are:
And thou uſurp'ſt my father's right and mine.

Glo. Take that, thou likeneſs of this railer here.

[*Stabs him.*

K. *Edw.* And take thou that, to end thy agony.

[Edw. *ſtabs him.*

Clar. And there's for twitting me with perjury.

[Clar. *ſtabs him.*

Queen. Oh, kill me too!

Glo. Marry, and ſhall. [*Offers to kill her.*

K. *Edw.* Hold *Richard,* hold, for we have done too much.

Glo. Why ſhould ſhe live, to fill the world with words?

K. *Edw.* What? doth ſhe ſwoon? uſe means for her recov'ry.

Glo. Clarence, excuſe me to the King my brother:
I'll hence to *London* on a ſerious matter.

Ere ye come there, be ſure to hear ſome news.
Clar. What? what?
Glo. Tower, the *Tower!* [*Exit.*
Queen. Oh *Ned*, ſweet *Ned!* ſpeak to thy mother, boy.
Can'ſt thou not ſpeak? O traitors, murderers!
They that ſtabb'd *Cæſar* ſhed no blood at all,
Did not offend, and were not worthy blame,
If this foul deed were by, to equal it.
He was a man; this (in reſpect) a child,
And men ne'er ſpend their fury on a child.
What's worſe than murtherer, that I may name it?
No, no, my heart will burſt, and if I ſpeak-----
And I will ſpeak, that ſo my heart may burſt.
Butchers and villains, bloody cannibals,
How ſweet a plant have you untimely cropt!
You have no children, butchers; if you had,
The thought of them would have ſtirr'd up remorſe;
But if you ever chance to have a child,
Look in his youth to have him ſo cut off,
As deathſmen! you have rid this ſweet young Prince.
K. *Edw.* Away with her, go bear her hence by force.
Queen. Nay, never bear me hence, diſpatch me here:
Here ſheath thy ſword, I'll pardon thee my death:
What? wilt thou not? then *Clarence* do it thou.
Clar. By heav'n, I will not do thee ſo much eaſe.
Queen. Good *Clarence* do, ſweet *Clarence* do thou do it.
Clar. Didſt thou not hear me ſwear I would not do it?
Queen. Ay, but thou uſeſt to forſwear thy ſelf:
'Twas ſin before, but now 'tis charity.
What, wilt thou not? where is that Devil's butcher,
Richard? hard-favour'd *Richard*, where art thou?
Thou art not here: Murther is thy Almsdeed.
Petitioner for blood thou ne'er put'ſt back.

K. *Edw.*

K. *Edw.* Away, I ſay, I charge ye bear her hence.
Queen. So come to you and yours, as to this Prince!
[*Exit Queen.*

K. *Edw.* Where's *Richard* gone?
Clar. To *London* all in poſt, and as I gueſs,
To make a bloody ſupper in the *Tower.*
K. *Edw.* He's ſudden, if a thing comes in his head.
Now march we hence, diſcharge the common ſort
With pay and thanks, and let's away to *London:*
And ſee our gentle Queen how well ſhe fares,
By this, I hope, ſhe hath a ſon for me. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

The Tower of London.

Enter King Henry, *and* Gloceſter, *with the Lieutenant on the* Tower *Walls.*

Glo. GOOD day, my lord; what, at your book ſo hard?
K. *Henry.* Ay, my good lord; my lord, I ſhould ſay rather,
'Tis ſin to flatter, good was little better:
Good *Glo'ſter,* and good devil, were alike,
And both prepoſt'rous; therefore not good lord.
Glo. [a] Sir, leave us to our ſelves, we muſt confer.
[*Exit Lieutenant.*

K. *Henry.* So flies the wreakleſs ſhepherd from the wolf,
So firſt the harmleſs flock doth yield his fleece,
And next his throat, unto the butcher's knife.
What ſcene of death hath *Roſcius* now to act?
Glo. Suſpicion always haunts the guilty mind,

[a] *Sirrah.*

The thief doth fear each buſh an officer.
K. *Henry.* The bird that hath been limed in a buſh,
With trembling wings miſ-doubteth ev'ry buſh;
And I, the hapleſs male to one ſweet bird,
Have now the fatal object in my eye,
Where my poor young was lim'd, was caught, and kill'd.
Glo. Why what a peeviſh fool was that of *Creet*,
That taught his ſon the office of a fowl?
And yet, for all his wings, the fool was drown'd.
K. *Henry.* I, *Dedalus*; my poor boy *Icarus*;
Thy father, *Minos* that deny'd our courſe;
The ſun that ſear'd the wings of my ſweet boy,
Thy brother *Edward*; and thy ſelf, the ſea,
Whoſe envious gulph did ſwallow up his life.
Ah, kill me with thy weapon, not with words;
My breaſt can better brook thy dagger's point,
Than can my ears that tragick hiſtory.
But wherefore doſt thou come? Is't for my life?
Glo. Think'ſt thou I am an executioner?
K. *Henry.* A perſecutor I am ſure thou art;
If murth'ring innocents be executing,
Why then thou art an executioner.
Glo. Thy ſon I kill'd for his preſumption.
K. *Henry.* Hadſt thou been kill'd when firſt thou didſt preſume,
Thou hadſt not liv'd to kill a ſon of mine.
And thus I propheſie, that many a thouſand
Which now miſtruſt no parcel of my fear,
' And many an old man's ſigh, and many a widow's,
' And many an orphan's water-ſtanding eye,
' Men for their ſons, wives for their husbands fate,
' And orphans for their parents timeleſs death,
' Shall rue the hour that ever thou waſt born.

The

'The owl ſhriek'd at thy birth, an evil ſign;
'The night-crow cry'd, aboding luckleſs time;
'Dogs howl'd, and hideous tempeſt ſhook down trees;
'The raven rook'd her on the chimney's top,
'And chattering pyes in diſmal diſcords ſung:
'Thy mother felt more than a mother's pain,
'And yet brought forth leſs than a mother's hope,
To wit, an indigeſted deform'd lump,
Not like the fruit of ſuch a goodly tree.
Teeth hadſt thou in thy head when thou waſt born,
To ſignifie thou cam'ſt to bite the world:
And if the reſt be true which I have heard,
Thou cam'ſt------

Glo. I'll hear no more: die, prophet, in thy ſpeech;
[*Stabs him.*
For this, amongſt the reſt, was I ordain'd.

K. *Henry.* Ay, and for much more ſlaughter after this-----
O God! forgive my ſins, and pardon thee. [*Dies.*

Glo. What! will th' aſpiring blood of *Lancaſter*
Sink in the ground? I thought it would have mounted.
See how my ſword weeps for the poor King's death!
O may ſuch purple tears be alway ſhed
From thoſe who wiſh the downfal of our houſe.
If any ſpark of life be yet remaining,
Down, down to hell, and ſay I ſent thee thither, [*Stabs him again.*
I, that have neither pity, love, nor fear.
Indeed 'tis true that *Henry* told me of:
For I have often heard my mother ſay
I came into the world with my legs forward.
Had I not reaſon, think ye, to make haſte,
And ſeek their ruin that uſurp'd our right?
The midwife wonder'd, and the women cry'd

O Jeſus bleſs us, he is born with teeth!
And ſo I was, which plainly ſignify'd
That I ſhould ſnarle, and bite, and play the dog:
Then ſince the heav'ns have ſhap'd my body ſo,
Let hell make crook'd my mind to anſwer it.
I have no brother, I am like no brother,
And this word [love] which grey beards call divine,
Be reſident in men like one another,
And not in me: I am my ſelf alone.
Clarence beware, thou keep'ſt me from the light,
But I will ſort a pitchy day for thee:
For I will buz abroad ſuch prophecies,
That *Edward* ſhall be fearful of his life,
And then to purge his fear I'll be thy death.
King *Henry*, and the Prince his ſon, are gone,
Clarence thy turn is next, and then the reſt;
Counting my ſelf but bad, 'till I be beſt.
I'll throw thy body in another room;
And triumph, *Henry!* in the day of doom. [*Exit.*

SCENE VIII.

Enter King Edward, *Queen*, Clarence, Glouceſter, Haſtings, *Nurſe, and Attendants.*

K. *Edw.* ONCE more we ſit on *England's* royal throne,
Re-purchas'd with the blood of enemies:
What valiant foe-men, like to autumn's corn,
Have we mow'd down in top of all their pride?
Three Dukes of *Somerſet*, three-fold renown'd
For hardy and undoubted champions:

Two

Two *Cliffords*, as the father and the ſon;
And two *Northumberlands*; two braver men
Ne'er ſpurr'd their courſers at the trumpet's ſound.
With them the two brave bears, *Warwick* and *Montague*,
That in their chains fetter'd the Kingly Lion,
And made the foreſt tremble when they roar'd.
Thus have we ſwept ſuſpicion from our ſeat,
And made our footſtool of ſecurity.
Come hither, *Beſs*, and let me kiſs my boy:
Young *Ned*, for thee, thine uncles and my ſelf
Have in our armours watch'd the winter night,
Went all a-foot in ſummer's ſcalding heat,
That thou might'ſt re-poſſeſs the crown in peace;
And of our labours thou ſhalt reap the gain.

Glo. I'll blaſt his harveſt, if your head were laid, [*Aſide.*
For yet I am not look'd on in the world.
This ſhoulder was ordain'd ſo thick, to heave,
And heave it ſhall ſome weight or break my back;
Work thou the way, and that ſhall execute.

K. *Edw.* *Clarence* and *Glo'ſter*, love my lovely Queen,
And kiſs your princely nephew, brothers both.

Clar. The duty that I owe your Majeſty
I ſeal upon the lips of this ſweet babe.

K. *Edw.* Thanks noble *Clarence*, worthy brother, thanks.

Glo. And that I love the tree from whence thou ſprang'ſt,
Witneſs the loving kiſs I give the fruit.
To ſay the truth, ſo *Judas* kiſs'd his maſter, [*Aſide.*
And cry'd, all hail, when as he meant all harm.

K. *Edw.* Now am I ſeated as my ſoul delights,
Having my country's peace and brothers loves.

Clar. What will your grace have done with *Margaret?*
Reignier her father to the King of *France*

Hath

Hath pawn'd the *Sicils* and *Jeruſalem*,
And hither have they ſent it for her ranſom.

K. *Edw.* Away with her, and waft her hence to *France*.
And now what reſts but that we ſpend the time
With ſtately triumphs, mirthful comick ſhows,
Such as befit the pleaſure of the court?
Sound drums and trumpets, farewel ſow'r annoy,
For here I hope begins our laſting joy. [*Exeunt omnes.*

THE

THE

LIFE and *DEATH*

OF

RICHARD III.

Dramatis Perſonæ.

KING Edward IV.
Edward, *Prince of* Wales, *afterwards* Edward V. } *Sons to* Edward IV.
Richard, *Duke of* York. }
George, *Duke of* Clarence, *Brother to* Edward IV.
Richard, *Duke of* Glouceſter, *Brother to* Edward IV. *afterwards King* Richard III.
Cardinal, *Archbiſhop of* York.
Duke of Buckingham.
Duke of Norfolk.
Earl of Surrey.
Marquiſs of Dorſet, *Son to the Queen.*
Earl Rivers, *Brother to the Queen.*
Lord Gray.
Earl of Richmond, *afterwards King* Henry VII.
Biſhop of Ely.
Lord Haſtings.
Sir Richard Ratcliff, } *Friends to the Duke of* Glouceſter.
Lord Lovel, }
Catesby, }
Sir James Tyrrel, *a Villain.*
Lord Stanley.
Earl of Oxford, } *Friends to the Earl of* Richmond.
Blount, }
Herbert, }
Sir William Brandon, }
Brakenbury, *Lieutenant of the* Tower.
Two Children of the Duke of Clarence.
Lord Mayor.

Queen of Edward IV.
Queen Margaret, *Widow of* Henry VI.
Anne, *Widow of* Edward *Prince of* Wales, *Son to* Henry VI. *afterwards married to the Duke of* Glouceſter.
Dutcheſs of York, *Mother to* Edward IV, Clarence, *and* Richard III.

Sheriff, Purſuivant, Citizens, Ghoſts of thoſe murder'd by Richard III. *with Soldiers and other Attendants.*

The SCENE *in* ENGLAND.

THE

The LIFE and DEATH of *RICHARD* III.

ACT I. SCENE I.

The COURT.

Enter Richard *Duke of* Gloceſter, *ſolus.*

NOW is the Winter of our diſcontent
Made glorious ſummer by this Sun of *York:*
And all the clouds that lowr'd upon our houſe,
In the deep boſom of the ocean bury'd.
Now are our brows bound with victorious wreaths,
Our bruiſed arms hung up for monuments;
Our ſtern alarums chang'd to merry meetings;
Our dreadful marches to delightful meaſures.
Grim-viſag'd War hath ſmooth'd his wrinkled front;
And now inſtead of mounting barbed ſteeds
To fright the ſouls of fearful adverſaries,
He capers nimbly in a lady's chamber,
To the laſcivious pleaſing of a lute.
But I, that am not ſhap'd for ſportive tricks,
Nor made to court an am'rous looking-glaſs,
I, that am rudely ſtampt, and want love's majeſty,
To ſtrut before a wanton, ambling nymph;

I, that am curtail'd of this fair proportion,
Cheated of feature by diſſembling nature,
Deform'd, unfiniſh'd, ſent before my time
Into this breathing world; ſcarce half made up,
And that ſo lamely and unfaſhionably,
That dogs bark at me, as I halt by them:
Why I, (in this weak piping time of peace)
Have no delight to paſs away the time;
Unleſs to ſee my ſhadow in the ſun,
And deſcant on mine own deformity.
And therefore, ſince I cannot prove a lover,
To entertain theſe fair well-ſpoken days,
I am determined to prove a villain,
And hate the idle pleaſures of theſe days.
Plots have I laid, inductions dangerous,
By drunken propheſies, libels, and dreams,
To ſet my brother *Clarence* and the King
In deadly hate, the one againſt the other:
And if King *Edward* be as true and juſt,
As I am ſubtle, falſe and treacherous,
This day ſhould *Clarence* cloſely be mew'd up.
Dive thoughts down to my ſoul, here *Clarence* comes.

Enter Clarence *guarded, and* Brakenbury.

Brother, good day; what means this armed guard
That waits upon your grace?

Clar. His Majeſty,
Tend'ring my perſon's ſafety, hath appointed
This conduct to convey me to the *Tower*.

Glo. Upon what cauſe?

Clar. Becauſe my name is *George*.

Glo. Alack, my lord, that fault is none of yours:
He ſhould for that commit your godfathers.

Belike,

Belike, his Majeſty hath ſome intent,
That you ſhould be new chriſtned in the *Tower*.
But what's the matter, *Clarence*, may I know?

Clar. Yea, *Richard*, when I know; for I proteſt
As yet I do not, but as I can learn,
He hearkens after propheſies and dreams,
And from the croſs-row plucks the letter *G*;
And ſays a wizard told him, that by *G*
His iſſue diſinherited ſhould be.
And for my name of *George* begins with *G*,
It follows in his thought that I am he.
Theſe, as I learn, and ſuch like toys as theſe,
Have mov'd his Highneſs to commit me now.

Glo. Why this it is, when men are rul'd by women.
'Tis not the King that ſends you to the *Tower*;
My lady *Gray* his wife, *Clarence*, 'tis ſhe,
That tempts him to this harſh extremity.
Was it not ſhe, and that good man of worſhip,
Anthony Woodvil her brother there,
That made him ſend lord *Haſtings* to the *Tower*?
From whence this day he is delivered.
We are not ſafe; *Clarence*, we are not ſafe.

Clar. By heav'n, I think there is no man ſecure
But the Queen's kindred, and night-walking heralds
That trudge between the King and miſtreſs *Shore*.
Heard you not what an humble ſuppliant
Lord *Haſtings* was to her for his delivery?

Glo. Humbly complaining to her deity,
Got my lord Chamberlain his liberty.
I'll tell you what, I think it is our way
If we will keep in favour with the King,
To be her men, and wear her livery:

The jealous o'erworn widow, and her ſelf,
Since that our brother dubb'd them gentlewomen,
Are mighty goſſips in our monarchy.

Brak. I beg your graces both to pardon me:
His Majeſty hath ſtraitly giv'n in charge,
That no man ſhall have private conference,
Of what degree ſoever, with your brother.

Glo. Ev'n ſo, an't pleaſe your worſhip, *Brakenbury!*
You may partake of any thing we ſay:
We ſpeak no treaſon, man----- we ſay the King
Is wiſe and virtuous, and his noble Queen
Well ſtrook in years, fair, and not jealous-----
We ſay, that *Shore*'s wife hath a pretty foot,
A cherry lip, a paſſing pleaſing tongue:
That the Queen's kindred are made gentle-folks:
How ſay you, Sir? can you deny all this?

Brak. With this, my lord, my ſelf have nought to do.

Glo. What, fellow? nought to do with miſtreſs *Shore?*
I tell you Sir, he that doth naught with her,
Excepting one, were beſt to do it ſecretly.

Brak. What one, my lord?

Glo. Her husband, knave----- would'ſt thou betray me?

Brak. I do beſeech your grace to pardon me,
And to forbear your conf'rence with the Duke.

Clar. We know thy charge, *Brakenbury*, and will obey.

Glo. We are the Queen's abjects, and muſt obey.
Brother farewel, I will unto the King,
And whatſoe'er you will employ me in,
(Were it to call King *Edward*'s widow ſiſter)
I will perform it to infranchiſe you.
Mean time, this deep diſgrace of brotherhood
Touches me deeper than you can imagine.

Clar.

Clar. I know it pleaſeth neither of us well.

Glo. Well, your impriſonment ſhall not be long,
I will deliver you, or elſe lye for you:
Mean time have patience.

Clar. I muſt perforce; farewel. [*Exe.* Brak. Clar.

Glo. Go tread the path that thou ſhalt ne'er return:
Simple plain *Clarence*---- I do love thee ſo,
That I will ſhortly ſend thy ſoul to heav'n,
If heav'n will take the preſent at our hands.
But who comes here? the new-deliver'd *Haſtings?*

Enter Lord Haſtings.

Haſt. Good time of day unto my gracious lord.

Glo. As much unto my good lord chamberlain:
Well are you welcome to the open air.
How hath your lordſhip brook'd impriſonment?

Haſt. With patience, noble lord, as pris'ners muſt:
But I ſhall live, my lord, to give them thanks
That were the cauſe of my impriſonment.

Glo. No doubt, no doubt, and ſo ſhall *Clarence* too,
For they that were your enemies are his,
And have prevail'd as much on him as you.

Haſt. More pity, that the Eagle ſhould be mew'd,
While kites and buzzards play at liberty.

Glo. What news abroad?

Haſt. No news ſo bad abroad as this at home:
The King is ſickly, weak, and melancholy,
And his phyſicians fear him mightily.

Glo. Now by [a] St. *Paul*, that news is bad indeed.
O he hath kept an evil diet long,
And over-much conſum'd his royal perſon:
'Tis very grievous to be thought upon.
Where is he, in his bed?

Haſt.

[a] *St.* John.

Haſt. He is.

Glo. Go you before, and I will follow you. [*Exit* Haſtings.
He cannot live, I hope; and muſt not die,
'Till *George* be pack'd with poſt-horſe up to heav'n.
I'll in, to urge his hatred more to *Clarence*,
With lyes well ſteel'd with weighty arguments;
And if I fail not in my deep intent,
Clarence hath not another day to live:
Which done, God take King *Edward* to his mercy,
And leave the world for me to buſtle in.
For then, I'll marry *Warwick*'s youngeſt daughter:
What though I kill'd her husband, and her father?
The readieſt way to make the wench amends,
Is to become her husband and her father:
The which will I, not all ſo much for love,
As for another ſecret cloſe intent,
By marrying her, which I muſt reach unto.
But yet I run before my horſe to market:
Clarence ſtill breathes, *Edward* ſtill lives and reigns;
When they are gone, then muſt I count my gains. [*Exit.*

SCENE II.

Enter the Coarſe of Henry *the Sixth, with halberds to guard it,*
Lady Anne *being the Mourner.*

Anne. SET down, ſet down your honourable load,
If honour may be ſhrowded in a herſe;
Whilſt I awhile obſequiouſly lament
Th' untimely fall of virtuous *Lancaſter.*
Poor key-cold figure of a holy King!
Pale aſhes of the houſe of *Lancaſter!*
Thou bloodleſs remnant of that royal blood,

Be't

Be't lawful that I invocate thy ghoſt,
To hear the lamentations of poor *Anne*,
Wife to thy *Edward*, to thy ſlaughter'd ſon,
Stab'd by the ſelf-ſame hand that made theſe wounds.
Lo, in theſe windows that let forth thy life,
I pour the helpleſs balm of my poor eyes.
Curs'd be the hand that made theſe fatal holes!
Curs'd be the heart, that had the heart to do it!
More direful hap betide that hated wretch
That makes us wretched by the death of thee,
Than I can wiſh to adders, ſpiders, toads,
Or any creeping venom'd thing that lives.
If ever he have child, abortive be it,
Prodigious, and untimely brought to light,
Whoſe ugly and unnatural aſpect
May fright the hopeful mother at the view:
And that be heir to his unhappineſs.
If ever he have wife, let her be made
More miſerable by the death of him,
Than I am made by my young lord and thee.
Come now tow'rds *Chertſey* with your holy load,
Taken from *Paul*'s to be interred there.
And ſtill as you are weary of this weight,
Reſt you, while I lament King *Henry*'s coarſe.

Enter Richard *Duke of* Glouceſter.

Glo. Stay you that bear the coarſe, and ſet it down.

Anne. What black magician conjures up this fiend,
To ſtop devoted charitable deeds?

Glo. Villains, ſet down the coarſe; or by St. *Paul*,
I'll make a coarſe of him that diſobeys.

Gen. My lord, ſtand back, and let the coffin paſs.

Glo. Unmanner'd dog, ſtand thou when I command:

Advance thy halbert higher than my breaſt,
Or by St. *Paul* I'll ſtrike thee to my foot,
And ſpurn upon thee, beggar, for thy boldneſs.

Anne. What, do you tremble? are you all afraid?
Alas, I blame you not, for you are mortal,
And mortal eyes cannot endure the devil.
Avant, thou dreadful miniſter of hell:
Thou had'ſt but pow'r over his mortal body,
His ſoul thou can'ſt not have; therefore be gone.

Glo. Sweet ſaint, for charity, be not ſo curſt.

Anne. Foul dev'l! for God's ſake hence, trouble us not,
For thou haſt made the happy earth thy hell:
Fill'd it with curſing cries, and deep exclaims.
If thou delight to view thy heinous deeds,
Behold this pattern of thy butcheries.
Oh gentlemen! ſee! ſee dead *Henry*'s wounds
Open their congeal'd mouths and bleed afreſh.
Bluſh, bluſh, thou lump of foul deformity;
For 'tis thy preſence that exhales this blood
From cold and empty veins, where no blood dwells.
Thy deeds inhuman and unnatural,
Provoke this deluge moſt unnatural.
O God! which this blood mad'ſt, revenge his death:
O earth! which this blood drink'ſt, revenge his death:
Or heav'n with lightning ſtrike the murth'rer dead;
Or earth, gape open wide, and eat him quick,
As thou doſt ſwallow up this good King's blood,
Which his hell-govern'd arm hath butchered.

Glo. Lady, you know no rules of charity,
Which renders good for bad, bleſſings for curſes.

Anne. Villain, thou know'ſt nor law of God nor man;
No beaſt ſo fierce, but knows ſome touch of pity.

Glo. But I know none, and therefore am no beaſt.

Anne.

Anne. O wonderful, when devils tell the truth!
Glo. More wonderful, when angels are ſo angry:
Vouchſafe, divine perfection of a woman,
Of theſe ſuppoſed crimes, to give me leave,
By circumſtance, but to acquit my ſelf.
Anne. Vouchſafe, diffus'd infection of a man,
Of theſe known evils, but to give me leave,
By circumſtance, to curſe thy curſed ſelf.
Glo. Fairer than tongue can name thee, let me have
Some patient leiſure to excuſe my ſelf.
Anne. Fouler than heart can think thee,
Thou canſt make no excuſe that will be currant,
Unleſs thou hang thy ſelf.
Glo. By ſuch deſpair I ſhould accuſe my ſelf.
Anue. And by deſpairing ſhalt thou ſtand excus'd,
For doing worthy vengeance on thy ſelf;
That didſt unworthy ſlaughter upon others.
Glo. Say, that I ſlew them not.
Anne. Then ſay, they were not ſlain:
But dead they are, and, deviliſh ſlave, by thee.
Glo. I did not kill your husband.
Anne. Why then he is alive.
Glo. Nay, he is dead, and ſlain by *Edward*'s hands.
Anne. In thy foul throat thou ly'ſt. Queen *Marg'ret* ſaw
Thy murd'rous faulchion ſmoaking in his blood:
The which thou once didſt bend againſt her breaſt,
But that thy brothers beat aſide the point.
Glo. I was provoked by her ſland'rous tongue,
That laid their guilt upon my guiltleſs ſhoulders.
Anne. Thou waſt provoked by thy bloody mind,
That never dreamt on ought but butcheries:
Didſt thou not kill this King?
Glo. I grant ye.

Anne. Doſt grant me, hedge-hog? then God grant me too,
Thou may'ſt be damned for that wicked deed:
O he was gentle, mild and virtuous.

Glo. The [b] fitter for the King of heav'n that hath him.

Anne. He is in heav'n, where thou ſhalt never come.

Glo. Let him thank me that help'd to ſend him thither;
For he was fitter for that place than earth.

Anne. And thou unfit for any place but hell.

Glo. Yes one place elſe, if you will hear me name it.

Anne. Some dungeon.

Glo. Your bed-chamber.

Anne. Ill reſt betide the chamber where thou lyeſt.

Glo. So will it, madam, 'till I lye with you.

Anne. I hope ſo.

Glo. I know ſo. But gentle lady *Anne*,
To leave this keen encounter of our wits,
And fall ſomething into a ſlower method.
Is not the cauſer of the timeleſs deaths
Of theſe *Plantagenets*, *Henry* and *Edward*,
As blameful as the executioner?

Anne. Thou waſt the cauſe, and moſt accurſt effect.

Glo. Your beauty was the cauſe of that effect:
Your beauty that did haunt me in my ſleep,
To undertake the death of all the world,
So I might live one hour in your ſweet boſom.

Anne. If I thought that, I tell thee, homicide,
Theſe nails ſhould rend that beauty from my cheeks.

Glo. Theſe eyes could not endure that beauty's wrack,
You ſhould not blemiſh it, if I ſtood by;
As all the world is cheered by the ſun,
So I by that; it is my day, my life.

Anne. Black night o'er-ſhade thy day, and death thy life.

Glo. Curſe not thy ſelf, fair creature, thou art both.

Anne.

[b] *better.*

Anne. I would I were, to be reveng'd on thee.
Glo. It is a quarrel moſt unnatural,
To be reveng'd on him that loveth thee.
Anne. It is a quarrel juſt and reaſonable,
To be reveng'd on him that kill'd my husband.
Glo. He that bereft thee, lady, of thy husband,
Did it to help thee to a better husband.
Anne. His better doth not breathe upon the earth.
Glo. He lives, that loves thee better than he could.
Anne. Name him.
Glo. Plantagenet.
Anne. Why that was he.
Glo. The ſelf-ſame name, but one of better nature.
Anne. Where is he?
Glo. Here: why doſt thou ſpit at me? [*She ſpits at him.*
Anne. Would it were mortal poiſon for thy ſake.
Glo. Never came poiſon from ſo ſweet a place.
Anne. Never hung poiſon on a fouler toad.
Out of my ſight, thou doſt infect mine eyes.
Glo. Thine eyes, ſweet lady, have infected mine.
Anne. Would they were baſilisks to ſtrike thee dead.
Glo. I would they were, that I might die at once:
For now they kill me with a living death.
Thoſe eyes of thine from mine have drawn ſalt tears;
Sham'd their aſpects with ſtore of childiſh drops:
† Theſe eyes, which never ſhed remorſeful tear,
Not when my father *York*, and *Edward* wept,
To hear the piteous moan that *Rutland* made,
When black-fac'd *Clifford* ſhook his ſword at him:
Nor when thy warlike father, like a child,
Told the ſad ſtory of my father's death,
And twenty times made pauſe to ſob and weep,
That all the ſtanders-by had wet their cheeks,

Like

† *The twelve following beautiful lines added after the firſt editions.*

Like trees be-daſh'd with rain: in that ſad time,
My manly eyes did ſcorn an humble tear:
And what theſe ſorrows could not thence exhale,
Thy beauty hath, and made them blind with weeping.
I never ſued to friend, nor enemy;
My tongue could never learn ſweet ſmoothing words;
But now thy beauty is propos'd my fee,
My proud heart ſues, and prompts my tongue to ſpeak.
[*She looks ſcornfully at him.*
Teach not thy lip ſuch ſcorn, for it was made
For kiſſing, lady, not for ſuch contempt.
If thy revengeful heart cannot forgive,
Lo here I lend thee this ſharp-pointed ſword,
Which, if thou pleaſe to hide in this true breaſt,
And let the ſoul forth that adoreth thee,
I lay it naked to the deadly ſtroke,
And humbly beg the death upon my knee.
[*He lays his breaſt open, ſhe offers at it with his ſword.*
Nay, do not pauſe; for I did kill King *Henry*;
But 'twas thy beauty that provoked me.
Nay, now diſpatch: 'twas I that ſtabb'd young *Edward*,
But 'twas thy heav'nly face that ſet me on. [*She falls the ſword.*
Take up the ſword again, or take up me.

Anne. Ariſe, diſſembler; though I wiſh thy death,
I will not be thy executioner.

Glo. Then bid me kill my ſelf, and I will do it.

Anne. I have already.

Glo. That was in thy rage:
Speak it again, and even with thy word,
This hand, which for thy love, did kill thy love,
Shall for thy love, kill a far truer love;
To both their deaths ſhalt thou be acceſſary.

Anne. I would I knew thy heart.

Glo.

Glo. 'Tis figur'd in my tongue.
Anne. I fear me, both are falſe.
Glo. Then never man was true.
Anne. Well, well, put up your ſword.
Glo. Say then, my peace is made.
Anne. That ſhalt thou know hereafter.
Glo. But ſhall I live in hope?
Anne. All men I hope live ſo.
Glo. Vouchſafe to wear this ring.
Look how my ring encompaſſeth thy finger,
Ev'n ſo thy breaſt incloſeth my poor heart:
Wear both of them, for both of them are thine.
And if thy poor devoted ſervant may
But beg one favour at thy gracious hand,
Thou doſt confirm his happineſs for ever.
Anne. What is it?
Glo. That it may pleaſe you leave theſe ſad deſigns
To him that hath more cauſe to be a mourner,
And preſently repair to *Crosby* place:
Where, after I have ſolemnly interr'd
At *Chertſey* monaſt'ry this noble King,
And wet his grave with my repentant tears,
I will with all expedient duty ſee you.
For divers unknown reaſons, I beſeech you,
Grant me this boon.
Anne. With all my heart, and much it joys me too,
To ſee you are become ſo penitent.
Traſſel and *Barkley*, go along with me.
Glo. Bid me farewel.
Anne. 'Tis more than you deſerve:
But ſince you teach me how to flatter you,
Imagine I have ſaid farewel already. [*Exeunt two with* Anne.
Gent. Towards *Chertſey*, noble lord?

Glo.

Glo. No, to *White-Friars*, there attend my coming.
[*Exit Coarſe.*

Was ever woman in this humour woo'd?
Was ever woman in this humour won?
I'll have her ----- but I will not keep her long.
What! I that kill'd her husband and his father!
To take her in her heart's extreameſt hate,
With curſes in her mouth, tears in her eyes,
The bleeding witneſs of my hatred by.
With God, her conſcience, and theſe bars againſt me,
And I no friends to back my ſuit withal,
But the plain devil and diſſembling looks:
And yet to win her----- All the world to nothing!
Ha!
Hath ſhe forgot already that brave Prince,
Edward, her lord, whom I, ſome three months ſince,
Stab'd in my angry mood at *Tewksbury*?
A ſweeter and a lovelier gentleman,
Fram'd in the prodigality of nature,
Young, wiſe, and valiant, and no doubt right royal,
The ſpacious world cannot again afford:
And will ſhe yet debaſe her eyes on me,
That cropt the golden prime of this ſweet Prince,
And made her widow to a woful bed?
On me, whoſe all not equals *Edward*'s moiety?
On me, that halt, and am miſhapen thus?
My dukedom to a beggarly denier,
I do miſtake my perſon all this while:
Upon my life ſhe finds, although I cannot,
My ſelf to be a marv'lous proper man.
I'll be at charges for a looking-glaſs,
And entertain a ſcore or two of tailors,
To ſtudy faſhions to adorn my body:

Since I am crept in favour with my ſelf,
I will maintain it with ſome little coſt.
But firſt I'll turn yon fellow in his grave,
And then return lamenting to my love.
Shine out, fair ſun, 'till I have bought a glaſs,
That I may ſee my ſhadow as I paſs. [*Exit.*

SCENE III.

Enter the Queen, Lord Rivers, *and Lord* Gray.

Riv. HAVE patience, madam, there's no doubt, his Majeſty
Will ſoon recover his accuſtom'd health.

Gray. In that you brook it ill, it makes him worſe,
Therefore for God's ſake entertain good comfort,
And cheer his grace with quick and merry eyes.

Queen. If he were dead, what would betide of me?

Gray. No other harm, but loſs of ſuch a lord.

Queen. The loſs of ſuch a lord includes all harms.

Gray. The heav'ns have bleſt you with a goodly ſon
To be your comforter when he is gone.

Queen. Ah! he is young, and his minority
Is put unto the truſt of *Richard Glo'ſter*,
A man that loves not me, nor none of you.

Riv. Is it concluded, he ſhall be Protector?

Queen. It is determin'd, not concluded yet:
But ſo it muſt be, if the King miſcarry.

Enter Buckingham *and* Derby.

Gray. Here come the lords of *Buckingham* and *Derby*.

Buck. Good time of day unto your Royal grace.

Derby. God make your Majeſty joyful as you have been.

Queen. The Counteſs *Richmond*, good my lord of *Derby*,

To your good prayer will ſcarcely ſay Amen;
Yet *Derby*, notwithſtanding ſhe's your wife,
And loves not me, be you, good lord, aſſur'd,
I hate not you for her proud arrogance.

Derby. I do beſeech you, either not believe
The envious ſlanders of her falſe accuſers:
Or if ſhe be accus'd on true report,
Bear with her weakneſs; which I think proceeds
From wayward ſickneſs, and no grounded malice.

Queen. Saw you the King to-day, my lord of *Derby*?

Derby. But now the Duke of *Buckingham* and I
Are come from viſiting his Majeſty.

Queen. What likelihood of his amendment, lords?

Buck. Madam, good hope, his grace ſpeaks chearfully.

Queen. God grant him health; did you confer with him?

Buck. Madam, we did, he ſeeks to make atonement
Between the Duke of *Glo'ſter* and your brothers,
And between them and my lord Chamberlain;
And ſent to warn them to his royal preſence.

Queen. Would all were well----but that will never be----
I fear our happineſs is at the height.

Enter Glouceſter.

Glo. They do me wrong, and I will not endure it.
Who are they that complain unto the King,
That I, forſooth, am ſtern, and love them not?
By holy *Paul*, they love his grace but lightly
That fill his ears with ſuch diſſentious rumors.
Becauſe I cannot flatter, and look fair,
Smile in men's faces, ſmooth, deceive and cog,
Duck with *French* nods, and apiſh courteſie,
I muſt be held a rancorous enemy.
Cannot a plain man live and think no harm,

But

But thus his ſimple truth muſt be abus'd
By ſilken, ſly, inſinuating jacks?
Gray. To whom in all this preſence ſpeaks your grace?
Glo. To thee, that haſt nor honeſty nor grace:
When have I injur'd thee? when done thee wrong?
Or thee? or thee? or any of your faction?
A plague upon you all. His royal perſon,
Whom God preſerve better than you would wiſh,
Cannot be quiet ſcarce a breathing while,
But you muſt trouble him with lewd complaints.
Queen. Brother of *Glo'ſter*, you miſtake the matter:
The King of his own royal diſpoſition,
And not provok'd by any ſuitor elſe,
Aiming, belike, at your interior hatred,
That in your outward action ſhews it ſelf
Againſt my children, brother, and my ſelf
Makes him to ſend, that he may learn the ground
‡ Of your ill will, and thereby to remove it.
Glo. I cannot tell; the world is grown ſo bad,
That wrens make prey, where eagles dare not perch.
Since every jack became a gentleman,
There's many a gentle perſon made a jack.
Queen. Come, come, we know your meaning, brother *Glo'ſter*.
You envy my advancement and my friends:
God grant we never may have need of you.
Glo. Mean time God grants that we have need of you.
Our brother is impriſon'd by your means,
My ſelf diſgrac'd, and the nobility
Held in contempt, while many fair promotions
Are daily given to enoble thoſe,
That ſcarce, ſome two days ſince, were worth a noble.
Queen. By him that rais'd me to this careful height,
From that contented hap which I enjoy'd;

‡ *This line is reſtor'd from the firſt edition.*

I never did incenſe his Majeſty
Againſt the Duke of *Clarence*, but have been
An earneſt advocate to plead for him.
My lord, you do me ſhameful injury,
Falſely to draw me in theſe wild ſuſpects.
Glo. You may deny that you were not the [c] cauſe
Of my lord *Haſtings'* late impriſonment.
Riv. She may, my lord, for-----
Glo. She may, lord *Rivers*, why who knows not ſo?
She may do more, Sir, than denying that:
She may help you to many fair preferments,
And then deny her aiding hand therein,
And lay thoſe honours on your high deſert.
What may ſhe not? ſhe may-----ay marry may ſhe----
Riv. What marry may ſhe?
Glo. What marry may ſhe? marry with a King,
A batchelor, a handſom ſtripling too:
I wis, your grandam had a worſer match.
Queen. My lord of *Glo'ſter*, I have too long born
Your blunt upbraidings, and your bitter ſcoffs:
By heav'n I will acquaint his Majeſty,
Of thoſe groſs taunts I often have endur'd.
I had rather be a country ſervant maid
Than a great Queen with this condition,
To be thus taunted, ſcorn'd and baited at.
Small joy have I in being *England*'s Queen.

SCENE IV.

Enter Queen Margaret.

Q. *Mar.* And leſſen'd be that ſmall, God I beſeech thee:
Thy honour, ſtate, and ſeat is due to me.
Glo. What! threat you me with telling of the King?

[c] *mean.*

I will avouch in preſence of the King:
'Tis time to ſpeak, my pains are quite forgot.

Q. *Mar.* Out devil! I remember them too well:
Thou kill'dſt my husband *Henry* in the *Tower*,
And *Edward*, my poor ſon, at *Tewksbury*.

Glo. Ere you were Queen, ay, or your husband King,
I was a pack-horſe in his great affairs;
A weeder out of his proud adverſaries,
A liberal rewarder of his friends;
To royalize his blood I ſpilt mine own.

Q. *Mar.* Ay, and much better blood than his or thine.

Glo. In all which time you and your husband *Gray*,
Were factious for the houſe of *Lancaſter*;
And *Rivers*, ſo were you; was not your husband,
In *Marg'ret*'s battel, at St. *Albans* ſlain?
Let me put in your minds, if you forget,
What you have been ere now, and what you are;
Withal, what I have been, and what I am.

Q. *Mar.* A murth'rous villain, and ſo ſtill thou art.

Glo. Poor *Clarence* did forſake his father *Warwick*,
Ay, and forſwore himſelf, (which Jeſu pardon)-----

Q. *Mar.* Which God revenge.

Glo. To fight on *Edward*'s party for the crown,
And for his meed, poor lord, he is mew'd up:
I would to God my heart were flint, like *Edward*'s,
Or *Edward*'s ſoft and pitiful, like mine;
I am too childiſh, fooliſh for this world.

Q. *Mar.* Hie thee to hell for ſhame, and leave this world,
Thou Cacodæmon, there thy kingdom is.

Riv. My lord of *Glo'ſter*, in thoſe buſie days,
Which here you urge to prove us enemies,
We follow'd then our lord, our Sov'reign King;
So ſhould we you, if you ſhould be our King.

Glo.

Glo. If I ſhould be!---- I had rather be a pedlar;
Far be it from my heart, the thought thereof.

Queen. As little joy, my lord, as you ſuppoſe
You ſhould enjoy, were you this country's King,
As little joy you may ſuppoſe in me,
That I enjoy, being the Queen thereof.

Q. *Mar.* A little joy enjoys the Queen thereof;
For I am ſhe, and altogether joyleſs.
I can no longer hold me patient.
Hear me, you wrangling pyrates, that fall out
In ſharing that which you have pill'd from me;
Which of you trembles not that looks on me?
If not that I being Queen, you bow like ſubjects;
Yet that by you depos'd, you quake like rebels.
Ah gentle villain do not turn away?

Glo. Foul wrinkled witch, what mak'ſt thou in my ſight?

Q. *Mar.* But repetition of what thou haſt marr'd,
That will I make, before I let thee go.
A husband and a ſon thou ow'ſt to me, [*To* Glo.
And thou a kingdom; all of you allegiance; [*To the Queen.*
The ſorrow that I have, by right is yours,
And all the pleaſures you uſurp, are mine.

Glo. The curſe my noble father laid on thee,
When thou didſt crown his warlike brows with paper,
And with thy ſcorns drew'ſt rivers from his eyes,
And then to dry them gav'ſt the Duke a clout,
Steep'd in the faultleſs blood of pretty *Rutland*;
His curſes, then from bitterneſs of ſoul
Denounc'd againſt thee, are now fall'n upon thee;
And God, not we, has plagu'd thy bloody deed.

Q. *Mar.* So juſt is God, to right the innocent.

Haſt. O, 'twas the foulеſt deed to ſlay that babe,
And the moſt mercileſs that e'er was heard of.

Riv. Tyrants themſelves wept, when it was reported.
Dorſ. No man but propheſy'd revenge for it.
Buck. Northumberland, then preſent, wept to ſee it.
Q. *Mar.* What! were you ſnarling all before I came,
Ready to catch each other by the throat,
And turn you all your hatred now on me?
Did *York*'s dread curſe prevail ſo much with heav'n,
That *Henry*'s death, my lovely *Edward*'s death,
Their kingdom's loſs, my woful baniſhment,
Could all but anſwer for that peeviſh brat?
Can curſes pierce the clouds, and enter heav'n?
Why then give way, dull clouds, to my quick curſes.
If not by war, by ſurfeit die your King,
As ours by murther to make him a King.
Edward thy ſon, that now is Prince of *Wales*,
For *Edward* our ſon, that was Prince of *Wales*,
Die in his youth, by like untimely violence.
Thy ſelf a Queen, for me that was a Queen,
Out-live thy glory, like my wretched ſelf:
Long may'ſt thou live to wail thy children's loſs,
And ſee another, as I ſee thee now,
Deck'd in thy rights, as thou art ſtall'd in mine.
Long die thy happy days before thy death
And after many length'ned hours of grief,
Die, neither mother, wife, nor *England*'s Queen.
Rivers and *Dorſet*, you were ſtanders-by,
And ſo waſt thou, lord *Haſtings*, when my ſon
Was ſtabb'd with bloody daggers; God, I pray him,
That none of you may live your natural age,
But by ſome unlook'd accident cut off.
Glo. Have done thy charm, thou hateful wither'd hag.
Q. *Mar.* And leave out thee? ſtay dog, for thou ſhalt hear
If heav'ns have any grievous plague in ſtore, [me.

Exceed-

Exceeding thoſe that I can wiſh upon thee,
O let them keep it, 'till thy ſins be ripe,
And then hurl down their indignation
On thee, thou troubler of the poor world's peace.
The worm of conſcience ſtill be-gnaw thy ſoul;
Thy friends ſuſpect for traitors while thou liv'ſt,
And take deep traitors for thy deareſt friends:
No ſleep cloſe up that deadly eye of thine,
Unleſs it be while ſome tormenting dream
Affrights thee with a hell of ugly devils.
Thou elviſh-markt, abortive, rooting hog,
Thou that waſt ſeal'd in thy nativity
The ſlave of nature, and the ſon of hell:
Thou ſlander of thy heavy mother's womb,
Thou loathed iſſue of thy father's loins,
Thou rag of honour, thou deteſted——

Glo. Margaret.

Q. *Mar. Richard.*

Glo. Ha!

Q. *Mar.* I call thee not.

Glo. I cry thee mercy then; for I did think
That thou had'ſt call'd me all theſe bitter names.

Q. *Mar.* Why ſo I did, but look'd for no reply.
Oh let me make the period to my curſe.

Glo. 'Tis done by me, and ends in *Margaret.*

Queen. Thus have you breath'd your curſe againſt your ſelf.

Q. *Mar.* Poor painted Queen, vain flouriſh of my fortune,
Why ſtrew'ſt thou ſugar on that bottel'd ſpider,
Whoſe deadly web enſnareth thee about?
Fool, fool, thou whet'ſt a knife to kill thy ſelf:
The day will come that thou ſhalt wiſh for me,
To help thee curſe this pois'nous bunch-back'd toad.

Haſt. Falſe boading woman, end thy frantick curſe,

Leſt

Leſt to thy harm thou move our patience.

Q. *Mar.* Foul ſhame upon you, you have all mov'd mine.

Riv. Were you well ſerv'd, you would be taught your duty.

Q. *Mar.* To ſerve me well, you all ſhould do me duty,
Teach me to be your Queen, and you my ſubjects:
O ſerve me well, and teach your ſelves that duty.

Dorſ. Diſpute not with her, ſhe is lunatick.

Q. *Mar.* Peace, maſter Marquiſs, you are malapert;
Your fire-new ſtamp of honour is ſcarce currant.
O that your young nobility could judge
What 'twere to loſe it, and be miſerable.
They that ſtand high have many blaſts to ſhake them,
And if they fall, they daſh themſelves to pieces.

Glo. Good counſel marry, learn it, learn it, Marquiſs.

Dorſ. It touches you, my lord, as much as me.

Glo. Ay, and much more; but I was born ſo high,
Our Airy buildeth in the cedar's top,
And dallies with the wind, and ſcorns the ſun.

Q. *Mar.* And turns the ſun to ſhade; alas! alas!
Witneſs my ſon now in the ſhade of death,
Whoſe bright out-ſhining beams thy cloudy wrath
Hath in eternal darkneſs folded up.
Your Airy buildeth in our Airies neſt;
O God, that ſeeſt it, do not ſuffer it.
As it was won with blood, ſo be it loſt.

Buck. Peace, peace for ſhame, if not for charity.

Q. *Mar.* Urge neither charity nor ſhame to me;
Uncharitably with me have you dealt,
And ſhamefully my hopes, by you, are butcher'd.
My charity is outrage, life my ſhame,
And in my ſhame ſtill live my ſorrow's rage.

Buck. Have done, have done.

Q. *Mar.* O Princely *Buckingham*, I'll kiſs thy hand,

In ſign of league and amity with thee:
Now fair befall thee and thy noble houſe;
Thy garments are not ſpotted with our blood;
Nor thou within the compaſs of my curſe.

Buck. Nor no one here; for curſes never paſs
The lips of thoſe that breathe them in the air.

Q. *Mar.* I'll not believe but they aſcend the ſky,
And there awake God's gentle ſleeping peace.
O *Buckingham*, beware of yonder dog;
Look when he fawns, he bites; and when he bites
His venom tooth will rankle to the death;
Have not to do with him, beware of him,
Sin, death, and hell have ſet their marks upon him,
And all their miniſters attend on him.

Glo. What doth ſhe ſay, my lord of *Buckingham?*

Buck. Nothing that I reſpect, my gracious lord.

Q. *Mar.* What, doſt thou ſcorn me for my gentle counſel?
And ſooth the devil that I warn thee from?
O but remember this another day;
When he ſhall ſplit thy very heart with ſorrow;
And ſay poor *Marg'ret* was a propheteſs.
Live each of you the ſubject to his hate,
And he to yours, and all of you to God's. [*Exit.*

Buck. My hair doth ſtand an end to hear her curſes.

Riv. And ſo doth mine: I wonder ſhe's at liberty.

Glo. I cannot blame her, by God's holy mother,
She hath had too much wrong, and I repent
My part thereof, that I have done to her.

Dorſ. I never did her any, to my knowledge.

Glo. Yet you have all the vantage of her wrong:
I was too hot to do ſome body good,
That is too cold in thinking of it now.
Marry, for *Clarence*, he is well repay'd;

He

He is † frank'd up to fatting for his pains,
God pardon them that are the cauſe thereof.
Riv. A virtuous and a chriſtian-like concluſion,
To pray for them that have done ‡ ſcathe to us.
Glo. So do I ever, being well adviſ'd;
For had I curſt now, I had curſt my ſelf. [*Aſide.*

Enter Catesby.

Cateſ. Madam, his Majeſty doth call for you,
And for your grace, and you, my noble lord.
Queen. Catesby, we come; lords, will you go with us?
Riv. Madam, we will attend your grace.
[*Exeunt all but* Glouceſter.
Glo. I do the wrong, and firſt begin to brawl.
The ſecret miſchiefs that I ſet a-broach
I lay unto the grievous charge of others.
Clarence, whom I indeed have laid in darkneſs,
I do beweep to many ſimple gulls,
Namely to *Derby*, *Haſtings*, *Buckingham*;
And tell them, 'tis the Queen and her allies
That ſtir the King againſt the Duke my brother.
Now they believe it, and withal whet me
To be reveng'd on *Rivers*, *Dorſet*, *Gray*.
But then I ſigh, and with a piece of ſcripture,
Tell them that God bids us do good for evil:
And thus I cloathe my naked villany
With old odd ends, ſtoln forth of holy writ,
And ſeem a Saint, when moſt I play the Devil.

† Frank'd up to fatting.] *A* Frank *is an old* Engliſh *word for a* Hogſty. *'Tis poſſible he uſes this metaphor to* Clarence, *in alluſion to the Creſt of the family of* York, *which was a* Boar. *Whereto relate theſe famous old verſes on* Rich. 3d.

The Cat, the Rat, and Lovel *the Dog*
Rule all England *under a* Hog.

He uſes the ſame metaphor in the laſt Scene of Act 4.

‡ *miſchief.*

Enter two Villains.

But ſoft, here come my executioners.
How now my hardy, ſtout, reſolved mates,
Are you now going to diſpatch this deed?

1 *Vil.* We are, my lord, and come to have the warrant
That we may be admitted where he is.

Glo. Well thought upon, I have it here about me:
When you have done, repair to *Crosby* place.
But, Sirs, be ſudden in the execution,
Withal obdurate, do not hear him plead;
For *Clarence* is well-ſpoken, and perhaps
May move your hearts to pity, if you mark him.

Vil. Fear not my lord, we will not ſtand to prate,
Talkers are no good doers; be aſſur'd,
We go to uſe our hands, and not our tongues.

Glo. Your eyes drop mill-ſtones, when fools eyes drop tears.
I like you lads; about your buſineſs; go. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

The Tower.

Enter Clarence *and* [d] Brakenbury.

Brak. WHY looks your grace ſo heavily to-day?

Clar. O I have paſt a miſerable night,
So full of ugly ſights, of ghaſtly dreams,
That as I am a chriſtian faithful man,
I would not ſpend another ſuch a night
Though 'twere to buy a world of happy days:
So full of diſmal terror was the time.

Brak. What was your dream, my lord? I pray you tell me.

Clar. Methought that I had broken from the *Tower*,

And

[d] *Keeper.*

And was embark'd to croſs to *Burgundy*,
And in my company my brother *Glo'ſter*,
Who from my cabin tempted me to walk
Upon the hatches. Thence we look'd tow'rd *England*,
And cited up a thouſand heavy times,
During the wars of *York* and *Lancaſter*,
That had befal'n us. As we paſs'd along
Upon the giddy footing of the hatches,
Methought that *Glo'ſter* ſtumbled, and in falling
Struck me (that ſought to ſtay him) over-board,
Into the tumbling billows of the main.
Lord, lord, methought, what pain it was to drown!
What dreadful noiſe of waters in my ears!
What ſights of ugly death within mine eyes!
I thought I ſaw a thouſand fearful wracks;
A thouſand men that fiſhes gnaw'd upon:
Wedges of gold, great anchors, heaps of pearl,
Ineſtimable ſtones, unvalued jewels.
Some lay in dead men's skulls; and in thoſe holes
Where eyes did once inhabit, there were crept
As 'twere in ſcorn of eyes, reflecting gems;
That woo'd the ſlimy bottom of the deep,
And mock'd the dead bones that lay ſcatter'd by.

Brak. Had you ſuch leiſure in the time of death,
To gaze upon the ſecrets of the deep?

Clar. Methought I had, and often did I ſtrive
To yield the ghoſt; but ſtill the envious flood
Kept in my ſoul, and would not let it forth
To find the empty, vaſt, and wand'ring air;
But ſmother'd it within my panting bulk,
Which almoſt burſt to belch it in the ſea.

Brak. Awak'd you not in this ſore agony?

Clar. No, no, my dream was lengthend after life.

O then began the tempeſt to my ſoul:
I paſt, methought, the melancholy flood,
With that grim ferry-man which poets write of,
Unto the kingdom of perpetual night.
The firſt that there did greet my ſtranger-ſoul,
Was my great father-in-law, renowned *Warwick*,
Who cry'd aloud-----What ſcourge for perjury
Can this dark monarchy afford falſe *Clarence*?
And ſo he vaniſh'd. Then came wand'ring by
A ſhadow like an angel, with bright hair
Dabbled in blood, and he ſhriek'd out aloud------
Clarence is come, falſe, fleeting, perjur'd *Clarence*,
That ſtabb'd me in the field by *Tewksbury*;
Seize on him, Furies, take him to your torments----
With that, methought, a legion of foul fiends
Inviron'd me, and howled in mine ears
Such hideous cries, that with the very noiſe
I, trembling, wak'd; and for a ſeaſon after
Could not believe but that I was in hell.
Such terrible impreſſion made my dream.

Brak. No marvel, lord, that it affrighted you;
I am afraid, methinks, to hear you tell it.

Clar. Ah *Brakenbury*, I have done thoſe things,
That now give evidence againſt my ſoul,
For *Edward*'s ſake; and ſee how he requites me!
† O God! if my deep prayers cannot appeaſe thee,
But thou wilt be aveng'd on my miſdeeds,
Yet execute thy wrath on me alone:
O ſpare my guiltleſs wife, and my poor children!
I pr'ythee, *Brakenbury*, ſtay by me,
My ſoul is heavy, and I fain would ſleep.

Brak. I will, my lord, God give your grace good reſt.

† Sorrow

† *The four following lines have been added ſince the firſt edition.*

† Sorrow breaks ſeaſons and repoſing hours, [*Aſide.*
Makes the night morning, and the noon-tide night.
Princes have but their titles for their glories,
An outward honour, for an inward toil;
And for unfelt imaginations,
They often feel a world of reſtleſs cares:
So that between their titles, and low name,
There's nothing differs but the outward fame.

SCENE VI.

Enter two Villains.

1 *Vil.* Ho, who's here?

Brak. In God's name, what art thou? how cam'ſt thou hither?

2 *Vil.* I would ſpeak with *Clarence*, and I came hither on my legs.

Brak. What, ſo brief?

1 *Vil.* 'Tis better, Sir, than to be tedious. Let him ſee our commiſſion, and talk no more.

Brak. [*Reads.*] I am in this commanded, to deliver
The noble Duke of *Clarence* to your hands.
I will not reaſon what is meant hereby,
Becauſe I will be guiltleſs of the meaning.
There lyes the Duke aſleep, and there the keys.
I'll to the King, and ſignify to him,
That thus I have reſign'd to you my charge. [*Exit.*

1 *Vil.* You may, Sir, 'tis a point of wiſdom: fare you well.

2 *Vil.* What, ſhall we ſtab him as he ſleeps?

1 *Vil.* No; he'll ſay 'twas done cowardly, when he wakes.

2 *Vil.* Why he ſhall never wake until the great judgment-day.

† *In the common editions the* Keeper *is made to hold the Dialogue with* Clarence, *'till this line. And here* Brakenbury *enters, pronouncing theſe words: which ſeem to me a reflection naturally reſulting from the foregoing converſation, and therefore continu'd to be ſpoken by the ſame perſon; as it is accordingly in the firſt edition.*

1 *Vil.*

1 *Vil.* Why then he'll ſay we ſtabb'd him ſleeping.

2 *Vil.* The urging of that word, judgment, hath bred a kind of remorſe in me.

1 *Vil.* What? art thou afraid?

2 *Vil.* Not to kill him, having a warrant. But to be damn'd for killing him, from the which no warrant can defend me.

1 *Vil.* I'll back to the Duke of *Glo'ſter*, and tell him ſo.

2 *Vil.* Nay, pr'ythee ſtay a little: I hope this [c] holy humour of mine will change; it was wont to hold me but while one tells twenty.

1 *Vil.* How doſt thou feel thy ſelf now?

2 *Vil.* Some certain dregs of conſcience are yet within me.

1 *Vil.* Remember the reward, when the deed's done.

2 *Vil.* Come, he dies: I had forgot the reward.

1 *Vil.* Where's thy conſcience now?

2 *Vil.* O, in the Duke of *Glo'ſter*'s purſe.

1 *Vil.* When he opens his purſe to give us our reward, thy conſcience flies out.

2 *Vil.* 'Tis no matter, let it go; there's few or none will entertain it.

1 *Vil.* What if it come to thee again?

2 *Vil.* I'll not meddle with it, it makes a man a coward: a man cannot ſteal, but it accuſeth him; a man cannot ſwear, but it checks him; a man cannot lye with his neighbour's wife, but it detects him. 'Tis a bluſhing ſhame-fac'd ſpirit, that mutinies in a man's boſom: it fills one full of obſtacles. It made me once reſtore a purſe of gold, that by chance I found. It beggars any man that keeps it. It is turn'd out of towns and cities for a dangerous thing; and every man that means to live well, endeavours to truſt to himſelf, and live without it.

1 *Vil.* 'Tis even now at my elbow, perſuading me not to kill the Duke.

2 *Vil.*

[c] *paſſionate.*

2 *Vil.* Take the devil in thy mind, and believe him not: he would inſinuate with thee but to make thee ſigh.

1 *Vil.* I am ſtrong fram'd, he cannot prevail with me.

2 *Vil.* Spoke like a tall fellow, that reſpects his reputation. Come, ſhall we fall to work?

1 *Vil.* Take him on the coſtard, with the hilt of thy ſword, and then throw him into the malmſie-but in the next room.

2 *Vil.* O excellent device, and make a ſop of him.

1 *Vil.* Soft, he wakes. Shall I ſtrike?

2 *Vil.* No, we'll reaſon with him.

Clar. Where art thou, Keeper? give me a cup of wine.

2 *Vil.* You ſhall have wine enough, my lord, anon.

Clar. In God's name what art thou?

1 *Vil.* A man, as you are.

Clar. But not as I am, royal.

1 *Vil.* Nor you as we are, loyal.

Clar. Thy voice is thunder, but thy looks are humble.

1 *Vil.* My voice is now the King's, my looks mine own.

Clar. How darkly, and how deadly doſt thou ſpeak?
Your eyes do menace me: why look you pale?
Who ſent you hither? wherefore do you come?

2 *Vil.* To, to, to-----

Clar. To murther me?

Both. Ay, ay.

Clar. You ſcarcely have the hearts to tell me ſo!
And therefore cannot have the hearts to do it.
Wherein, my friends, have I offended you?

1 *Vil.* Offended us you have not, but the King.

Clar. I ſhall be reconcil'd to him again.

2 *Vil.* Never, my lord, therefore prepare to die.

Clar. Are you drawn forth among a world of men,
To ſlay the innocent? what's my offence?
Where is the evidence that doth accuſe me?

What lawful queſt have giv'n their verdict up
Unto the frowning judge? or who pronounc'd
The bitter ſentence of poor *Clarence'* death?
Before I be convict by courſe of law,
To threaten me with death, is moſt unlawful.
I charge you, as you hope to have redemption,
That you depart, and lay no hands on me:
The deed you undertake is damnable.

1 *Vil.* What we will do, we do upon command.

2 *Vil.* And he that hath commanded, is our King.

Clar. Erroneous vaſſals, the great King of Kings
Hath in the table of his law commanded,
That thou ſhalt do no murther; will you then
Spurn at his edict, and fulfil a man's?
Take heed, for he holds vengeance in his hand
To hurl upon their heads that break his law.

2 *Vil.* And that ſame vengeance doth he hurl on thee
For falſe forſwearing, and for murther too:
Thou didſt receive the ſacrament, to fight
In quarrel of the houſe of *Lancaſter.*

1 *Vil.* And like a traitor to the name of God,
Didſt break that vow, and with thy treach'rous blade,
Unrip'dſt the bowels of thy Sovereign's ſon.

2 *Vil.* Whom thou wert ſworn to cheriſh and defend.

1 *Vil.* How canſt thou urge God's dreadful law to us,
When thou haſt broke it in ſuch high degree?

Clar. Alas! for whoſe ſake did I that ill deed?
For *Edward*, for my brother, for his ſake.
He ſends you not to murther me for this:
For in that ſin he is as deep as I.
If God will be avenged for the deed, *

Take

*——for the deed,
O know you yet, he doth it publickly,
Take not, &c. *This line interpolated ſince the firſt edition.*

Take not the quarrel from his powerful arm:
He needs no indirect, or lawleſs courſe,
To cut off thoſe that have offended him.
1 *Vil.* Who made thee then a bloody miniſter,
When gallant-ſpringing brave *Plantagenet*,
That Princely novice was ſtruck dead by thee?
Clar. My brother's love, the devil, and my rage.
1 *Vil.* Thy brother's love, our duty, and thy fault,
Provoke us hither now, to ſlaughter thee.
Clar. If you do love my brother, hate not me:
I am his brother, and I love him well.
If you are hir'd for need, go back again,
And I will ſend you to my brother *Glo'ſter:*
Who will reward you better for my life,
Then *Edward* will for tidings of my death.
2 *Vil.* You are deceiv'd, your brother *Glo'ſter* hates you.
Clar. Oh no, he loves me, and he holds me dear:
Go you to him from me.
1 *Vil.* Ay, ſo we will.
Clar. Tell him, when that our Princely father *York*,
Bleſt his three ſons with his victorious arm,
† And charg'd us from his ſoul to love each other,
He little thought of this divided friendſhip:
Bid *Glo'ſter* think on this, and he will weep.
1 *Vil.* Ay, milſtones; as he leſſon'd us to weep.
Clar. O do not ſlander him, for he is kind.
1 *Vil.* As ſnow in harveſt:----- you deceive your ſelf,
'Tis he that ſends us to deſtroy you here.
Clar. It cannot be, for he bewept my fortune,
And hugg'd me in his arms, and ſwore with ſobs,
That he would labour my delivery.
1 *Vil.* Why ſo he doth, when he delivers you
From this earth's thraldom to the joys of heav'n.

† *This neceſſary line is reſtor'd from the old edition.*

2 *Vil.* Make peace with God, for you muſt die, my lord.

Clar. Have you that holy feeling in your ſoul,
To counſel me to make my peace with God,
And are you yet to your own ſouls ſo blind,
That you will war with God, by murd'ring me?
O Sirs, conſider, they that ſet you on
To do this deed, will hate you for the deed.

2 *Vil.* What ſhall we do?

Clar. Relent, and ſave your ſouls. *

1 *Vil.* Relent? 'tis cowardly and womaniſh.

Clar. Not to relent, is beaſtly, ſavage, deviliſh.
My friend, I ſpy ſome pity in thy looks:
O, if thine eye be not a flatterer,
Come thou on my ſide, and intreat for me. *

1 *Vil.* Take that, and that; if all this will not do,
[*Stabs him.*
I'll drown you in the malmſey-butt within. [*Exit.*

2 *Vil.* A bloody deed, and deſp'rately diſpatch'd:
How fain, like *Pilate*, would I waſh my hands
Of this moſt grievous murther.

Re-enter firſt Villain.

1 *Vil.* How now? what mean'ſt thou that thou help'ſt me not?
By heav'n, the Duke ſhall know how ſlack you've been.

2 *Vil.* I would he knew, that I had ſav'd his brother:

* ——and ſave your ſouls.
Which of you, if you were a Prince's ſon,
Being pent from liberty, as I am now,
If two ſuch murtherers as your ſelves came to you,
Would not intreat for life, as you would beg
Were you in my diſtreſs. *Theſe lines are not in the old edition.*
1 *Vil.* Relent? *&c.*

* ——intreat for me,
A begging Prince what beggar pities not?
2 *Vil.* Look behind you, my lord.
1 *Vil.* Take that, *&c.*

Take

Take thou the fee, and tell him what I ſay,
For I repent me that the Duke is ſlain. [*Exit.*

1 *Vil.* So do not I; go coward as thou art.
Well, I'll go hide the body in ſome hole,
'Till that the Duke give order for his burial:
And when I have my meed, I muſt away;
For this will out, and then I muſt not ſtay. [*Exit.*

ACT II. SCENE I.

The COURT.

Flouriſh. Enter King Edward *ſick, the Queen,* Dorſet, Rivers, Haſtings, Catesby, Buckingham, *and* Woodvil.

K. EDWARD.

WHY ſo; now have I done a good day's work.
You Peers continue this united league:
I every day expect an embaſſage
From my redeemer to [a] recall me hence.
And [b] now in peace my ſoul ſhall part to heav'n,
Since I have made my friends at peace on earth;
Haſtings and *Rivers*, take each other's hand,
Diſſemble not your hatred, ſwear your love.

Riv. By heav'n, my ſoul is purg'd from grudging hate,
And with my hand I ſeal my true heart's love.

Haſt. So thrive I, as I truly ſwear the like.

K. *Edw.* Take heed you dally not before your King,
Leſt he that is the ſupream King of Kings
Confound your hidden falſhood, and award
Either of you to be the other's end.

Haſt.

[a] *redeem.* [b] *more.*

Haſt. So proſper I, as I ſwear perfect love.
Riv. And I, as I love *Haſtings* with my heart.
K. *Edw.* Madam, your ſelf is not exempt from this;
Nor your ſon *Dorſet*, *Buckingham* nor you;
You have been factious one againſt the other.
Wife, love lord *Haſtings*, let him kiſs your hand,
And what you do, do it unfeignedly.
Queen. There *Haſtings*, I will never more remember
Our former hatred, ſo thrive I and mine.
K. *Edw.* *Dorſet*, embrace him: *Haſtings*, love lord Marquiſs.
Dor. This interchange of love, I here proteſt,
Upon my part, ſhall be inviolable.
Haſt. And ſo ſwear I.
K. *Edw.* Now Princely *Buckingham*, ſeal thou this league
With thy embracements to my wife's allies,
And make me happy in your unity.
Buck. When ever *Buckingham* doth turn his hate
Upon your grace, and not with duteous love, [*To the Queen.*
Doth cheriſh you and yours, God puniſh me
With hate in thoſe where I expect moſt love.
When I have moſt need to imploy a friend,
And moſt aſſured that he is a friend,
Deep, hollow, treacherous, and full of guile,
Be he to me; this do I beg of heaven,
When I am cold in zeal to you or yours. [*Embracing* Riv. *&c.*
K. *Edw.* A pleaſing cordial, Princely *Buckingham*,
Is this thy vow unto my ſickly heart.
There wanteth now our brother *Glo'ſter* here,
To make the bleſſed period of this peace.
Buck. And in good time, here comes the noble Duke.

Enter Ratcliff *and* Glouceſter.

Glo. Good morrow to my Sovereign King and Queen,

And

And Princely Peers a happy time of day.

K. *Edw.* Happy indeed, as we have ſpent the day:
Brother, we have done deeds of charity,
Made peace of enmity, fair love of hate,
Between theſe ſwelling wrong-incenſed Peers.

Glo. A bleſſed labour, my moſt Sovereign Liege:
Among this Princely heap, if any here
By falſe intelligence, or wrong ſurmiſe
Hold me a foe: if I unwittingly
Have ought committed that is hardly born
By any in this preſence, I deſire
To reconcile me to his friendly peace:
'Tis death to me to be at enmity;
I hate it, and deſire all good men's love.
Firſt, madam, I intreat true peace of you,
Which I will purchaſe with my duteous ſervice.
Of you my noble couſin *Buckingham*,
If ever any grudge were lodg'd between us.
Of you and you, lord *Rivers* and of *Dorſet*,
That all without deſert have frown'd on me:
Of you lord *Woodvil*, and lord *Scales* of you,
Dukes, Earls, lords, gentlemen, indeed of all.
I do not know that *Engliſhman* alive,
With whom my ſoul is any jot at odds,
More than the infant that is born to-night;
I thank my God for my humility.

Queen. A holy-day ſhall this be kept hereafter;
I would to God all ſtrifes were well compounded.
My Sovereign lord, I do beſeech your highneſs
To take our brother *Clarence* to your grace.

Glo. Why, madam, have I offer'd love for this,
To be ſo flouted in this royal preſence?
Who knows not that the gentle Duke is dead? [*They all ſtart.*

You

You do him injury to ſcorn his coarſe.

K. *Edw.* Who knows not he is dead! who knows he is?

Queen. All-ſeeing heaven, what a world is this?

Buck. Look I ſo pale, lord *Dorſet*, as the reſt?

Dor. Ay, my good lord; and no man in the preſence
But his red colour hath forſook his cheeks.

K. *Edw.* Is *Clarence* dead? the order was revers'd.

Glo. But he, poor man, by your firſt order died,
And that a winged *Mercury* did bear:
Some tardy cripple had the countermand,
That came too lag, to ſee him buried.
God grant, that ſome leſs noble, and leſs loyal,
Nearer in bloody thoughts, and not in blood,
Deſerve no worſe than wretched *Clarence* did,
And yet go currant from ſuſpicion.

Enter Earl of Derby.

Derby. A boon, my Sov'raign, for my ſervice done.

K. *Edw.* I pr'ythee peace, my ſoul is full of ſorrow.

Derby. I will not riſe, unleſs your highneſs hear me.

K. *Edw.* Then ſay at once, what is it thou requeſt'ſt.

Derby. The forfeit, Sov'raign, of my ſervant's life,
Who ſlew to-day a riotous gentleman,
Lately attendant on the Duke of *Norfolk.*

K. *Edw.* Have I a tongue to doom my brother's death?
And ſhall that tongue give pardon to a ſlave?
My brother kill'd no man, his fault was thought,
And yet his puniſhment was bitter death.
Who ſued to me for him? who, in my wrath,
Kneel'd at my feet; and bid me be advis'd?
Who ſpoke of brotherhood? who ſpoke of love?
Who told me, how the poor ſoul did forſake
The mighty *Warwick*, and did fight for me?

Who told me in the field at *Tewksbury*,
When *Oxford* had me down, he reſcued me?
And ſaid, dear brother live and be a King?
Who told me, when we both lay in the field,
Frozen almoſt to death, how he did lap me
Ev'n in his garments, and did give himſelf
All thin and naked to the numb cold night?
All this from my remembrance brutiſh wrath
Sinfully pluck'd, and not a man of you
Had ſo much grace to put it in my mind.
But when your carters, or your waiting vaſſals
Have done a drunken ſlaughter, and defac'd
The precious image of our dear redeemer,
You ſtrait are on your knees for pardon, pardon,
And I, unjuſtly too, muſt grant it you.
But for my brother, not a man would ſpeak,
Nor I, ungracious, ſpake unto my ſelf
For him, poor ſoul. The proudeſt of you all
Have been beholden to him in his life:
Yet none of you would once plead for his life.
O God! I fear thy juſtice will take hold
On me, and you; and mine, and yours, for this.
Come *Haſtings* help me to my cloſet. Ah!
Poor *Clarence!* [*Exeunt ſome with the King and Queen.*

Glo. Theſe are the fruits of raſhneſs: mark'd you not,
How that the guilty kindred of the Queen
Look'd pale, when they did hear of *Clarence'* death?
O! they did urge it ſtill unto the King.
God will revenge it. Come, lords, will you go,
To comfort *Edward* with our company? [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.

Enter the Dutcheſs of York, *with the two children of* Clarence.

Son. GOOD grandam tell us, is our father dead?
Dutch. No, boy.
Daugh. Why do you weep ſo oft? and beat your breaſt?
And cry, O *Clarence!* my unhappy ſon!
Son. Why do you look on us, and ſhake your head,
And call us orphans, wretches, caſt-aways,
If that our noble father be alive?
Dutch. My pretty couſins, you miſtake me both.
I do lament the ſickneſs of the King,
As loth to loſe him; not your father's death;
It were loſt ſorrow to wail one that's loſt.
Son. Then you conclude, my grandam, he is dead:
The King mine uncle is to blame for this.
God will revenge it, whom I will importune
With daily earneſt prayers.
Daugh. And ſo will I.
Dutch. Peace, children, peace; the King doth love you well.
Incapable and ſhallow innocents!
You cannot gueſs who caus'd your father's death.
Son. Grandam, we can; for my good uncle *Glo'ſter*
Told me the King, provok'd to't by the Queen,
Deviſ'd impeachments to impriſon him;
And when my uncle told me ſo, he wept,
And pitied me; and kindly kiſt my cheek;
Bad me rely on him, as on my father,
And he would love me dearly as his child.
Dutch. Ah! that deceit ſhould ſteal ſuch gentle ſhape,
And with a virtuous vizard hide deep vice.

He

He is my ſon, ay, and therein my ſhame,
Yet from my dugs he drew not this deceit.

Son. Think you my uncle did diſſemble, grandam?

Dutch. Ay, boy.

Son. I cannot think it. Hark, what noiſe is this?

Enter the Queen with her hair about her ears, Rivers *and* Dorſet *after her.*

Queen. Ah! who ſhall hinder me to wail and weep?
To chide my fortune, and torment my ſelf?
I'll join with black deſpair againſt my ſoul,
And to my ſelf become an enemy------

Dutch. What means this ſcene of rude impatience?

Queen. To make an act of tragick violence.
Edward, my lord, thy ſon, our king, is dead.
Why grow the branches, when the root is gone?
Why wither not the leaves, that want their ſap?
If you will live, lament; if die, be brief;
That our ſwift-winged ſouls may catch the King's,
Or like obedient ſubjects follow him,
To his new kingdom of [c] perpetual reſt.

Dutch. Ay, ſo much int'reſt have I in thy ſorrow,
As I had title to thy noble husband;
I have bewept a worthy husband's death,
And liv'd by looking on his images.
But now two mirrors of his Princely ſemblance
Are crack'd in pieces by malignant death;
And I for comfort have but one falſe glaſs,
That grieves me when I ſee my ſhame in him.
Thou art a widow, yet thou art a mother,
And haſt the comfort of thy children left:
But death hath ſnatch'd my husband from mine arms,
And pluckt two crutches from my feeble hands,

[c] *ne'er-changing night.*

Clarence and *Edward.* O, what cauſe have I,
(Thine being but a moiety of my [d] grief)
To over-go thy [e] plaints, and drown thy cries.
Son. Ah aunt! you wept not for our father's death;
How can we aid you with our kindred tears?
Daugh. Our fatherleſs diſtreſs was left unmoan'd,
Your widow dolours likewiſe be unwept.
Queen. Give me no help in lamentation,
I am not barren to bring forth complaints: *
Ah for my husband, for my dear lord *Edward!*
Chil. Ah, for our father, for our dear lord *Clarence!*
Dutch. Alas, for both, both mine, *Edward* and *Clarence!*
Queen. What ſtay had I, but *Edward?* and he's gone.
Chil. What ſtay had we, but *Clarence?* and he's gone.
Dutch. What ſtays had I but they? and they are gone.
Queen. Was never widow had ſo dear a loſs.
Chil. Were never orphans had ſo dear a loſs.
Dutch. Was never mother had ſo dear a loſs.
Alas! I am the mother of theſe griefs,
Their woes are parcell'd, mine are general.
She for an *Edward* weeps, and ſo do I;
I for a *Clarence* weep, ſo doth not ſhe;
Theſe babes for *Clarence* weep, and ſo do I.
Alas! you three, on me threefold diſtreſt
Pour all your tears; I am your ſorrow's nurſe,
And I will pamper it with lamentations.
Dor. Comfort, dear mother; God is much diſpleas'd,
That with unthankfulneſs you take his doing.

[d] *moan.* [e] *woes.*

*——forth complaints:
All ſprings reduce their currents to mine eyes,
That I being govern'd by the watry moon,
May ſend forth plenteous tears to drown the world.
Ah, for my husband——

In

In common worldly things 'tis call'd ungrateful
With dull unwillingneſs to pay a debt,
Which with a bounteous hand was kindly lent:
Much more to be thus oppoſite with heav'n;
For it requires the royal debt it lent you.

Rivers. Madam, bethink you like a careful mother
Of the young Prince your ſon; ſend ſtrait for him,
Let him be crown'd, in him your comfort lives.
Drown deſp'rate ſorrow in dead *Edward*'s grave,
And plant your joys in living *Edward*'s throne.

SCENE III.

Enter Glouceſter, Buckingham, Derby, Haſtings *and* Ratcliff.

Glo. Siſter, have comfort: all of us have cauſe,
To wail the dimming of our ſhining ſtar:
But none can help our harms by wailing them.
Madam, my mother, I do cry you mercy,
I did not ſee you. Humbly on my knee
I crave your bleſſing.

Dutch. God bleſs thee, and put meekneſs in thy breaſt,
Love, charity, obedience, and true duty.

Glo. Amen, and make me die a good old man.
That is the butt end of a mother's bleſſing;
I marvel that her grace did leave it out.

Buck. You cloudy Princes, and heart-ſorrowing Peers,
That bear this mutual heavy load of moan,
Now chear each other in each other's love;
Though we have ſpent our harveſt of this King,
We are to reap the harveſt of his ſon.
The broken rancor of your high-ſwoln hearts,
But lately ſplinter'd, knit and join'd together,
Muſt gently be preſerv'd, cheriſh'd and kept:

Me

Me ſeemeth good, that with ſome little train,
Forthwith from *Ludlow* the young Prince be fetcht
Hither to *London*, to be crown'd our King.

Riv. Why with ſome little train, my lord of *Buckingham?*

Buck. Marry, my lord, leſt by a multitude
The new-heal'd wound of malice ſhould break out;
Which would be ſo much the more dangerous,
By how much the eſtate is yet ungovern'd.
Where every horſe bears his commanding rein,
And may direct his courſe as pleaſe himſelf,
As well the fear of harm, as harm apparent,
In my opinion ought to be prevented.

Glo. I hope the King made peace with all of us,
And the compact is firm and true in me.

Riv. And ſo in me, and ſo I think in all.
Yet ſince it is but green, it ſhould be put
To no apparent likelihood of breach,
Which haply by much company might be urg'd;
Therefore I ſay, with noble *Buckingham*,
That it is meet ſo few ſhould fetch the Prince.

Haſt. And ſo ſay I.

Glo. Then be it ſo, and go we to determine
Who they ſhall be that ſtrait ſhall poſt to [f] *Ludlow*.
Madam, and you my ſiſter, will you go,
To give your cenſures in this weighty buſineſs? [*Exeunt.*

[*Manent* Buckingham *and* Glouceſter.

Buck. My lord, whoever journies to the Prince,
For God's ſake let not us two ſtay at home;
For by the way, I'll ſort occaſion,
As index to the ſtory we late talk'd of,
To part the Queen's proud kindred from the Prince.

Glo. My other ſelf, my counſel's conſiſtory,
My oracle, my prophet, my dear couſin!

I,

[f] *London.*

I, as a child, will go by thy direction.
Tow'rd *Ludlow* then, for we'll not ſtay behind. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

Enter one Citizen at one door, and another at the other.

1 *Cit.* GOOD morrow neighbour, whither away ſo faſt?
2 *Cit.* I promiſe you I hardly know my ſelf:
Hear you the news abroad?
1 *Cit.* Yes, the King is dead.
2 *Cit.* Ill news by'r lady, ſeldom comes a better:
I fear, I fear, 'twill prove a giddy world.

Enter another Citizen.

3 *Cit.* Neighbours, God ſpeed.
1 *Cit.* Give you good morrow, Sir.
3 *Cit.* Doth the news hold of good King *Edward*'s death?
2 *Cit.* Ay, Sir, it is too true, God help the while.
3 *Cit.* Then maſters look to ſee a troublous world.
1 *Cit.* No, no, by God's good grace his ſon ſhall reign.
3 *Cit.* Wo to that land that's govern'd by a child.
2 *Cit.* In him there is a hope of government:
Which in his non-age, counſel under him,
And in his full and ripen'd years, himſelf
No doubt ſhall then, and till then govern well.
1 *Cit.* So ſtood the ſtate when *Henry* the Sixth
Was crown'd in *Paris*, but at nine months old.
3 *Cit.* Stood the ſtate ſo? no, no, good friends, God wot;
For then this land was famouſly enrich'd
With politick grave counſel; then the King
Had virtuous uncles to protect his grace.
1 *Cit.* Why ſo hath this, both by his father and mother.

3 *Cit.*

3 *Cit.* Better it were they all came by his father;
Or by his father there were none at all:
For emulation, who ſhall now be neareſt,
Will touch us all too near, if God prevent not.
O full of danger is the Duke of *Glo'ſter*,
And the Queen's ſons and brothers haughty, proud:
And were they to be rul'd, and not to rule,
This ſickly land might ſolace as before.

1 *Cit.* Come, come, we fear the worſt; all will be well.

3 *Cit.* When clouds are ſeen, wiſe men put on their cloaks;
When great leaves fall, then winter is at hand;
When the ſun ſets, who doth not look for night?
Untimely ſtorms make men expect a dearth:
All may be well; but if God ſort it ſo,
'Tis more than we deſerve, or I expect.

2 *Cit.* Truly the hearts of men are full of fear:
You cannot reaſon almoſt with a man
That looks not heavily, and full of dread.

3 *Cit.* Before the days of change, ſtill is it ſo;
By a divine inſtinct men's minds miſtruſt
Enſuing danger; as by proof we ſee
The water ſwell before a boiſt'rous ſtorm.
But leave it all to God. Whither away?

2 *Cit.* Marry we were ſent for to the juſtices.

3 *Cit.* And ſo was I, I'll bear you company. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

Enter Archbiſhop of York, *the young Duke of* York, *the Queen, and the Dutcheſs.*

Arch. I Heard they lay the laſt night at *Northampton*,
At *Stony-Stratford* they do reſt to-night:

To-morrow or next day they will be here.
Dutch. I long with all my heart to ſee the Prince;
I hope he is much grown ſince laſt I ſaw him.
Queen. But I hear not, they ſay my ſon of *York*
Has almoſt overta'en him in his growth.
York. Ay, mother, but I would not have it ſo.
Dutch. Why, my good couſin, it is good to grow.
York. Grandam, one night as we did ſit at ſupper,
My uncle *Rivers* talk'd how I did grow
More than my brother. Ay, quoth my uncle *Glo'ſter*,
Small herbs have grace, great weeds do grow apace.
And ſince, methinks I would not grow ſo faſt,
Becauſe ſweet flow'rs are ſlow, and weeds make haſte.
Dutch. Good faith, good faith, the ſaying did not hold
In him that did object the ſame to thee.
He was the wretched'ſt thing when he was young,
So long a growing, and ſo leiſurely,
That if his rule were true, he ſhould be gracious.
York. And ſo no doubt he is, my gracious madam.
Dutch. I hope he is, but yet let mothers doubt.
York. Now by my troth, if I had been remember'd,
I could have giv'n my uncle's grace a flout
To touch his growth, nearer than he touch'd mine.
Dutch. How, my young *York?* I pr'ythee let me hear it.
York. Marry, they ſay, my uncle grew ſo faſt,
That he could gnaw a cruſt at two hours old;
'Twas full two years ere I could get a tooth.
Grandam, this would have been a biting jeſt.
Dutch. I pr'ythee, pretty *York*, who told thee this?
York. Grandam, his nurſe.
Dutch. His nurſe! why ſhe was dead ere thou waſt born.
York. If 'twere not ſhe, I cannot tell who told me.
Queen. A parlous boy-----go to, you are too ſhrewd.

Dutch. Good madam, be not angry with a child.
Queen. Pitchers have ears.

Enter a Meſſenger.

Arch. Here comes a meſſenger: what news?
Meſ. Such news, my lord, as grieves me to report.
Queen. How doth the Prince?
Meſ. Well, madam, and in health.
Dutch. What is thy news?
Meſ. Lord *Rivers* and lord *Grey* are ſent to *Pomfret*,
With them Sir *Thomas Vaughan*, priſoners.
Dutch. Who hath committed them?
Meſ. The mighty Dukes,
Glo'ſter and *Buckingham.*
Arch. For what offence?
Meſ. The ſum of all I can I have diſclos'd:
Why, or for what, the nobles were committed,
Is all unknown to me, my gracious lady.
Queen. Ah me! I ſee the ruin of my houſe;
The tyger now hath ſeiz'd the gentle hind.
Inſulting tyranny begins to jut
Upon the innocent and awleſs throne;
Welcome deſtruction, blood and maſſacre!
I ſee, as in a map, the end of all.
Dutch. Accurſed and unquiet wrangling days!
How many of you have mine eyes beheld;
My husband loſt his life to get the crown,
And often up and down my ſons were toſt,
For me to joy and weep their gain and loſs.
And being ſeated, and domeſtick broils
Clean over blown, themſelves the conquerors,
Make war upon themſelves, blood againſt blood,
Self againſt ſelf; O moſt prepoſterous

And frantick outrage! end thy damned ſpleen,
Or let me die, to look on earth no more.

Queen. Come, come, my boy, we will to Sanctuary.
Madam, farewel.

Dutch. Stay, I will go with you.

Queen. You have no cauſe.

Arch. My gracious lady, go,
And thither bear your treaſure and your goods.
For my part, I'll reſign unto your grace
The ſeal I keep; and ſo betide it me,
As well I tender you, and all of yours.
Go, I'll conduct you to the Sanctuary. [*Exeunt.*

ACT III. SCENE I.

Continues in London.

The Trumpets ſound. Enter Prince of Wales, *the Dukes of* Glouceſter *and* Buckingham, *Archbiſhop, with others.*

BUCKINGHAM.

WELCOME ſweet Prince to *London*, to your † chamber.

Glo. Welcome dear couſin, my thoughts Soveraign,
The weary way hath made you melancholy.

Prince. No, uncle, but our croſſes on the way
Have made it tedious, weariſom and heavy.
I want more uncles here to welcome me.

Glo. Sweet Prince, th' untainted virtue of your years
Hath not yet div'd into the world's deceit:

† London *was anciently call'd* Camera regia.

No more can you diſtinguiſh of a man,
Than of his outward ſhew, which, God he knows,
Seldom or never jumpeth with the heart.
Thoſe uncles which you want were dangerous:
Your grace attended to their ſugar'd words,
But look'd not on the poiſon of their hearts:
God keep you from them, and from ſuch falſe friends.

Prince. God keep me from falſe friends, but they were none.

Glo. My lord, the Mayor of *London* comes to greet you.

Enter Lord Mayor.

Mayor. God bleſs your grace with health and happy days.

Prince. I thank you, good my lord, and thank you all:
I thought my mother, and my brother *York*,
Would long ere this have met us on the way.
Fie, what a ſlug is *Haſtings?* that he comes not
To tell us, whether they will come or no.

Enter Lord Haſtings.

Buck. And in good time here comes the ſweating lord.

Prince. Welcome, my lord; what, will our mother come?

Haſt. On what occaſion God he knows, not I,
The Queen your mother, and your brother *York*,
Have taken Sanctuary; the tender Prince
Would fain have come with me to meet your grace,
But by his mother was perforce with-held.

Buck. Fie, what an indirect and peeviſh courſe
Is this of hers? Lord Cardinal, will your grace
Perſuade the Queen to ſend the Duke of *York*
Unto his Princely brother preſently?
If ſhe deny, lord *Haſtings*, you go with him,
And from her jealous arms pluck him perforce.

Arch. My lord of *Buckingham*, if my weak oratory

Can

Can from his mother win the Duke of *York*,
Anon expect him here; but if ſhe be
Obdurate to entreaties, God forbid
We ſhould infringe the holy privilege
Of ſanctuary; not for all this land
Would I be guilty of ſo deep a ſin.

Buck. You are too ſenſeleſs, obſtinate, my lord,
Too ceremonious and traditional.
Weigh it but with the groſsneſs of this age,
You break not ſanctuary, in ſeizing him;
The benefit thereof is always granted
To thoſe whoſe dealings have deſerv'd the place,
And thoſe who have the wit to claim the place:
This Prince hath neither claim'd it, nor deſerv'd it,
Therefore, in mine opinion, cannot have it.
Then taking him from thence that is not there,
You break no privilege nor charter there:
Oft have I heard of ſanctuary men,
But ſanctuary children ne'er 'till now.

Arch. My lord, you ſhall o'er-rule my mind for once.
Come on, lord *Haſtings*, will you go with me?

Haſt. I go, my lord. [*Exeunt Archbiſhop and* Haſtings.

Prince. Good lords, make all the ſpeedy haſte you may.
Say, uncle *Glo'ſter*, if our brother come,
Where ſhall we ſojourn 'till our coronation?

Glo. Where it ſeems beſt unto your royal ſelf?
If I may counſel you, ſome day or two
Your highneſs ſhall repoſe you at the *Tower*:
Then where you pleaſe, and ſhall be thought moſt fit
For your beſt health and recreation.

Prince. I do not like the *Tower* of any place;
Did *Julius Cæſar* build that place, my lord?

Buck. He did, my gracious lord, begin that place,

Which

Which ſince, ſucceeding ages have re-edify'd.

Prince. Is it upon record? or elſe reported
Succeſſively from age to age he built it?

Buck. Upon record, my gracious lord.

Prince. But ſay, my lord, it were not regiſter'd,
Methinks the truth ſhould live from age to age,
As 'twere retail'd to all poſterity,
Even to the general ending day.

Glo. So wiſe, ſo young, they ſay do ne'er live long.

Prince. What ſay you, uncle?

Glo. I ſay, without characters fame lives long.
Thus, like the formal vice, iniquity, [*Aſide.*
I moralize two meanings in one word.

Prince. That *Julius Cæſar* was a famous man;
With what his valour did enrich his wit,
His wit ſet down to make his valour live:
Death makes no conqueſt of his conqueror;
For now he lives in fame, though not in life.
I'll tell you what, my couſin *Buckingham.*

Buck. What, my gracious lord?

Prince. And if I live until I be a man,
I'll win our ancient right in *France* again,
Or die a ſoldier, as I liv'd a King.

Glo. Short ſummers lightly has a forward ſpring.

Enter York, Haſtings, *and Archbiſhop.*

Buck. Now in good time here comes the Duke of *York.*

Prince. Richard of *York,* how fares our noble brother?

York. Well, my dread lord, ſo muſt I call you now.

Prince. Ay, brother, to our grief, as it is yours;
Too late he dy'd that might have kept that title,
Which by his death hath loſt much majeſty.

Glo. How fares our couſin, noble lord of *York?*

York.

York. I thank you, gentle uncle. O my lord,
You ſaid, that idle weeds are faſt in growth:
The Prince my brother hath outgrown me far.
Glo. He hath, my lord.
York. And therefore is he idle?
Glo. Oh my fair couſin I muſt not ſay ſo.
York. Then he is more beholden to you than I.
Glo. He may command me as my Soveraign,
But you have pow'r in me, as in a kinſman.
York. I pray you uncle, give me this dagger.
Glo. My dagger, little couſin? with all my heart.
Prince. A beggar, brother?
York. Of my kind uncle, that I know will give,
And being a toy it is no grief to give.
Glo. A greater gift than that I'll give my couſin.
York. A greater gift? O, that's the ſword to it.
Glo. Ay, gentle couſin, were it light enough.
York. O then I ſee you'll part but with light gifts,
In weightier things you'll ſay a beggar nay.
Glo. It is too weighty for your grace to wear.
York. I weigh it lightly were it heavier.
Glo. What, would you have my weapon, little lord?
York. I would, that I might thank you, as you call me.
Glo. How?
York. Little.
Prince. My lord of *York* will ſtill be croſs in talk:
Uncle, your grace knows how to bear with him.
York. You mean to bear me, not to bear with me:
Uncle, my brother mocks both you and me:
Becauſe that I am little, like an ape,
He thinks that you ſhould bear me on your ſhoulders.
Buck. With what a ſharp provided wit he reaſons!
To mitigate the ſcorn he gives his uncle,

He

He prettily and aptly taunts himſelf;
So cunning, and ſo young, is wonderful.
Glo. My lord, will't pleaſe you paſs along?
My ſelf, and my good couſin *Buckingham*
Will to your mother, to entreat of her
To meet you at the *Tower*, and welcome you.
York. What, will you go unto the *Tower*, my lord?
Prince. My lord Protector will have it ſo.
York. I ſhall not ſleep in quiet at the *Tower*.
Glo. Why, what ſhould you fear?
York. Marry, my uncle *Clarence'* angry ghoſt:
My grandam told me he was murther'd there.
Prince. I fear no uncles dead.
Glo. Nor none that live, I hope.
Prince. And if they live, I hope I need not fear.
But come my lord, and with a heavy heart,
Thinking on them, go I unto the *Tower*.

[*Exeunt Prince*, York, Haſtings *and* Dorſet.

SCENE II.

Manent Glouceſter, Buckingham *and* Catesby.

Buck. Think you, my lord, this little prating *York*
Was not incenſed by his ſubtle mother,
To taunt and ſcorn you thus opprobriouſly?
Glo. No doubt, no doubt: oh 'tis a per'lous boy,
Bold, quick, ingenious, forward, capable;
He's all the mother's, from the top to toe.
Buck. Well, let them reſt: come *Catesby*, thou art ſworn
As deeply to effect what we intend,
As cloſely to conceal what we impart:
Thou know'ſt our reaſons urg'd upon the way,
What think'ſt thou? is it not an eaſie matter

To

To make lord *William Haſtings* of our mind,
For the inſtalment of this noble Duke
In the ſeat royal of this famous Iſle?
Cateſ. He for his father's ſake ſo loves the Prince,
That he will not be won to ought againſt him.
Buck. What think'ſt thou then of *Stanley?* will not he?
Cateſ. He will do all in all as *Haſtings* doth.
Buck. Well then, no more than this: go, gentle *Catesby*,
And as it were far off ſound thou lord *Haſtings*,
How he doth ſtand affected to our purpoſe;
And ſummon him to-morrow to the *Tower*,
To ſit about the coronation.
If thou doſt find him tractable to us,
Encourage him, and tell him all our reaſons:
If he be leaden, icy, cold, unwilling,
Be thou ſo too, and ſo break off the talk,
And give us notice of his inclination:
For we to-morrow hold divided councils,
Wherein thy ſelf ſhalt highly be employ'd.
Glo. Commend me to lord *William*; tell him, *Catesby*,
His ancient knot of dangerous adverſaries
To-morrow are let blood at *Pomfret* caſtle,
And bid my friend, for joy of this good news,
Give miſtreſs *Shore* one gentle kiſs the more.
Buck. Good *Catesby*, go, effect this buſineſs ſoundly.
Cateſ. My good lords both, with all the heed I can.
Glo. Shall we hear from you, *Catesby*, ere we ſleep?
Cateſ. You ſhall, my lord.
Glo. At *Crosby* place there you ſhall find us both. [*Ex.* Cat.
Buck. My lord, what ſhall we do, if we perceive
Lord *Haſtings* will not yield to our complots?
Glo. Chop off his head, Man; ſomewhat we will do,
And look when I am King, claim thou of me

Th' Earldom of *Hereford*, and all the moveables
Whereof the King, my brother, ſtood poſſeſt.
Buck. I'll claim that promiſe at your grace's hand.
Glo. And look to have it yielded with all kindneſs.
Come, let us ſup betimes, that afterwards
We may digeſt our complots in ſome form. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

Enter a Meſſenger to the door of Haſtings.

Meſ. MY lord, my lord.
Haſt. Who knocks?
Meſ. One from lord *Stanley*.
Haſt. What is't a clock?
Meſ. Upon the ſtroak of four.

Enter Lord Haſtings.

Haſt. Cannot thy maſter ſleep theſe tedious nights?
Meſ. So it appears by what I have to ſay:
Firſt, he commends him to your noble ſelf.
Haſt. What then?
Meſ. Then certifies your lordſhip, that this night
He dreamt the boar had raſed off his helm:
Beſides, he ſays there are two councils held,
And that may be determin'd at the one,
Which may make you and him to rue at th' other.
Therefore he ſends to know your lordſhip's pleaſure,
If you will preſently take horſe with him,
And with all ſpeed poſt with him tow'rds the north,
To ſhun the danger that his ſoul divines.
Haſt. Go, fellow, go, return unto thy lord,
Bid him not fear the ſeparated councils:

His

His honour and my ſelf are at the one,
And at the other is my good friend *Catesby*;
Where nothing can proceed that toucheth us,
Whereof I ſhall not have intelligence:
Tell him his fears are ſhallow, without inſtance;
And for his dreams, I wonder he's ſo [a] fond
To truſt the mock'ry of unquiet ſlumbers.
To fly the boar, before the boar purſues,
Were to incenſe the boar to follow us,
And make purſuit where he did mean no chaſe.
Go, bid thy maſter riſe and come to me,
And we will both together to the *Tower*,
Where he ſhall ſee the boar will uſe us kindly.

Meſ. I'll go, my lord, and tell him what you ſay. [*Exit.*

Enter Catesby.

Cateſ. Many good morrows to my noble lord.

Haſt. Good morrow, *Catesby*, you are early ſtirring:
What news, what news in this our tott'ring ſtate?

Cateſ. It is a reeling world indeed, my lord;
And I believe will never ſtand upright,
'Till *Richard* wear the garland of the realm.

Haſt. How! wear the garland? doſt thou mean the crown?

Cateſ. Ay, my good lord.

Haſt. I'll have this crown of mine cut from my ſhoulders,
Before I'll ſee the crown ſo foul miſplac'd.
But canſt thou gueſs that he doth aim at it?

Cateſ. Ay, on my life, and hopes to find you forward
Upon his party, for the gain thereof;
And thereupon he ſends you this good news,
That this ſame very day your enemies,
The kindred of the Queen, muſt die at *Pomfret*.

Haſt. Indeed I am no mourner for that news,

[a] *ſimple.*

Becauſe they have been ſtill my adverſaries;
But that I'll give my voice on *Richard*'s ſide,
To bar my maſter's heirs in true deſcent,
God knows I will not do it, to the death.

Cateſ. God keep your lordſhip in that gracious mind.

Haſt. But I ſhall laugh at this a twelve-month hence,
That they who brought me in my maſter's hate,
I live to look upon their tragedy.
Well *Catesby*, ere a fortnight make me older,
I'll ſend ſome packing that yet think not on't.

Cateſ. 'Tis a vile thing to die, my gracious lord,
When men are unprepar'd and look not for it.

Haſt. O monſtrous, monſtrous! and ſo falls it out
With *Rivers*, *Vaughan*, *Gray*; and ſo 'twill do
With ſome men elſe, who think themſelves as ſafe
As thou and I, who as thou know'ſt are dear
To Princely *Richard* and to *Buckingham*.

Cateſ. The Princes both make high account of you-----
For they account his head upon the bridge. [*Aſide.*

Haſt. I know they do, and I have well deſerv'd it.

Enter Lord Stanley.

Come on, come on, where is your boar-ſpear, man?
Fear you the boar, and go ſo unprovided?

Stan. My lord, good morrow, and good morrow *Catesby*;
You may jeſt on, but by the holy rood,
I do not like theſe ſeveral councils, I.

Haſt. My lord, I hold my life as dear as yours,
And never in my days, I do proteſt,
Was it ſo precious to me as 'tis now;
Think you, but that I know our ſtate ſecure,
I would be ſo triumphant as I am?

Stan. The lords at *Pomfret*, when they rode from *London*,

Were

Were jocund, and ſuppos'd their ſtates were ſure,
And they indeed had no cauſe to miſtruſt;
But yet you ſee how ſoon the day o'er-caſt.
This ſudden ſtab of rancor I miſdoubt,
Pray God, I ſay, I prove a needleſs coward.
What ſhall we tow'rd the *Tower?* the day is ſpent.

Haſt. Come, come, have with you: wot ye what, my lord,
To-day the lords you talk of are beheaded.

Stan. They, for their truth, might better wear their heads,
Than ſome that have accus'd them wear their hats.
But come, my lord, away.

Enter a Purſuivant.

Haſt. Go on before, I'll talk with this good fellow.
[*Exeunt Lord* Stanley *and* Catesby.
Sirrah, how now? how goes the world with thee?

Purſ. The better, that your lordſhip pleaſe to ask.

Haſt. I tell thee man, 'tis better with me now,
Than when thou met'ſt me laſt where now we meet;
Then was I going priſoner to the *Tower*,
By the ſuggeſtion of the Queen's allies.
But now I tell thee, keep it to thy ſelf,
This day thoſe enemies are put to death,
And I in better ſtate than e'er I was.

Purſ. God hold it to your honour's good content.

Haſt. Gramercy fellow; there drink that for me.
[*Throws him his purſe.*

Purſ. I thank your honour. [*Exit Purſuivant.*

Enter a Prieſt.

Prieſt. Well met, my lord, I'm glad to ſee your honour.

Haſt. I thank thee, good Sir *John*, with all my heart,
I'm in your debt for your laſt exerciſe:

Come

Come the next ſabbath, and I will content you. [*He whiſpers.*

Enter Buckingham.

Buck. What, talking with a prieſt, lord chamberlain?
Your friends at *Pomfret* they do need the prieſt,
Your honour hath no ſhriving work in hand.

Haſt. Good faith, and when I met this holy man,
The men you talk of came into my mind.
What, go you tow'rd the *Tower?*

Buck. I do, my lord, but long I ſhall not ſtay:
I ſhall return before your lordſhip thence.

Haſt. Nay, like enough, for I ſtay dinner there.

Buck. And ſupper too, altho' thou know'ſt it not. [*Aſide.*
Come, will you go?

Haſt. I'll wait upon your lordſhip. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

Enter Sir Richard Ratcliff, *with halberds, carrying the Nobles to death at* Pomfret.

Rat. COME bring forth the priſoners.

Riv. Sir *Richard Ratcliff*, let me tell thee this,
To-day ſhalt thou behold a ſubject die
For truth, for duty, and for loyalty.

Gray. God keep the Prince from all the pack of you,
A knot you are of damned blood-ſuckers.

Riv. O *Pomfret*, *Pomfret!* O thou bloody priſon!
Fatal and ominous to noble Peers.
Within the guilty cloſure of thy walls
Richard the Second here was hack'd to death:
And for more ſlander to thy diſmal ſeat,
We give to thee our guiltleſs blood to drink.

Gray.

Gray. Now *Marg'ret*'s curſe is fall'n upon our heads,
For ſtanding by when *Richard* ſtab'd her ſon.
Riv. Then curs'd ſhe *Richard*, curs'd ſhe *Buckingham*,
Then curs'd ſhe *Haſtings*. O remember, God!
To hear her prayer for them, as now for us:
As for my ſiſter and her Princely ſons,
Be ſatisfy'd, dear God, with our true blood,
Which, as thou know'ſt, unjuſtly muſt be ſpilt.
Rat. Make haſte, the hour of death is now expir'd.
Riv. Come *Gray*, come *Vaughan*, let us all embrace;
Farewel, until we meet again in heaven. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

The Tower.

Buckingham, Derby, Haſtings, *Biſhop of* Ely, Norfolk, Ratcliff, Lovel, *with others, at a table.*

Haſt. NOW noble Peers, the cauſe why we are met
Is to determine of the coronation:
In God's name ſpeak, when is the royal day?
Buck. Are all things ready for that royal time?
Derby. They are, and want but nomination.
Ely. To-morrow then I judge a happy day.
Buck. Who knows the Lord Protector's mind herein?
Who is moſt inward with the noble Duke?
Ely. Your grace, we think, ſhould ſooneſt know his mind.
Buck. We know each other's faces; for our hearts,
He knows no more of mine than I of yours,
Nor I of his, my lord, than you of mine:
Lord *Haſtings*, you and he are near in love.
Haſt. I thank his grace, I know he loves me well:

But

But for his purpoſe in the coronation,
I have not ſounded him, nor he deliver'd
His gracious pleaſure any way therein:
But you, my noble lord, may name the time,
And in the Duke's behalf I'll give my voice,
Which I preſume he'll take in gentle part.

Enter Glouceſter.

Ely. In happy time here comes the Duke himſelf.

Glo. My noble lords and couſins all, good morrow;
I have been long a ſleeper; but I truſt
My abſence doth neglect no great deſign,
Which by my preſence might have been concluded.

Buck. Had you not come upon your cue, my lord,
William lord *Haſtings* had pronounc'd your part,
I mean your voice for crowning of the King.

Glo. Than my lord *Haſtings* no man might be bolder,
His lordſhip knows me well, and loves me well.
My lord of *Ely*, when I was laſt in *Holbourn*,
I ſaw good ſtrawberries in your garden there,
I do beſeech you ſend for ſome of them.

Ely. Marry and will, my lord, with all my heart. [*Ex.* Ely.

Glo. Couſin of *Buckingham*, a word with you.
Catesby hath ſounded *Haſtings* in our buſineſs,
And finds the teſty gentleman ſo hot,
That he will loſe his head ere give conſent
His maſter's ſon, as worſhipfully he terms it,
Shall loſe the royalty of *England*'s throne.

Buck. Withdraw your ſelf awhile, I'll go with you.

[*Exe.* Glo. *and* Buck.

Derby. We have not yet ſet down this day of triumph:
To-morrow, in my judgment, is too ſudden,
For I my ſelf am not ſo well provided,
As elſe I would be were the day prolong'd.

Re-enter

Re-enter Biſhop of Ely.

Ely. Where is my lord the Duke of *Glouceſter?*
I have ſent for theſe ſtrawberries.

Haſt. His grace looks chearfully and ſmooth this morning,
There's ſome conceit or other likes him well,
When that he bids good-morrow with ſuch ſpirit.
I think there's ne'er a man in Chriſtendom
Can leſſer hide his love or hate than he,
For by his face ſtrait ſhall you know his heart.

Derby. What of his heart perceive you in his face,
By any [b] likelihood he ſhew'd to-day?

Haſt. Marry, that with no man here he's offended:
For were he, he had ſhewn it in his looks.

Re-enter Glouceſter *and* Buckingham.

Glo. I pray you all, tell me what they deſerve,
That do conſpire my death with deviliſh plots
Of damned witchcraft, and that have prevailed
Upon my body with their helliſh charms.

Haſt. The tender love I bear your grace, my lord,
Makes me moſt forward in this Princely preſence,
To doom th' offenders, whoſoe'er they be:
I ſay, my lord, they have deſerved death.

Glo. Then be your eyes the witneſs of their evil,
Look how I am bewitch'd; behold mine arm
Is like a blaſted ſapling wither'd up:
And this is *Edward*'s wife, that monſtrous witch
Conſorted with that harlot, ſtrumpet *Shore*,
That by their witchcraft thus have marked me.

Haſt. If they have done this deed, my noble lord-----

Glo. If? thou protector of this damned ſtrumpet,
Talk'ſt thou to me of Ifs? thou art a traitor-----

[b] *livelihood.*

Off with his head----- now by Saint *Paul* I ſwear,
I will not dine until I ſee the ſame.
Lovel and *Ratcliff* look that it be done:
The reſt that love me, riſe and follow me. [*Exeunt.*

Manent Lovel *and* Ratcliff, *with the lord* Haſtings.

Haſt. Woe, woe for *England*, not a whit for me,
For I, too fond, might have prevented this:
Stanley did dream the boar did raſe our helms,
But I did ſcorn it, and diſdain to fly;
Three times to-day my foot-cloth horſe did ſtumble,
And ſtarted when he look'd upon the *Tower*,
As loth to bear me to the ſlaughter-houſe.
O now I need the prieſt that ſpake to me:
I now repent I told the purſuivant,
As too triumphing, how mine enemies
To-day at *Pomfret* bloodily were butcher'd,
And I my ſelf ſecure in grace and favour.
Oh *Marg'ret*, *Marg'ret*, now thy heavy curſe
Is lighted on poor *Haſtings'* wretched head.

Rat. Come, come, diſpatch, the Duke would be at dinner.
Make a ſhort ſhrift, he longs to ſee your head.

Haſt. O momentary grace of mortal men.
Which we more hunt for than the grace of God!
Who builds his hope in air of your fair looks,
Lives like a drunken ſailor on a maſt,
Ready with every nod to tumble down
Into the fatal bowels of the deep.

Lov. Come, come, diſpatch, 'tis bootleſs to exclaim.

Haſt. Oh bloody *Richard*, miſerable *England*,
I propheſie the fearful'ſt time to thee,
That ever wretched age hath look'd upon.
Come, lead me to the block, bear him my head:
They ſmile at me who ſhortly ſhall be dead. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE

SCENE VI.

Enter Glouceſter *and* Buckingham *in ruſty armour, marvellous ill-favour'd.*

Glo. COME couſin, canſt thou quake and change thy colour,
Murther thy breath in middle of a word,
And then again begin, and ſtop again,
As if thou wert diſtraught, and mad with terror?

Buck. Tut, I can counterfeit the deep tragedian,
Speak, and look back, and pry on every ſide,
Tremble and ſtart at wagging of a ſtraw,
Intending deep ſuſpicion: ghaſtly looks
Are at my ſervice, like enforced ſmiles;
And both are ready in their offices,
At any time to grace my ſtratagems.
But what, is *Catesby* gone?

Glo. He is, and ſee he brings the Mayor along.

Enter the Lord Mayor and Catesby.

Buck. Lord Mayor-----

Glo. Look to the draw-bridge there.

Buck. Hark, a drum.

Glo. *Catesby*, o'erlook the walls.

Buck. Lord Mayor, the reaſon we have ſent-----

Glo. Look back, defend thee, here are enemies.

Buck. God and our innocence defend and guard us.

Enter Lovel *and* Ratcliff *with* Haſtings's *head.*

Glo. Be patient, they are friends; *Ratcliff* and *Lovel.*

Lov. Here is the head of that ignoble traitor,
The dangerous and unſuſpected *Haſtings.*

Glo. So dear I lov'd the man that I muſt weep:

I took him for the plaineſt, harmleſs creature
That breath'd upon the earth a chriſtian:
Made him my book, wherein my ſoul recorded
The hiſtory of all her ſecret thoughts;
So ſmooth he daub'd his vice with ſhew of virtue,
That (his apparent open guilt omitted,
I mean his converſation with *Shore*'s wife)
He liv'd from all attainder of ſuſpect.

Buck. Well, well, he was the covert'ſt ſhelter'd traitor-----
Would you imagine, or almoſt believe,
(Were't not, that by great preſervation
We live to tell it) that the ſubtle traitor
This day had plotted, in the council-houſe,
To murther me and my good lord of *Glo'ſter*.

Mayor. What? had he ſo?

Glo. What! think you we are *Turks* or infidels?
Or that we would, againſt the form of law,
Proceed thus raſhly in the villain's death;
But that the extream peril of the caſe,
The peace of *England*, and our perſon's ſafety
Enforc'd us to this execution?

Mayor. Now fair befall you, he deſerv'd his death,
And your good graces both have well proceeded,
To warn falſe traitors from the like attempts.
I never look'd for better at his hands,
After he once fell in with miſtreſs *Shore*.

Buck. Yet had we not determin'd he ſhould die
Until your lordſhip came to ſee his end,
Which now the loving haſte of theſe our friends,
Something againſt our meaning, hath prevented;
Becauſe, my lord, I would have had you heard
The traitor ſpeak, and tim'rouſly confeſs
The manner and the purpoſe of his treaſons:

That

That you might well have ſignify'd the ſame
Unto the citizens, who haply may
Miſconſtrue us in him, and wail his death.
Mayor. But, my good lord, your grace's word ſhall ſerve,
As well as I had ſeen and heard him ſpeak:
And do not doubt, right noble Princes both,
But I'll acquaint our duteous citizens,
With all your juſt proceedings in this caſe.
Glo. And to that end we wiſh'd your lordſhip here,
T'avoid the cenſures of the carping world.
Buck. But ſince you come too late of our intent,
Yet witneſs what you hear we did intend:
And ſo, my good lord Mayor, we bid farewel. [*Ex. Mayor.*
Glo. Go after, after, couſin *Buckingham.*
The Mayor towards *Guild-Hall* hies him in all poſt:
There at your [c] meeteſt vantage of the time,
Infer the baſtardy of *Edward*'s children,
Tell them, how *Edward* put to death a citizen,
Only for ſaying he would make his ſon
Heir to the Crown, meaning indeed his houſe,
Which by the ſign thereof was termed ſo.
Moreover, urge his hateful luxury,
And beſtial appetite in change of luſt,
Which ſtretch'd unto their ſervants, daughters, wives,
Ev'n where his [d] ranging eye, or ſavage heart,
Without control, luſted to make a prey.
Nay, for a need, thus far come near my perſon:
Tell them, when that my mother went with child
Of that inſatiate *Edward*, noble *York*
My Princely father then had wars in *France*;
And by juſt computation of the time,
Found that the iſſue was not his begot:
Which well appeared in his lineaments,

Being

[c] *meereſt.* [d] *raging.*

Being nothing like the noble Duke, my father:
Yet touch this ſparingly as 'twere far off.
Becauſe, my lord, you know my mother lives.

Buck. Doubt not, my lord, I'll play the orator
As if the golden fee, for which I plead,
Were for my ſelf; and ſo, my lord, adieu.

Glo. If you thrive well, bring them to *Baynard's* caſtle,
Where you ſhall find me well accompanied
With reverend fathers and well-learned biſhops.

Buck. I go, and towards three or four a clock
Look for the news that the *Guild-Hall* affords.

[*Exe.* Buck. *and* Catesby *ſeverally.*

Glo. Now will I go to take ſome privy order
To draw the brats of *Clarence* out of ſight;
And to give order, that no ſort of perſon
Have any time recourſe unto the Princes. [*Exit.*

Enter a Scrivener.

Scriv. Here is th' Indictment of the good lord *Haſtings*,
Which in a ſet hand fairly is engroſs'd,
That it may be to-day read o'er in *Pauls.*
And mark how well the ſequel hangs together:
Eleven hours I've ſpent to write it over,
For yeſternight by *Catesby* was it ſent me:
The precedent was full as long a doing.
And yet within theſe five hours *Haſtings* liv'd,
Untainted, unexamin'd, free, at liberty.
Here's a good world the while; who is ſo groſs
That cannot ſee this palpable device?
Yet who ſo bold, but ſays, he ſees it not?
Bad is the world, and all will come to nought,
When ſuch ill dealings muſt be ſeen in thought. [*Exit.*

SCENE

SCENE VII.

Enter Glouceſter *and* Buckingham *at ſeveral doors.*

Glo. HOW now, how now, what ſay the citizens?

Buck. Now by the holy mother of our lord,
The citizens are mum, ſay not a word.

Glo. Touch'd you the baſtardy of *Edward*'s children?

Buck. I did, with his contract with lady *Lucy*,
And his contract by deputy in *France*;
Th'unſatiate greedineſs of his deſires,
And his enforcement of the city wives;
His tyranny for trifles; his own baſtardy,
As being got, your father then in *France*,
And his reſemblance, being not like the Duke.
Withal, I did infer your lineaments,
Being the right idea of your father,
Both in your form and nobleneſs of mind:
Laid open all your victories in *Scotland*,
Your diſcipline in war, wiſdom in peace,
Your bounty, virtue, fair humility:
Indeed left nothing fitting for the purpoſe
Untouch'd, or ſlightly handled in diſcourſe.
And when my oratory grew tow'rd end,
I bid them that did love their country's good,
Cry, God ſave *Richard*, *England*'s royal King.

Glo. And did they ſo?

Buck. No, ſo God help me, they ſpake not a word,
But like dumb ſtatues or unbreathing ſtones,
Star'd each on other, and look'd deadly pale:
Which when I ſaw, I reprehended them,
And ask'd the Mayor what meant this wilful ſilence?
His anſwer was, the people were not uſed

To be ſpoke to, except by the Recorder.
Then he was urg'd to tell my tale again:
Thus ſaith the Duke, thus hath the Duke inferr'd,
But nothing ſpoke in warrant from himſelf.
When he had done, ſome followers of mine own,
At lower end o'th' hall, hurl'd up their caps,
And ſome ten voices cry'd, God ſave King *Richard.*
And thus I took the vantage of thoſe few.
Thanks, gentle citizens and friends, quoth I,
This general applauſe and chearful ſhout
Argues your wiſdom, and your love to *Richard.*
And even here brake off, and came away.

Glo. What tongueleſs blocks were they, would they not ſpeak?
Will not the Mayor then and his brethren come?

Buck. The Mayor is here at hand; [e]pretend ſome fear,
Be not you ſpoke with, but by mighty ſuit;
And look you get a prayer-book in your hand,
And ſtand between two churchmen, good my lord,
For on that ground I'll build a holy deſcant:
And be not eaſily won to our requeſts:
Play the maid's part, ſtill anſwer nay, and take it.

Glo. I go: and if you plead as well for them,
As I can ſay nay to thee, for my ſelf;
No doubt we'll bring it to a happy iſſue. [*Exit* Glo.

Buck. Go, go up to the leads, the Lord Mayor knocks.

Enter Lord Mayor and Citizens.

Welcome my lord. I dance attendance here,
I think the Duke will not be ſpoke withal.

Enter Catesby.

Buck. Catesby, what ſays your lord to my requeſt?

Cateſ. He doth intreat your grace, my noble lord,

To

[e] *intend.*

To viſit him to-morrow, or next day;
He is within, with two right reverend fathers,
Divinely bent to meditation;
And in no worldly ſuits would he be mov'd,
To draw him from his holy exerciſe.

Buck. Return, good *Catesby*, to the gracious Duke,
Tell him, my ſelf, the Mayor and aldermen,
In deep deſigns, in matter of great moment,
No leſs importing than our gen'ral good,
Are come to have ſome conf'rence with his Grace.

Cateſ. I'll ſignifie ſo much unto him ſtrait. [*Exit.*

Buck. Ah ha, my lord, this Prince is not an *Edward*,
He is not lolling on a lewd love-bed,
But on his knees at meditation:
Not dallying with a brace of curtezans,
But meditating with two deep divines:
Not ſleeping, to engroſs his idle body,
But praying, to enrich his watchful ſoul.
Happy were *England*, would this virtuous Prince
Take on his Grace the ſov'raignty thereof,
But ſure I fear we ſhall not win him to it.

Mayor. Marry, God ſhield, his Grace ſhould ſay us nay.

Buck. I fear he will; here *Catesby* comes again.

Enter Catesby.

Catesby, what ſays his Grace?

Cateſ. He wonders to what end you have aſſembled
Such troops of citizens to come to him,
His Grace not being warn'd thereof before:
He fears, my lord, you mean no good to him.

Buck. Sorry I am, my noble couſin ſhould
Suſpect me, that I mean no good to him:
By heav'n, we come to him in perfect love,

And ſo once more return, and tell his Grace. [*Exit* Cateſ.
When holy and devout religious men
Are at their beads, 'tis hard to draw them thence,
So ſweet is zealous contemplation.

SCENE VIII.

Enter Glouceſter *above, between two Biſhops.*

Mayor. See where his Grace ſtands 'tween two clergymen.
Buck. Two props of virtue, for a chriſtian Prince,
To ſtay him from the fall of vanity:
And ſee a book of prayer in his hand,
True ornaments to know a holy man.
Famous *Plantagenet!* moſt gracious Prince,
Lend favourable ear to our requeſts,
And pardon us the interruption
Of thy devotion and right chriſtian zeal.
Glo. My lord, there needs no ſuch apology;
I do beſeech your Grace to pardon me,
Who earneſt in the ſervice of my God,
Deferr'd the viſitation of my friends.
But leaving this, what is your Grace's pleaſure?
Buck. Ev'n that, I hope, which pleaſeth God above,
And all good men, of this ungovern'd Iſle.
Glo. I do ſuſpect I have done ſome offence,
That ſeems diſgracious in the city's eye,
And that you come to reprehend my ignorance.
Buck. You have, my lord: would it might pleaſe your Grace,
On our entreaties to amend your fault.
Glo. Elſe wherefore breathe I in a chriſtian land?
Buck. Know then, it is your fault that you reſign
The ſupream ſeat, the throne majeſtical,
The ſcepter'd office of your anceſtors,

Your

Your ſtate of fortune, and your due of birth,
The lineal glory of your royal houſe,
To the corruption of a blemiſh'd ſtock.
While in the mildneſs of your ſleepy thoughts,
Which here we waken to our country's good,
The noble Iſle doth want her proper limbs:
Her face defac'd with ſcars of infamy,
Her royal ſtock graft with ignoble plants,
And almoſt ſhoulder'd in the ſwallowing gulph
Of dark forgetfulneſs, and deep oblivion.
Which to re-cure, we heartily ſollicit
Your gracous ſelf to take on you the charge
And kingly government of this your land.
Not as Protector, ſteward, ſubſtitute,
Or lowly factor for another's gain;
But as ſucceſſively, from blood to blood,
Your right of birth, your Empiry, your own.
For this, conſorted with the citizens
Your very worſhipful and loving friends,
And by their vehement inſtigation,
In this juſt ſuit come I to move your Grace.

Glo. I cannot tell, if to depart in ſilence,
Or bitterly to ſpeak in your reproof,
Beſt fitteth my degree, or your condition.
For not to anſwer, you might haply think,
Tongue-ty'd ambition, not replying, yielded
To bear the golden yoak of Sov'raignty,
Which fondly you would here impoſe on me.
If to reprove you for this ſuit of yours,
So ſeaſon'd with your faithful love to me,
Then on the other ſide I check'd my friends.
Therefore to ſpeak, and to avoid the firſt,
And then in ſpeaking, not incur the laſt,

Definitively thus I anſwer you.
Your love deſerves my thanks, but my deſert,
Unmeritable, ſhuns your high requeſt.
Firſt, if all obſtacles were cut away,
And that my path were even to the crown,
As the ripe revenue and due of birth;
Yet ſo much is my poverty of ſpirit,
So mighty and ſo many my defects,
That I would rather hide me from my greatneſs,
Being a bark to brook no mighty ſea;
Than in my greatneſs covet to be hid,
And in the vapour of my glory ſmother'd.
But God be thank'd, there is no need of me,
And much I need to help you, were there need:
The royal tree hath left us royal fruit,
Which mellow'd by the ſtealing hours of time,
Will well become the ſeat of majeſty,
And make us doubtleſs happy by his reign.
On him I lay what you would lay on me,
The right and fortune of his happy ſtars,
Which God defend that I ſhould wring from him.

Buck. My lord, this argues conſcience in your Grace,
But the reſpects thereof are nice and trivial,
All circumſtances well conſidered.
You ſay, that *Edward* is your brother's ſon,
So ſay we too, but not by *Edward*'s wife:
For firſt was he contract to lady *Lucy*,
Your mother lives a witneſs to that vow;
And afterward by ſubſtitute betroth'd
To *Bona*, ſiſter to the King of *France*.
Theſe both put off, a poor petitioner,
A care-craz'd mother of a many children,
A beauty-waining, and diſtreſſed widow,

Ev'n

Ev'n in the afternoon of her beſt days,
Made prize and purchaſe of his wanton eye,
Seduc'd the pitch and height of all his thoughts
To baſe declenſion and loath'd bigamy.
By her, in his unlawful bed, he got
This *Edward*, whom our manners call the Prince.
More bitterly could I expoſtulate,
Save that for reverence of ſome alive,
I give a ſparing limit to my tongue.
Then, good my lord, take to your royal ſelf
This proffer'd benefit of dignity:
If not to bleſs us and the land withal,
Yet to draw forth your noble anceſtry
From the corruption of abuſing time,
Unto a lineal, true, derived courſe.

Mayor. Do, good my lord, your citizens intreat you.

Buck. Refuſe not, mighty lord, this proffer'd love.

Cateſ. O make them joyful, grant their lawful ſuit.

Glo. Alas, why would you heap theſe cares on me?
I am unfit for ſtate and majeſty.
I do beſeech you take it not amiſs,
I cannot, nor I will not yield to you.

Buck. If you refuſe it, as in love and zeal,
Loth to depoſe the child your brother's ſon,
(As well we know your tenderneſs of heart,
And gentle, kind, effeminate remorſe,
Which we have noted in you to your kindred,
And equally indeed to all eſtates)
Yet know, where you accept our ſuit or no,
Your brother's ſon ſhall never reign our King,
But we will plant ſome other in the throne,
To the diſgrace and down-fall of your houſe:
And in this reſolution here we leave you.

Come

Come citizens, we will intreat no more. [*Exeunt.*

Cateſ. Call them again, ſweet Prince, accept their ſuit:
If you deny them, all the land will rue it.

Glo. Will you inforce me to a world of cares?
Call them again, I am not made of ſtone,
But penetrable to your kind entreaties,
Albeit againſt my conſcience and my ſoul.

Re-enter Buckingham *and the reſt.*

Couſin of *Buckingham*, and ſage, grave men,
Since you will buckle fortune on my back
To bear her burthen, whether I will or no,
I muſt have patience to endure the load.
But if black ſcandal, or foul-fac'd reproach
Attend the ſequel of your impoſition,
Your meer enforcement ſhall acquittance me
From all the impure blots and ſtains thereof.
For God doth know, and you may partly ſee,
How far I am from the deſire of this.

Mayor. God bleſs your grace, we ſee it, and will ſay it.

Glo. In ſaying ſo, you ſhall but ſay the truth.

Buck. Then I ſalute you with this royal title,
Long live King *Richard*, *England*'s worthy King.

All. Amen.

Buck. To-morrow may it pleaſe you to be crown'd?

Glo. Ev'n when you pleaſe, for you will have it ſo.

Buck. To-morrow then we will attend your Grace,
And ſo moſt joyfully we take our leave.

Glo. Come, let us to our holy work again.
Farewel my couſin, farewel gentle friends. [*Exeunt.*

ACT IV. SCENE I.

The TOWER.

Enter the Queen, Anne *Dutcheſs of* Glouceſter, *the Dutcheſs of* York, *and Marqueſs of* Dorſet.

DUTCHESS.

WHO meets us here? my neice *Plantagenet*,
Led in the hand of her kind aunt of *Glo'ſter?*
Now, for my life, ſhe's wand'ring to the *Tower*,
On pure heart's love, to greet the tender Prince.
Daughter, well met.

Anne. God give your Graces both
A happy and a joyful time of day.

Queen. Siſter, well met; whither away ſo faſt?

Anne. No farther than the *Tower*, and as I gueſs,
Upon the like devotion as your ſelves,
To gratulate the gentle Princes there.

Queen. Kind ſiſter thanks, we'll enter all together.

Enter the Lieutenant.

And in good time here the Lieutenant comes.
Maſter Lieutenant, pray you, by your leave,
How doth the Prince, and my young ſon of *York?*

Lieu. Right well, dear madam; by your patience,
I may not ſuffer you to viſit them;
The King hath ſtrictly charg'd the contrary.

Queen. The King? who's that?

Lieu. I mean the Lord Protector.

Queen. The lord protect him from that kingly title.
Hath he ſet bounds between their love and me?
I am their mother, who ſhall bar me from them?

Dutch.

Dutch. I am their father's mother, I will ſee them.
Anne. Their aunt I am in law, in love their mother:
Then bring me to their ſights, I'll bear thy blame,
And take thy office from thee on my peril.
Lieu. No, madam, no, I may not leave it ſo:
I'm bound by oath, and therefore pardon me. [*Exit* Lieu.

Enter Stanley.

Stan. Let me but meet you ladies one hour hence,
And I'll ſalute your grace of *York* as mother
And rev'rend looker on of two fair Queens.
Come madam, you muſt ſtrait to *Weſtminſter*,
There to be crowned *Richard*'s royal Queen.
Queen. Ah, cut my lace aſunder,
That my pent heart may have ſome ſcope to beat,
Or elſe I ſwoon with this dead-killing news.
Anne. Deſpightful tidings, O unpleaſing news!
Dor. Be of good chear: mother how fares your grace!
Queen. O *Dorſet*, ſpeak not to me, get thee hence,
Death and deſtruction dog thee at thy heels,
Thy mother's name is ominous to children.
If thou wilt out-ſtrip death, go croſs the ſeas,
And live with *Richmond*, from the reach of hell.
Go hye thee, hye thee from this ſlaughter-houſe,
Leſt thou increaſe the number of the dead,
And make me die the thrall of *Marg'ret*'s curſe,
Nor mother, wife, nor *England*'s counted Queen.
Stan. Full of wiſe care is this your counſel, madam;
Take all the ſwift advantage of the time;
You ſhall have letters from me to my ſon
In your behalf, to meet you on the way:
Be not ta'en tardy by unwiſe delay.
Dutch. O ill diſperſing wind of miſery,
O my accurſed womb, the bed of death:

A cockatrice haſt thou hatch'd to the world,
Whoſe unavoided eye is murtherous.

Stan. Come, madam, come, I in all haſte was ſent.

Anne. And I with all unwillingneſs will go.
O would to God, that the incluſive verge
Of golden metal that muſt round my brow,
Were red-hot ſteel, to ſear me to the brain.
Anointed let me be with deadly venom,
And die, e'er men can ſay, God ſave the Queen.

Queen. Go, go, poor ſoul, I envy not thy glory;
To feed my humour wiſh thy ſelf no harm.

Anne. No! why? when he that is my husband now,
Came to me, as I follow'd *Henry*'s coarſe;
When ſcarce the blood was well waſh'd from his hands,
Which iſſu'd from my other angel husband,
And that dear Saint, which then I weeping follow'd:
O when, I ſay, I look'd on *Richard*'s face,
This was my wiſh; 'be thou, quoth I, accurs'd,
'For making me, ſo young, ſo old a widow:
'And when thou wed'ſt, let ſorrow haunt thy bed;
'And be thy wife, if any be ſo mad,
'More miſerable by the life of thee,
'Than thou haſt made me, by my dear lord's death.
Loe, e'er I can repeat this curſe again,
Within ſo ſmall a time, my woman's heart
Groſly grew captive to his honey words,
And prov'd the ſubject of mine own ſoul's curſe:
Which ever ſince hath held mine eyes from reſt.
For never yet one hour in his bed
Did I enjoy the golden dew of ſleep,
But with his tim'rous dreams was ſtill awak'd.
Beſides, he hates me for my father *Warwick*,
And will, no doubt, ſhortly be rid of me.

Queen. Poor heart, adieu, I pity thy complaining.
Anne. No more than with my ſoul I mourn for yours.
Dor. Farewel, thou woful welcomer of glory.
Anne. Adieu, poor ſoul, that tak'ſt thy leave of it.
Dutch. Go thou to *Richmond,* and good fortune guide thee!
[*To* Dorſet.
Go thou to *Richard,* and good angels tend thee! [*To* Anne.
Go thou to Sanctuary, good thoughts poſſeſs thee!
[*To the Queen.*
I to my Grave, where peace and reſt lye with me!
Eighty odd years of ſorrow have I ſeen,
And each hour's joy wrack'd with a week of anguiſh.
Queen. Stay; yet look back, with me, unto the *Tower.*
Pity, you ancient ſtones, thoſe tender babes
Whom envy hath immur'd within your walls!
Rough cradle for ſuch little pretty ones!
Rude ragged nurſe! old ſullen play-fellow,
For tender Princes; uſe my babies well!
So fooliſh ſorrow bids your ſtones farewel. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.

The Court.

Flouriſh of trumpets. Enter Glouceſter *as King,* Buckingham, Catesby.

K. *Rich.* STAND all apart---- couſin of *Buckingham*----
Buck. My gracious Soveraign!
K. *Rich.* Give me thy hand. Thus high, by thy advice,
And thy aſſiſtance, is King *Richard* ſeated:
But ſhall we wear theſe glories for a day?
Or ſhall they laſt, and we rejoice in them?
Buck. Still live they, and for ever let them laſt.
K. *Rich.*

K. *Rich.* Ah *Buckingham*, now do I play the touch,
To try if thou be currant gold indeed:
Young *Edward* lives---- think now what I would ſpeak.
Buck. Say on, my loving lord.
K. *Rich.* Why, *Buckingham*, I ſay I would be King.
Buck. Why ſo you are, my thrice renowned Liege.
K. *Rich.* Ha! am I a King? 'tis ſo---- but *Edward* lives-----
Buck. True, noble Prince.
K. *Rich.* O bitter conſequence!
That *Edward* ſtill ſhould live true noble Prince.
Couſin, thou wert not wont to be ſo dull.
Shall I be plain? I wiſh the baſtards dead,
And I would have it ſuddenly perform'd.
What ſay'ſt thou now? ſpeak ſuddenly, be brief.
Buck. Your Grace may do your pleaſure.
K. *Rich.* Tut, tut, thou art all ice, thy kindneſs freezes:
Say, have I thy conſent that they ſhall die?
Buck. Give me ſome breath, ſome little pauſe, dear lord,
Before I poſitively ſpeak in this:
I will reſolve your Grace immediately. [*Exit* Buckingham.
Cateſ. The King is angry, ſee he gnaws his lip.
K. *Rich.* I will converſe with iron-witted fools,
And unreſpective boys; none are for me,
That look into me with conſid'rate eyes.
High-reaching *Buckingham* grows circumſpect.
Boy.
Page. My lord.
K. *Rich.* Know'ſt thou not any, whom corrupting gold
Would tempt unto a cloſe exploit of death?
Page. I know a diſcontented gentleman,
Whoſe humble means match not his haughty ſpirit:
Gold were as good as twenty orators,
And will, no doubt, tempt him to any thing.

K. *Rich.* What is his name?
Page. His name, my lord, is *Tirrel.*
K. *Rich.* I partly know the man; go call him hither,
[*Exit Boy.*

The deep-revolving witty *Buckingham*
No more ſhall be the neighbour to my counſels.
Hath he ſo long held out with me untir'd,
And ſtops he now for breath? well, be it ſo.

Enter Stanley.

How now, lord *Stanley*, what's the news?
Stan. My lord,
The Marquiſs *Dorſet*, as I hear, is fled
To *Richmond*, in the parts where he abides.
K. *Rich.* Come hither, *Catesby*; rumour it abroad,
That *Anne* my wife is ſick, and like to die.
I will take order for her keeping cloſe.
Inquire me out ſome mean-born gentleman,
Whom I will marry ſtrait to *Clarence*' daughter------
(The boy is fooliſh, and I fear not him.)
Look how thou dream'ſt-----I ſay again, give out,
That *Anne* my Queen is ſick, and like to die.
About it; for it ſtands me much upon
To ſtop all hopes, whoſe growth may damage me.
I muſt be married to my brother's daughter,
Or elſe my kingdom ſtands on brittle glaſs:
Murther her brothers, and then marry her!
Uncertain way of gain! but I am in
So far in blood, that ſin will pluck on ſin.
Tear-falling pity dwells not in this eye.

Enter Tirrel.

Is thy name *Tirrel?*

Tir.

Tir. James Tirrel, and your moſt obedient ſubject.

K. *Rich.* Art thou indeed? [*He takes him aſide.*

Tir. Prove me, my gracious lord.

K. *Rich.* Dar'ſt thou reſolve to kill a friend of mine?

Tir. Pleaſe you, I'd rather kill two enemies.

K. *Rich.* Why then thou haſt it; two deep enemies,
Foes to my reſt, and my ſweet ſleep's diſturbers,
Are they that I would have thee deal upon;
Tirrel, I mean thoſe baſtards in the *Tower.*

Tir. Let me have open means to come to them,
And ſoon I'll rid you from the fear of them.

K. *Rich.* Thou ſing'ſt ſweet muſick. Hark, come hither *Tirrel,*
Go by this token---- riſe, and lend thine ear---- [*Whiſpers.*
There is no more but ſo---- ſay it is done,
And I will love thee and prefer thee for it.

Tir. I will diſpatch it ſtrait. [*Exit.*

Re-enter Buckingham.

Buck. My lord, I have conſider'd in my mind
That late demand that you did ſound me in.

K. *Rich.* Well, let that reſt; *Dorſet* is fled to *Richmond.*

Buck. I hear the news, my lord.

K. *Rich. Stanley,* he is your wife's ſon; well, look to it.

Buck. My lord, I claim the gift, my due by promiſe,
For which your honour and your faith is pawn'd;
Th' Earldom of *Hereford,* and the moveables,
Which you have promiſed I ſhall poſſeſs.

K. *Rich. Stanley,* look to your wife; if ſhe convey
Letters to *Richmond,* you ſhall anſwer it.

Buck. What ſays your Highneſs to my juſt requeſt?

K. *Rich.* I do remember me---- *Henry* the Sixth
Did propheſie, that *Richmond* ſhould be King,
When *Richmond* was a little peeviſh boy.

A King perhaps---- †

Buck. My lord.

K. *Rich.* How chance the Prophet could not at that time
Have told me, I being by, that I ſhould kill him?

Buck. My lord, your promiſe for the Earldom----

K. *Rich.* *Richmond?* when I was laſt at *Exeter*
The Mayor in curteſie ſhewed me the caſtle,
And call'd it *Rouge-mont*, at which name I ſtarted,
Becauſe a bard of *Ireland* told me once,
I ſhould not live long after I ſaw *Richmond.*

Buck. My lord.

K. *Rich.* I, what's a clock?

Buck. I am thus bold to put your Grace in mind
Of what you promis'd me.

K. *Rich.* But what's a clock?

Buck. Upon the ſtroke of ten.

K. *Rich.* Well, let it ſtrike.

Buck. Why let it ſtrike?

K. *Rich.* Becauſe that like a Jack thou keep'ſt the ſtroke
Betwixt thy begging and my meditation.
I am not in the giving vein to-day.

Buck. Why then reſolve me if you will or no.

K. *Rich.* Thou troubleſt me, I am not in the vein. [*Exit.*

Buck. Is it ev'n ſo? repays he my deep ſervice
With ſuch contempt? made I him King for this?
O let me think on *Haſtings*, and be gone
To *Brecnock*, while my fearful head is on. [*Exit.*

† *From hence to the words* ——— Thou troubleſt me, I am not in the vein ——— *have been left out ever ſince the firſt editions, but I like them well enough to replace them.*

SCENE

SCENE III.

Enter Tirrel.

' *Tir.* THE tyrannous and bloody act is done,
' The moſt arch-deed of piteous maſſacre
' That ever yet this land was guilty of!
' *Dighton* and *Forreſt*, whom I did ſuborn
' To do this piece of ruthleſs butchery,
' Albeit they were fleſht villains, bloody dogs,
' Melting with tenderneſs and mild compaſſion,
' Wept [a] like two children, in their deaths ſad ſtories.
' O thus, quoth *Dighton*, lay the gentle babes,
' Thus, thus, quoth *Forreſt*, girdling one another
' Within their innocent alabaſter arms:
' Their lips were four red roſes on a ſtalk,
' And in their ſummer-beauty kiſs'd each other.
' A book of prayers on their pillow lay,
' Which once, quoth *Forreſt*, almoſt chang'd my mind:
' But oh the devil----- there the villain ſtopt:
' When *Dighton* thus told on----- we ſmothered
' The moſt repleniſhed ſweet work of nature,
' That from the prime creation e'er ſhe framed.
' Hence both are gone with conſcience and remorſe,
' They could not ſpeak, and ſo I left them both,
' To bear theſe tidings to the bloody King.

Enter King Richard.

And here he comes. All health, my ſovereign Lord.
K. *Rich.* Kind *Tirrel*---- am I happy in thy news?
Tir. If to have done the thing you gave in charge
Beget your happineſs, be happy then,
For it is done. K. *Rich.*

[a] *like to.*

K. *Rich.* But didſt thou ſee them dead?

Tir. I did, my lord.

K. *Rich.* And buried, gentle *Tirrel*?

Tir. The chaplain of the *Tower* hath buried them,
But where, to ſay the truth, I do not know.

K. *Rich.* Come to me *Tirrel* ſoon, ſoon after ſupper,
When thou ſhalt tell the proceſs of their death.
Mean time---- but think how I may do thee good,
And be inheritor of thy deſire.
Farewel till then.

Tir. I humbly take my leave. [*Exit.*

K. *Rich.* The ſon of *Clarence* have I pent up cloſe:
His daughter meanly have I match'd in marriage:
The ſons of *Edward* ſleep in *Abraham*'s boſom:
And *Anne* my wife hath bid this world good night.
Now, for I know the *Briton Richmond* aims
At young *Elizabeth* my brother's daughter,
And by that knot looks proudly on the crown;
To her go I, a jolly thriving wooer.

Enter Catesby.

Cateſ. My lord.

K. *Rich.* Good or bad news, that thou com'ſt in ſo bluntly?

Cateſ. Bad news, my lord, † *Morton* is fled to *Richmond*,
And *Buckingham*, back'd with the hardy *Welſhmen*,
Is in the field, and ſtill his power encreaſeth.

K. *Rich.* *Ely* with *Richmond* troubles me more near,
Than *Buckingham* and his raſh-levied army.
Come, I have learn'd, that fearful commenting
Is leaden ſervitor to dull delay;
Delay leads impotent and ſnail-pac'd beggary.
Then fiery expedition be my wing,
Jove's *Mercury*, and herald for a King.

Go

† *Biſhop of* Ely.

Go muſter men; my council is my ſhield,
We muſt be brief, when traitors brave the field. [*Exit.*

SCENE IV.

Enter Queen Margaret.

Q. *Mar.* SO now proſperity begins to mellow,
And drop into the rotten mouth of death:
Here in theſe confines ſlily have I lurk'd,
To watch the waining of mine enemies.
A dire induction am I witneſs to;
And will to *France*, hoping the conſequence
Will prove as bitter, black and tragical.
Withdraw thee wretched *Marg'ret*, who comes here?

Enter Dutcheſs and Queen.

Queen. Ah my poor Princes! ah my tender babes!
My unblown flowers, new-appearing ſweets!
If yet your gentle ſouls fly in the air,
And be not fixt in doom perpetual,
Hover about me with your airy wings,
And hear your mother's lamentation.

Q. *Mar.* Hover about her, ſay, that right for right
Hath dimm'd your infant morn to aged night.

Dutch. So many miſeries have craz'd my voice,
That my woe-wearied tongue is ſtill and mute.
Edward Plantagenet, why art thou dead?

Q. *Mar.* *Plantagenet* doth quit *Plantagenet*,
Edward for *Edward* pays a dying debt.

Queen. Wilt thou, O God, fly from ſuch gentle lambs,
And throw them in the intrails of the wolf?
Why did'ſt thou ſleep when ſuch a deed was done?

Q. *Mar.* When holy *Henry* dy'd, and my ſweet ſon. *
Queen. Ah that thou would'ſt as ſoon afford a grave
As thou canſt yield a melancholly ſeat;
Then would I hide my bones, not reſt them here.
Ah who hath any cauſe to mourn but we?
Q. *Mar.* If any ancient ſorrow be moſt reverent,
Give mine the benefit of ſeniority;
And let my griefs frown on the upper hand,
If ſorrow can admit ſociety.
I had an *Edward* 'till a *Richard* kill'd him:
I had a husband 'till a *Richard* kill'd him.
Thou had'ſt an *Edward* 'till a *Richard* kill'd him:
Thou had'ſt a *Richard* 'till a *Richard* kill'd him.
Dutch. I had a *Richard* too, and thou did'ſt kill him:
I had a *Rutland* too, thou holp'ſt to kill him.
Q. *Mar.* Thou hadſt a *Clarence* too, and *Richard* kill'd him.
From forth the kennel of thy womb hath crept
A hell-hound, that doth hunt us all to death:
That dog, that had his teeth before his eyes,
To worry lambs and lap their gentle blood,
That foul defacer of God's handy-work,
Thy womb let looſe to chaſe us to our graves.
O upright, juſt, and true diſpoſing God,
How do I thank thee, that this carnal cur
Preys on the iſſue of his mother's body!
Dutch. Oh *Harry*'s wife, triumph not in my woes:
God witneſs with me, I have wept for thine.
Q. *Mar.* Bear with me: I am hungry for revenge,

*——and my ſweet ſon.
Dutch. Dead life, blind ſight, poor mortal living ghoſt,
Woe's ſcene, world's ſhame, grave's due, by life uſurp'd,
Brief abſtract and record of tedious days,
Reſt thy unreſt on *England*'s lawful earth,
Unlawfully made drunk with innocent blood.
Queen. Ah that thou would'ſt, *&c.*

And

And now I cloy me with beholding it.
Thy *Edward*, he is dead, that kill'd my *Edward*:
The other *Edward* dead, to quit my *Edward:*
Young *York* he is but boot, becauſe both they
Match not the high perfection of my loſs.
Thy *Clarence* he is dead that ſtab'd my *Edward*;
And the beholders of this tragic play,
Th' adulterate *Haſtings*, *Rivers*, *Vaughan*, *Gray*,
Untimely ſmother'd in their dusky graves.
Richard yet lives, hell's black intelligencer,
Only reſerv'd their factor to buy ſouls,
And ſend them thither: but at hand, at hand
Inſues his piteous and unpitied end.
Earth gapes, hell burns, fiends roar, ſaints pray, [a] for vengeance.
Cancel his bond of life, dear God, I pray,
That I may live to ſay, the dog is dead.

Queen. Oh thou did'ſt propheſie the time would come,
That I ſhould wiſh for thee to help me curſe
That bottell'd ſpider, that foul hunch-back'd toad.

Q. *Mar.* I call'd thee then vain flouriſh of my fortune,
I call'd thee then poor ſhadow, painted Queen,
The preſentation of but what I was;
The flatt'ring index of a direful pageant;
One heav'd on high to be hurl'd down below:
A mother only mock'd with two fair babes;
A dream of what thou waſt; a gariſh flag
To be the aim of ev'ry dang'rous ſhot;
A ſign of dignity, a breath, a bubble;
A Queen in jeſt, only to fill the ſcene.
Where is thy husband now? where be thy brothers?
Where be thy children? wherein doſt thou joy?
Who ſues and kneels, and ſays, God ſave the Queen?

[a] ——— *ſaints pray,*
To have him ſuddenly convey'd away.

Where be the bending Peers that flatter'd thee?
Where be the thronging troops that follow'd thee?
Decline all this, and ſee what now thou art.
For happy wife, a moſt diſtreſſed widow;
For joyful mother, one that wails the name;
For one being ſu'd to, one that humbly ſues;
For Queen, a very caitiff crown'd with care;
For one that ſcorn'd at me, now ſcorn'd of me;
For one being fear'd of all, now fearing one;
For one commanding all, obey'd of none.
Thus hath the courſe of juſtice wheel'd about,
And left thee but a very prey to time;
Having no more but thought of what thou wert,
To torture thee the more, being what thou art.
Thou didſt uſurp my place, and doſt thou not
Uſurp the juſt proportion of my ſorrow?
Now thy proud neck bears half my burthen'd yoak;
From which, ev'n here I ſlip my wearied head,
And leave the burthen of it all on thee.
Farewel *York*'s wife, and Queen of ſad miſchance,
Theſe *Engliſh* woes ſhall make me ſmile in *France*.

Queen. O thou well skill'd in curſes, ſtay awhile,
And teach me how to curſe mine enemies.

Q. *Mar.* Forbear to ſleep the nights, and faſt the days:
Compare dead happineſs with living woe;
Think that thy babes were ſweeter than they were,
And he that ſlew them fouler than he is:
Bett'ring thy loſs makes the bad cauſer worſe,
Revolving this, will teach thee how to curſe.

Queen. My words are dull, O quicken them with thine.

Q. *Mar.* Thy woes will make them ſharp, and pierce like mine.

[*Exit* Margaret.

Dutch. Why ſhould calamity be full of words?

Queen.

Queen. Windy attorneys to your client's woes,
Airy ſucceeders of inteſtine joys,
Poor breathing orators of miſeries,
Let them have ſcope, tho' what they do impart
Help nothing elſe, yet they do eaſe the heart.

Dutch. If ſo, then be not tongue-ty'd; go with me,
And in the breath of bitter words, let's ſmother
My damned ſon, that thy two ſweet ſons ſmother'd.
I hear his drum, be copious in exclaims.

SCENE V.

Enter King Richard *and his Train.*

K. *Rich.* Who intercepts me in my expedition?

Dutch. O ſhe that might have intercepted thee
By ſtrangling thee in her accurſed womb,
From all the ſlaughters, wretch, that thou haſt done.

Queen. Hideſt thou that forehead with a golden crown,
Where ſhould be branded, if that right were right,
The ſlaughter of the Prince that ow'd that crown,
And the dire death of my poor ſons and brothers.
Tell me, thou villain-ſlave, where are my children?

Dutch. Thou toad, thou toad, where is thy brother *Clarence?*
And little *Ned Plantagenet* his ſon?

Queen. Where is kind *Haſtings, Rivers, Vaughan, Gray?*

K. *Rich.* A flouriſh, trumpets! ſtrike alarum, drums!
Let not the heavens hear theſe tell-tale women
Rail on the Lord's anointed. Strike, I ſay. [*Flouriſh. Alarums.*
Either be patient, and intreat me fair,
Or with the clamorous report of war
Thus will I drown your exclamations.

Dutch. Art thou my ſon?

K. *Rich.* Ay, I thank God, my father, and your ſelf.

Dutch.

Dutch. Then patiently hear my impatience.
K. *Rich.* Madam, I have a touch of your condition,
That cannot brook the accent of reproof.
Dutch. I will be mild and gentle in my words.
K. *Rich.* And brief, good mother, for I am in haſte.
Dutch. Art thou ſo haſty? I have ſtaid for thee,
God knows, in anguiſh, pain and agony.
K. *Rich.* And came I not at laſt to comfort you?
Dutch. No, by the holy rood, thou know'ſt it well,
Thou cam'ſt on earth to make the earth my hell.
A grievous burthen was thy birth to me,
Tetchy and wayward was thy infancy;
Thy ſchool-days frightful, deſp'rate, wild and furious;
Thy prime of manhood, daring, bold and venturous:
Thy age confirm'd, proud, ſubtle, ſly and bloody.
What comfortable hour canſt thou name,
That ever grac'd me in thy company? *
K. *Rich.* If I be ſo diſgracious in your ſight,
Let me march on and not offend your Grace.
Dutch. O hear me ſpeak, for I ſhall never ſee thee.
K. *Rich.* Come, come, you are too bitter.
Dutch. Either thou'lt die by God's juſt ordinance,
E're from this war thou turn a conqueror;
Or I with grief and extream age ſhall periſh,
And never look upon thy face again.
Therefore take with thee my moſt heavy curſe;
Which, in the day of battel, tire thee more,
Than all the compleat armour that thou wear'ſt!
My prayers on the adverſe party fight,
And there the little ſouls of *Edward*'s children
Whiſper the ſpirits of thine enemies,

And

* ——— in thy company?
K. *Rich.* Faith none but *Humphry Houre*, that call'd your grace
To breakfaſt once, forth of my company.
If I be ſo, *&c.*

And promiſe them ſucceſs and victory.
Bloody thou art, bloody will be thy end:
Shame ſerves thy life, and doth thy death attend. [*Exit.*

Queen. Tho' far more cauſe, yet much leſs ſpirit to curſe
Abides in me, I ſay Amen to her.

K. *Rich.* Stay, Madam, I muſt ſpeak a word with you.

Queen. I have no more ſons of the royal blood
For thee to ſlaughter; for my daughters, *Richard*,
They ſhall be praying Nuns, not weeping Queens;
And therefore level not to hit their lives.

K. *Rich.* You have a daughter call'd *Elizabeth*,
Virtuous and fair, royal and gracious.

Queen. And muſt ſhe die for this? O let her live,
And I'll corrupt her manners, ſtain her beauty,
Slander my ſelf as falſe to *Edward*'s bed,
Throw over her the veil of infamy.
So ſhe may live unſcarr'd from bleeding ſlaughter,
I will confeſs ſhe was not *Edward*'s daughter.

K. *Rich.* Wrong not her birth, ſhe is of royal blood.

Queen. To ſave her life I'll ſay ſhe is not ſo.

K. *Rich.* Her life is ſafeſt only in her birth.

Queen. And only in that ſafety dy'd her brothers.

K. *Rich.* No, at their births good ſtars were oppoſite.

Queen. No, to their lives bad friends were contrary.

K. *Rich.* All unavoided is the doom of deſtiny.

Queen. True; when avoided grace makes deſtiny.
My babes were deſtin'd to a fairer death,
If grace had bleſt thee with a fairer life.

K. *Rich.* You ſpeak as if that I had ſlain my couſins?

Queen. Whoſe hands ſoever lanc'd their tender hearts,
Thy head, all indirectly, gave direction.
No doubt the murd'rous knife was dull and blunt,
'Till it was whetted on thy ſtone-hard heart,

To

To revel in the intrails of my lambs.
But that ſtill uſe of grief makes wild grief tame,
My tongue ſhould to thy ears not name my boys,
'Till that my nails were anchor'd in thine eyes;
And I in ſuch a deſp'rate bay of death,
Like a poor bark of ſails and tackling reft,
Ruſh all to pieces on thy rocky boſom.

K. *Rich.* Madam, ſo thrive I in my enterprize,
And dangerous ſucceſs of bloody wars;
As I intend more good to you and yours,
Than ever you or yours by me were harm'd.

Queen. What good is cover'd with the face of heav'n,
To be diſcover'd, that can do me good?

K. *Rich.* Th' advancement of your children, gentle lady.

Queen. Up to ſome ſcaffold, there to loſe their heads.

K. *Rich.* No, to the dignity and height of fortune,
The high imperial type of this earth's glory.

Queen. Flatter my ſorrows with report of it;
Tell me, what ſtate, what dignity, what honour,
Canſt thou deviſe to any child of mine?

K. *Rich.* Ev'n all I have; ay, and my ſelf and all,
Will I withal endow a child of thine:
So in the *Lethe* of thy angry ſoul
Thou drown the ſad remembrance of thoſe wrongs,
Which thou ſuppoſeſt I have done to thee.

Queen. Be brief, leſt that the proceſs of thy kindneſs
Laſt longer telling than thy kindneſs do.

K. *Rich.* Then know, that from my ſoul I love thy daughter.

Queen. My daughter's mother thinks it with her ſoul.

K. *Rich.* What do you think?

Queen. That thou doſt love my daughter from thy ſoul.
So from thy ſoul's love didſt thou love her brothers,
And from my heart's love I do thank thee for it.

K. *Rich.*

K. *Rich.* Be not ſo haſty to confound my meaning;
I mean, that with my ſoul I love thy daughter,
And do intend to make her Queen of *England.*
Queen. Say then, who doſt thou mean ſhall be her King?
K. *Rich.* Ev'n he that makes her Queen, who elſe ſhould be?
Queen. What, thou!
K. *Rich.* Even ſo; how think you of it?
Queen. How canſt thou woo her?
K. *Rich.* I would learn of you,
As one being beſt acquainted with her humour.
Queen. And wilt thou learn of me?
K. *Rich.* With all my heart.
Queen. Send to her by the man that ſlew her brothers,
A pair of bleeding hearts; thereon engrave
Edward and *York*; then haply will ſhe weep:
Therefore preſent to her, as ſometime *Marg'ret*
Did to thy father ſteept in *Rutland*'s blood,
A handkerchief, which, ſay to her, did drain
The purple tide from her ſweet brothers bodies,
And bid her wipe her weeping eyes therewith.
If this inducement move her not to love,
Send her a letter of thy noble deeds;
Tell her, thou mad'ſt away her uncle *Clarence*,
Her uncle *Rivers*; ay, and for her ſake,
Mad'ſt quick conveyance with her good aunt *Anne.*
K. *Rich.* You mock me, madam this is not the way
To win your daughter.
Queen. There's no other way,
Unleſs thou could'ſt put on ſome other ſhape,
And not be *Richard* that hath done all this.
K. *Rich.* Say, that I did all this for love of her.
Queen. Nay then indeed ſhe cannot chuſe but hate thee,
Having brought love with ſuch a bloody ſpoil.

† K. *Rich.* Look, what is done, cannot be now amended;
Men ſhall deal unadviſedly ſometimes,
Which after-hours give leiſure to repent of.
If I did take the kingdom from your ſons,
To make amends, I'll give it to your daughter:
If I have kill'd the iſſue of your womb,
To quicken your encreaſe I will beget
Mine iſſue of your blood, upon your daughter:
A grandam's name is little leſs in love,
Than is the doting title of a mother;
They are as children but one ſtep below,
Even of your metal, of your very blood:
Of all one pain, ſave for a night of groans
Endur'd of her, for whom you bid like ſorrow.
Your children were vexation to your youth,
But mine ſhall be a comfort to your age.
The loſs you have is but a ſon being King,
And by that loſs your daughter is made Queen.
I cannot make you what amends I would,
Therefore accept ſuch kindneſs as I can.
Dorſet, your ſon, that with a fearful ſoul
Leads diſcontented ſteps in foreign ſoil,
This fair alliance quickly ſhall call home
To high promotions and great dignity.
The King that calls your beauteous daughter wife,
Familiarly ſhall call thy *Dorſet* brother:
Again ſhall you be mother to a King;
And all the ruins of diſtreſsful times,
Repair'd with double riches of content.
What! we have many goodly days to ſee.
The liquid drops of tears that you have ſhed
Shall come again, transform'd to orient pearl,
Advantaging their love with intereſt, Often-

† *This long ſpeech is not in the edition of* 1598, *or that of* 1602, *but added by the Author ſince.*

Oftentimes double gain of happineſs.
Go then, my mother, to thy daughter go,
Make bold her baſhful years with your experience,
Prepare her ears to hear a wooer's tale.
Put in her tender heart th' aſpiring flame
Of golden Sov'reignty; acquaint the Princeſs
With the ſweet ſilent hours of marriage joys.
And when this arm of mine hath chaſtiſed
The petty rebel, dull-brain'd *Buckingham*,
Bound with triumphant garlands will I come,
And lead thy daughter to a conqueror's bed;
To whom I will retail my conqueſt won,
And ſhe ſhall be ſole victreſs, *Cæſar*'s *Cæſar*.

Queen. What were I beſt to ſay, her father's brother
Would be her lord? or ſhall I ſay, her uncle?
Or he that ſlew her brothers, and her uncles?
Under what title ſhall I woo for thee,
That God, the law, my honour, and her love,
Can make ſeem pleaſing to her tender years?

K. *Rich.* Infer fair *England*'s peace by this alliance.

Queen. Which ſhe ſhall purchaſe with ſtill laſting war.

K. *Rich.* Tell her, the King, that may command, intreats----

Queen. That, at her hands, which the King's King forbids.

K. *Rich.* Say, ſhe ſhall be a high and mighty Queen----

Queen. To [b] wail the title, as her mother doth.

K. *Rich.* Say, I will love her everlaſtingly.

Queen. But how long ſhall that title ever laſt?

K. *Rich.* Sweetly in force, unto her fair life's end.

Queen. But how long, fairly, ſhall her ſweet life laſt?

K. *Rich.* As long as heav'n and nature lengthen it.

Queen. As long as hell and *Richard* like of it.

K. *Rich.* Say, I her Sov'raign, am her ſubject [c] now.

Queen. But ſhe, your ſubject, loaths ſuch Sov'reignty.

[b] *vail.* [c] *low.*

K. *Rich.* Be eloquent in my behalf to her.

Queen. An honeſt tale ſpeeds beſt, being plainly told.

K. *Rich.* Then, in plain terms tell her my loving tale.

Queen. Plain and not honeſt, is too harſh a ſtile.

K. *Rich.* Your reaſons are too ſhallow, and too quick. *
Now by my George, my garter, and my crown----

Queen. Profan'd, diſhonour'd, and the third uſurp'd.

K. *Rich.* I ſwear.

Queen. By nothing, for this is no oath:
The George profan'd, hath loſt his holy honour,
The garter blemiſh'd, pawn'd his [d] knightly virtue,
The crown uſurp'd, diſgrac'd his kingly glory.
If ſomething thou would'ſt ſwear to be believ'd,
Swear then by ſomething that thou haſt not wrong'd.

K. *Rich.* Now by the world-----

Queen. 'Tis full of thy foul wrongs.

K. *Rich.* My father's death----

Queen. Thy life hath that diſhonour'd.

K. *Rich.* Then by my ſelf.

Queen. Thy ſelf thy ſelf miſuſeſt.

K. *Rich.* Why then, by heav'n-----

Queen. Heav'n's wrong is moſt of all:
If thou didſt fear to break an oath with [e] heav'n,
The unity the King my husband made
Thou hadſt not broken, nor my brothers dy'd.
If thou hadſt fear'd to break an oath with [f] heav'n,
Th' imperial metal, circling now thy head,
Had grac'd the tender temples of my child;
And both the Princes had been breathing here,

* ——— too ſhallow, and too quick.
Queen. O no, my reaſons are too deep and dead;
Two deep and dead, poor infants in their grave,
Harp on it ſtill ſhall I, 'till heart-ſtrings break.
K. *Rich.* Harp not on that ſtring, madam, that is paſt.
Now by my George, *&c.*

[d] *kingly.* [e] *him.* [f] *him.*

Which now, two tender bed-fellows for duſt,
Thy broken faith hath made a prey to worms.
K. *Rich.* By time to come.
Queen. That thou haſt wronged in the time o'er-paſt:
For I my ſelf have many tears to waſh
Hereafter time, for time paſt, wrong'd by thee.
The children live, whoſe fathers thou haſt ſlaughter'd,
Ungovern'd youth, to wail it in their age.
The parents live, whoſe children thou haſt butcher'd,
Old wither'd plants, to wail it in their age. *
K. *Rich.* As I intend to proſper, and repent;
So thrive I in my dangerous attempt
Of hoſtile arms; my ſelf, my ſelf confound;
Heaven and fortune bar me happy hours;
Day yield me not thy light, nor night thy reſt;
Be oppoſite all planets of good luck
To my proceeding; if with pure heart's love,
Immaculate devotion, holy thoughts,
I tender not thy beauteous Princely daughter.
In her conſiſts my happineſs and thine;
Without her, follows to my ſelf and thee,
Her ſelf, the land, and many a chriſtian ſoul,
Death, deſolation, ruin, and decay.
It cannot be avoided but by this;
It will not be avoided but by this.
Therefore, dear mother, I muſt call you ſo,
Be the attorney of my love to her;
Plead what I will be, not what I have been;
Not my [g] deſerts, but what I will deſerve:
Urge the neceſſity and ſtate of times;
And be not peeviſh found in great deſigns.

Queen.

* —— to wail it in their age.
Swear not by time to come, for that thou haſt
Miſus'd ere us'd, by times ill-us'd o'er-paſt.
K. *Rich.* As I intend, *&c.*

g *deſires.*

Queen. Shall I be tempted of the devil thus?
K. *Rich.* Ay, if the devil tempt you to do good.
Queen. Shall I forget my ſelf to be my ſelf?
K. *Rich.* Ay, if your ſelf's remembrance wrong your ſelf.
Queen. But thou didſt kill my children.
K. *Rich.* But in your daughter's womb I bury them;
Where in that neſt of ſpicery they ſhall breed
Selves of themſelves, to your recomforture.
Queen. Shall I go win my daughter to thy will?
K. *Rich.* And be a happy mother by the deed.
Queen. I go, write to me ſhortly. [*Exit Queen.*
K. *Rich.* Bear her my true love's kiſs, and ſo farewel-----
Relenting fool, and ſhallow-changing woman!

SCENE VI.

Enter Ratcliff.

Rat. Moſt mighty Soveraign, on the weſtern coaſt
Rides a puiſſant navy: to our ſhores
Throng many doubtful hollow-hearted friends,
Unarm'd, and unreſolv'd to beat them back.
'Tis thought that *Richmond* is their admiral:
And there they hull, expecting but the aid
Of *Buckingham,* to welcome them aſhore.
K. *Rich.* Some light-foot friend poſt to the Duke of *Norfolk,*
Ratcliff thy ſelf, or *Catesby*; where is he?
Cateſ. Here, my good lord.
K. *Rich. Catesby,* fly to the Duke.
Cateſ. I will, my lord, with all convenient haſte.
K. *Rich. Ratcliff,* come hither, poſt to *Salisbury,*
When thou com'ſt thither----dull unmindful villain, [*To* Cateſ.
Why ſtay'ſt thou here, and go'ſt not to the Duke?
Cateſ. Firſt, mighty Liege, tell me your Highneſs' pleaſure,
What

What from your Grace I ſhall deliver to him.

K. *Rich.* O true, good *Catesby*,----- bid him levy ſtrait
The greateſt ſtrength and power he can make,
And meet me ſuddenly at *Salisbury*.

Cateſ. I go. [*Exit.*

Rat. What, may it pleaſe you, ſhall I do at *Salisbury*?

K. *Rich.* Why, what would'ſt thou do there before I go?

Rat. Your Highneſs told me I ſhould poſt before.

K. *Rich.* My mind is chang'd----

Enter Lord Stanley.

Stanley, what news with you?

Stan. None, good my Liege, to pleaſe you with the hearing,
Nor none ſo bad, but well may be reported.

K. *Rich.* Heyday, a riddle, neither good nor bad:
Why doſt thou run ſo many miles about,
When thou may'ſt tell thy tale the neareſt way?
Once more, what news?

Stan. Richmond is on the ſeas.

K. *Rich.* There let him ſink, and be the ſeas on him!
White-liver'd run-a-gate, what doth he there?

Stan. I know not, mighty Sov'raign, but by gueſs.

K. *Rich.* Well, as you gueſs.

Stan. Stirr'd up by *Dorſet*, *Buckingham*, and *Morton*,
He makes for *England*, here to claim the crown.

K. *Rich.* Is the chair empty? is the ſword unſway'd?
Is the King dead? the empire unpoſſeſs'd?
What heir of *York* is there alive, but we?
And who is *England*'s King, but great *York*'s heir?
Then tell me, what makes he upon the ſea?

Stan. Unleſs for that, my Liege, I cannot gueſs.

K. *Rich.* Unleſs for that he comes to be your Liege,
You cannot gueſs wherefore the *Welch-man* comes.

Thou

Thou wilt revolt, and fly to him, I fear.

Stan. No, mighty Liege, therefore miſtruſt me not.

K. *Rich.* Where is thy power then to beat him back?
Where are thy tenants, and thy followers?
Are they not now upon the weſtern ſhore?
Conducting ſafe the rebels from their ſhips?

Stan. No, my good lord, my friends are in the north.

K. *Rich.* Cold friends to me: what do they in the north,
When they ſhould ſerve their Sov'raign in the weſt?

Stan. They have not been commanded, mighty King;
Pleaſe it your Majeſty to give me leave,
I'll muſter up my friends, and meet your Grace,
Where, and what time your Majeſty ſhall pleaſe.

K. *Rich.* Ay, thou would'ſt fain be gone, to join with *Richmond:*
But I'll not truſt thee.

Stan. Mighty Soveraign,
You have no cauſe to hold my friendſhip doubtful,
I never was, nor ever will be falſe.

K. *Rich.* Go then, and muſter men; but leave behind
Your ſon *George Stanley:* look your heart be firm,
Or elſe his head's aſſurance is but frail.

Stan. So deal with him, as I prove true to you. [*Ex.* Stanley.

Enter a Meſſenger.

Meſ. My gracious Sov'raign, now in *Devonſhire*,
As I by friends am well advertiſed,
Sir *Edmond Courtney*, and the haughty prelate,
Biſhop of *Exeter* his elder brother
With many more confed'rates, are in arms.

Enter another Meſſenger.

Meſ. In *Kent*, my Liege, the *Guilfords* are in arms,
And every hour ſtill more competitors

Flock

Flock to the rebels, and their power grows ſtrong.

Enter another Meſſenger.

Meſ. My lord, the army of the Duke of *Buckingham*-----

K. *Rich.* Out on ye, owls! nothing but ſongs of death?

[*He ſtrikes him.*

There take thou that, 'till thou bring better news.

Meſ. The news I have to tell your Majeſty,
Is, that by ſudden floods and fall of waters,
Buckingham's army is diſpers'd and ſcatter'd,
And he himſelf wander'd away alone,
No man knows whither.

K. *Rich.* Oh! I cry thee mercy;
There is my purſe, to cure that blow of thine.
Hath any well-adviſed friend proclaim'd
Reward to him that brings the traitor in?

Meſ. Such proclamation hath been made, my Liege.

Enter another Meſſenger.

Meſ. Sir *Thomas Lovel*, and lord Marquiſs *Dorſet*,
'Tis ſaid, my Liege, in *Yorkſhire* are in arms;
But this good comfort bring I to your Highneſs,
The *Britain* navy is diſpers'd, by tempeſt.
Richmond in *Dorſetſhire* ſent out a boat
Unto the ſhore, to ask thoſe on the banks,
If they were his aſſiſtants, yea, or no?
Who anſwer'd him, they came from *Buckingham*
Upon his party; he miſtruſting them,
Hois'd ſail, and made his courſe again for *Britain*.

K. *Rich.* March on, march on, ſince we are up in arms;
If not to fight with foreign enemies,
Yet to beat down theſe rebels here at home.

Enter Catesby.

Cateſ. My Liege, the Duke of *Buckingham* is taken,
That is the beſt news; that the Earl of *Richmond*

Is with a mighty pow'r landed at *Milford*,
Is colder news, but yet it muſt be told.

K. *Rich.* Away tow'rds *Salisbury*; while we reaſon here,
A royal battel might be won and loſt:
Some one take order *Buckingham* be brought
To *Salisbury*; the reſt march on with me. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

Enter Lord Stanley, *and Sir* Chriſtopher.

Stan. SIR *Chriſtopher*, tell *Richmond* this from me;
That in the Sty of this moſt bloody boar,
My ſon *George Stanley* is † frankt up in hold:
If I revolt, off goes young *George*'s head,
The fear of that holds off my preſent aid.
So get thee gone; commend me to thy lord.
Say too, the Queen hath heartily conſented
He ſhould eſpouſe *Elizabeth* her daughter.
But tell me, where is Princely *Richmond* now?

Chri. At *Pembroke*, or at *Hertford*, weſt in *Wales*.

Stan. What men of name reſort to him?

Chri. Sir *Walter Herbert*, a renowned ſoldier,
Sir *Gilbert Talbot*, and Sir *William Stanley*,
Oxford, redoubted *Pembroke*, Sir *James Blunt*,
And *Rice ap Thomas*, with a valiant crew,
And many other of great name and worth:
And towards *London* do they bend their power,
If by the way they be not fought withal.

Stan. Well, hie thee to thy lord: I kiſs his hand,
My letter will reſolve him of my mind.
Farewell. [*Exeunt.*

† [Frank'd up.] *See the note on Act I. Scene IV. of this play.*

ACT

ACT V. SCENE I.

SALISBURY.

Enter the Sheriff, and Buckingham *with halberds led to Execution.*

BUCKINGHAM.

WILL not King *Richard* let me ſpeak with him?

Sher. No, good my lord, therefore be patient.

Buck. Haſtings, and *Edward*'s children, *Gray* and *Rivers*,
Holy King *Henry!* and thy fair ſon *Edward*,
Vaughan, and all that have miſcarried
By under-hand, corrupted, foul injuſtice!
If that your moody, diſcontented ſouls,
Do through the clouds behold this preſent hour,
Ev'n for revenge mock my deſtruction.
This is *All-Souls* day, fellows, is it not?

Sher. It is, my lord.

Buck. This is the day, which in King *Edward*'s time
I wiſht might fall on me, when I was found
Falſe to his children, or his wife's allies.
This is the day wherein I wiſht to fall
By the falſe faith of him whom moſt I truſted:
This the determin'd reſpite of my wrongs.
That high All-ſeer, which I dallied with,
Hath turn'd my feigned prayer on my head,
And giv'n in earneſt, what I begg'd in jeſt.
Thus doth he force the ſwords of wicked men
To turn their own points on their maſter's boſoms.
Thus *Marg'ret*'s curſe falls heavy on my head:

When he, quoth ſhe, ſhall ſplit thy heart with ſorrow,
Remember *Marg'ret* was a propheteſs.
Come Sirs, convey me to the block of ſhame,
Wrong hath but wrong, and blame the due of blame.
[*Exeunt* Buckingham *with Officers.*

SCENE II.

The Camp.

Enter Richmond, Oxford, Blunt, Herbert, *and others, with Drum and Colours.*

Richm. FEllows in arms, and my moſt loving friends
Bruis'd underneath the yoak of tyranny,
Thus far into the bowels of the land
Have we march'd on without impediment;
And here receive we from our father *Stanley*
Lines of fair comfort and encouragement.
The wretched, bloody and uſurping boar,
That ſpoil'd your ſummer-fields, and fruitful vines,
Swill'd your warm blood like waſh, and made his trough
In your embowell'd boſoms; this foul ſwine
Lyes now ev'n in the centre of this Iſle,
Near to the town of *Leiceſter*, as we learn:
From *Tamworth* thither is but one day's march.
In God's name cheerly on, couragious friends,
To reap the harveſt of perpetual peace,
By this one bloody tryal of ſharp war.

Oxf. Ev'ry man's conſcience is a thouſand ſwords,
To fight againſt that bloody homicide.

Herb. I doubt not but his friends will fly to us.

Blunt. He hath no friends, but who are friends for fear,
Which in his greateſt need will fly from him.

Richm.

Richm. All for our vantage; then in God's name march,
True hope is ſwift, and flies with ſwallow's wings,
Kings it makes Gods, and meaner creatures Kings. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

Boſworth *Field.*

Enter King Richard *in arms, with* Norfolk, Ratcliff, *and* Catesby.

K. *Rich.* Here pitch our tents, even here in *Boſworth* field.
Why how now *Catesby*, why look'ſt thou ſo ſad?

Cateſ. My heart is ten times lighter than my looks.

K. *Rich.* My lord of *Norfolk.*

Nor. Here, moſt gracious Liege.

K. *Rich.* *Norfolk*, we muſt have knocks: ha, muſt we not?

Nor. We muſt both give and take, my gracious lord.

K. *Rich.* Up with my tent, here will I lye to-night,
But where to-morrow?----- well all's one for that.
Who hath deſcry'd the number of the traitors?

Nor. Six or ſev'n thouſand is their utmoſt power.

K. *Rich.* Why, our battailion trebles that account:
Beſides, the King's name is a tower of ſtrength,
Which they upon the adverſe faction want.
Up with the tent: come, noble gentlemen,
Let us ſurvey the vantage of the ground.
Call for ſome men of ſound direction:
Let's want no diſcipline, make no delay,
For, lords, to-morrow is a buſie day. [*Exeunt.*

Enter Richmond, *Sir* William Brandon, Oxford, *and* Dorſet.

Richm. The weary ſun hath made a golden ſet,
And by the bright tract of his fiery car,
Gives ſignal of a goodly day to-morrow.

Sir

Sir *William Brandon*, you ſhall bear my ſtandard:
The Earl of *Pembroke* keep his regiment;
Good captain *Blunt*, bear my good night to him,
And by the ſecond hour in the morning
Deſire the Earl to ſee me in my tent.
Yet one thing more, good *Blunt*, before thou goeſt;
Where is lord *Stanley* quarter'd, doſt thou know?

Blunt. Unleſs I have miſta'en his colours much,
(Which well I am aſſur'd I have not done)
His regiment lyes half a mile at leaſt
South from the mighty power of the King.

Richm. If without peril it be poſſible,
Sweet *Blunt*, make ſome good means to ſpeak with him,
And give him from me this moſt needful note.

Blunt. Upon my life, my lord, I'll undertake it.

† *Richm.* Give me ſome ink and paper; in my tent
I'll draw the form and model of our battel,
Limit each leader to his ſeveral charge,
And part in juſt proportion our ſmall ſtrength.
Let us conſult upon to-morrow's buſineſs;
In to our tent, the air is raw and cold.

[*They withdraw into the tent.*

Enter King Richard, Ratcliff, Norfolk, *and* Catesby.

K. *Rich.* What is't a clock?

Cateſ. It's ſupper time, my lord,
It's nine a clock.

K. *Rich.* I will not ſup to-night.
What, is my beaver eaſier than it was?

† *I have placed theſe lines here as they ſtand in the firſt editions, the reſt place 'em three ſpeeches before, after the words* Sir *William Brandon*, you ſhall bear my ſtandard: *interrupting what there follows:* The Earl of *Pembroke*, *&c. I think 'em more naturally introduced here, when he is retiring to his tent and conſidering what he has to do that night.*

And

And all my armour laid into my tent?

Cateſ. It is, my Liege, and all things are in readineſs.

K. *Rich.* Good *Norfolk* hie thee to thy charge,
Uſe careful watch, chuſe truſty centinels.

Nor. I go, my lord.

K. *Rich.* Stir with the lark to-morrow, gentle *Norfolk.*

Nor. I warrant you, my lord. [*Exit.*

K. *Rich. Catesby.*

Cateſ. My lord.

K. *Rich.* Send out a purſuivant at arms
To *Stanley*'s regiment; bid him bring his power
Before ſun-riſing, leſt his ſon *George* fall
Into the blind cave of eternal night.
Fill me a bowl of wine----give me a watch---- [*To* Ratcliff.
Saddle white *Surrey* for the field to-morrow:
Look that my ſtaves be ſound, and not too heavy.
Ratcliff-----

Rat. My lord?

K. *Rich.* Saw'ſt thou the melancholy lord *Northumberland?*

Rat. Thomas the Earl of *Surrey*, and himſelf,
Much about cock-ſhut time, from troop to troop
Went through the army, cheering up the ſoldiers.

K. *Rich.* I'm ſatisfy'd; give me a bowl of wine.
I have not that alacrity of ſpirit
Nor cheer of mind that I was wont to have-----
There, ſet it down. Is ink and paper ready?

Rat. It is, my lord.

K. *Rich.* Bid my guard watch, and leave me.
About the mid of night come to my tent,
And help to arm me. Leave me now I ſay. [*Ex.* Ratcliff.

SCENE

SCENE III.

Richmond's *Tent.*

Enter Stanley *to* Richmond *in his Tent.*

Stan. FOrtune and victory ſit on thy helm!

Richm. All comfort that the dark night can afford,
Be to thy Perſon, noble father-in-law,
Tell me, how fares our loving mother?

Stan. I, by attorney, bleſs thee from thy mother,
Who prays continually for *Richmond*'s good:
So much for that----- The ſilent hours ſteal on,
And flaky darkneſs breaks within the Eaſt.
In brief, for ſo the ſeaſon bids us be,
Prepare thy battel early in the morning,
And put thy fortune to th' arbitrement
Of bloody ſtrokes, and mortal ſtaring war.
I, as I may, (that which I would, I cannot)
With beſt advantage will deceive the time,
And aid thee in this doubtful ſhock of arms.
But on thy ſide I may not be too forward,
Leſt (being ſeen) thy brother tender *George*
Be executed in his father's ſight.
Farewel; the leiſure, and the fearful time
Cuts off the ceremonious vows of love,
And ample enterchange of ſweet diſcourſe,
Which ſo-long-ſundred friends ſhould dwell upon.
God give us leiſure for theſe rights of love.
Once more adieu, be valiant, and ſpeed well.

Richm. Good lords, conduct him to his regiment:
I'll ſtrive, with troubled [a] thoughts, to take a nap,
Leſt leaden ſlumber poize me down to-morrow,

When

[a] *noiſe.*

When I ſhould mount with wings of victory:
Once more, good night, kind lords and gentlemen.
[*Exeunt. Manet* Richmond.
O thou! whoſe captain I account my ſelf,
Look on my forces with a gracious eye:
Put in their hands thy bruiſing irons of wrath,
That they may cruſh down with a heavy fall
Th' uſurping helmets of our adverſaries.
Make us thy miniſters of chaſtiſement,
That we may praiſe thee in thy victory.
To thee I do commend my watchful ſoul,
E're I let fall the windows of mine eyes:
Sleeping and waking, oh defend me ſtill. [*Sleeps.*

SCENE IV.

Between the Tents of Richard *and* Richmond: *They ſleeping.*

Enter the Ghoſt of Prince Edward *Son to* Henry *the Sixth.*

Ghoſt. LET me ſit heavy on thy ſoul to-morrow! [*To K.* Rich.
Think how thou ſtab'ſt me in the prime of youth
At *Tewksbury*; therefore deſpair and die.
Be cheerful *Richmond*, for the wronged ſouls [*To* Richm.
Of butcher'd Princes fight in thy behalf:
King *Henry*'s iſſue, *Richmond*, comforts thee.

Enter the Ghoſt of Henry *the Sixth.*

Ghoſt. When I was mortal, my anointed body [*To K.* Rich.
By thee was punched full of holes;
Think on the *Tower*, and me; deſpair, and die.
Henry the Sixth bids thee deſpair, and die.
Virtuous and holy, be thou conqueror. [*To* Richm.
Harry, that propheſy'd thou ſhould'ſt be King,

Doth comfort thee in ſleep; live thou and flouriſh.

Enter the Ghoſt of Clarence.

Ghoſt. Let me ſit heavy on thy ſoul to-morrow! [*To K.* Rich.
I that was waſh'd to death in fulſom wine,
Poor *Clarence*, by thy guile betray'd to death:
To-morrow in the battel think on me,
And fall thy edgleſs ſword; deſpair and die.
Thou off-ſpring of the houſe of *Lancaſter*, [*To* Richm.
The wronged heirs of *York* do pray for thee,
Good angels guard thy battel, live and flouriſh.

Enter the Ghoſts of Rivers, Gray, *and* Vaughan.

Riv. Let me ſit heavy on thy ſoul to-morrow, [*To K.* Rich.
Rivers, that dy'd at *Pomfret:* deſpair, and die.
Gray. Think upon *Gray*, and let thy ſoul deſpair. [*To K.* Rich.
Vaugh. Think upon *Vaughan*, and with guilty fear
Let fall thy launce! *Richard*, deſpair and die. [*To K.* Rich.
All. Awake, and think our wrongs in *Richard*'s boſom
Will conquer him. Awake, and win the day. [*To* Richm.

Enter the Ghoſt of Lord Haſtings.

Ghoſt. Bloody and guilty; guiltily awake; [*To K.* Rich.
And in a bloody battel end thy days:
Think on lord *Haſtings*; and deſpair and die.
Quiet untroubled ſoul, awake, awake. [*To* Richm.
Arm, fight, and conquer, for fair *England*'s ſake.

Enter the Ghoſts of the two young Princes.

Ghoſts. Dream on thy couſins ſmother'd in the *Tower:*
Let us be laid within thy boſom, *Richard*, [*To K.* Rich.
And weigh thee down to ruin, ſhame, and death!
Thy Nephews ſouls bid thee deſpair and die.

Sleep

Sleep *Richmond*, ſleep in peace, and wake in joy. [*To* Richm.
Good angels guard thee from the boar's annoy;
Live, and beget a happy race of Kings.
Edward's unhappy ſons do bid thee flouriſh.

Enter the Ghoſt of Anne *his wife.*

Ghoſt. Richard, thy wife, that wretched *Anne* thy wife,
That never ſlept a quiet hour with thee, [*To K.* Rich.
Now fills thy ſleep with perturbations:
To-morrow in the battel think on me,
And fall thy edgleſs ſword: deſpair and die.
Thou quiet ſoul, ſleep thou a quiet ſleep: [*To* Richm.
Dream of ſucceſs and happy victory,
Thy adverſary's wife doth pray for thee.

Enter the Ghoſt of Buckingham.

Ghoſt. The firſt was I that help'd thee to the crown:
The laſt was I that felt thy tyranny. [*To K.* Rich.
O, in the battel think on *Buckingham*,
And die in terror of thy guiltineſs.
Dream on, dream on, of bloody deeds and death,
Fainting deſpair; deſpairing yield thy breath.
I dy'd for hope, ere I could lend thee aid; [*To* Richm.
But cheer thy heart, and be thou not diſmay'd:
God and good angels fight on *Richmond*'s ſide,
And *Richard* fall in height of all his pride. [*The Ghoſts vaniſh.*

[*K.* Richard *ſtarts out of his dream.*

K. *Rich.* Give me another horſe----bind up my wounds.
Have mercy, *Jeſu*----ſoft, I did but dream.
O coward conſcience! how doſt thou afflict me?
The lights burn blue----is it not dead midnight?
Cold fearful drops ſtand on my trembling fleſh.
What? do I fear my ſelf? there's none elſe by,

Is there a murth'rer here? no; yes, I am. *
My conſcience hath a thouſand ſev'ral tongues,
And ev'ry tongue brings in a ſev'ral tale,
And ev'ry tale condemns me for a villain.
Perjury, perjury in high'ſt degree,
Murther, ſtern murther in the dir'ſt degree,
All ſeveral ſins all us'd in each degree,
Throng to the bar, all crying, guilty, guilty!
I ſhall deſpair: there is no creature loves me:
And if I die, no ſoul will pity me. *
Methought, the ſouls of all that I had murther'd
Came to my tent, and every one did threat
To-morrow's vengeance on the head of *Richard.*

Enter Ratcliff.

Rat. My lord.

K. *Rich.* Who's there?

Rat. Ratcliff, my lord. The early village cock
Hath twice done ſalutation to the morn;
Your friends are up, and buckle on their armour.

K. *Rich. Ratcliff*, I fear, I fear----

Rat. Nay, good my lord, be not afraid of ſhadows.

* ——No; yes, I am:
Then fly——what, from my ſelf? great reaſon; why?
Leſt I revenge. What? my ſelf on my ſelf?
I love my ſelf. Wherefore? for any good
That I my ſelf have done unto my ſelf?
O no. Alas, I rather hate my ſelf,
For hateful deeds committed by my ſelf.
I am a villain; yet I lie, I am not.
Fool, of thy ſelf ſpeak well——Fool do not flatter.
My conſcience hath, *&c.*

* ——no ſoul will pity me.
Nay, wherefore ſhould they? ſince that I my ſelf
Find in my ſelf no pity to my ſelf.
Methought, the ſouls of, *&c.*

K. *Rich.*

K. *Rich.* By the Apoſtle *Paul*, ſhadows to-night
Have ſtruck more terror to the ſoul of *Richard*,
Than can the ſubſtance of ten thouſand ſoldiers
Armed in proof, and led by ſhallow *Richmond*.
It is not yet near day. Come, go with me,
Under our tents; I'll play the eaves-dropper,
To hear if any mean to ſhrink from me.

[*Exeunt K.* Richard *and* Ratcliff.

SCENE V.

Enter the Lords to Richmond *ſitting in his Tent.*

Lords. GOOD morrow, *Richmond.*

Richm. I cry you mercy, lords and watchful gentlemen,
That you have ta'en a tardy ſluggard here.

Lords. How have you ſlept, my lord?

Richm. The ſweeteſt ſleep and faireſt boading dreams,
That ever enter'd in a drowſie head,
Have I ſince your departure had, my lords.
Methought their ſouls whoſe bodies *Richard* murther'd,
Came to my tent, and cried out Victory.
I promiſe you my heart is very jocund,
In the remembrance of ſo fair a dream.
How far into the morning is it, lords?

Lords. Upon the ſtroak of four.

Richm. Why then 'tis time to arm and give direction.
More than I have ſaid, loving countrymen,
The leiſure and enforcement of the time
Forbids to dwell on; yet remember this,
God and our good cauſe fight upon our ſide,
The pray'rs of holy ſaints, and wronged ſouls,
Like high-rear'd bulwarks ſtand before our faces.

Richard

Richard except, thoſe whom we fight againſt
Had rather have us win, than him they follow.
For what is he they follow? truly gentlemen,
A bloody tyrant, and a homicide:
One rais'd in blood, and one in blood eſtabliſh'd;
One that made means to come by what he hath,
And ſlaughter'd thoſe that were the means to help him.
A baſe foul ſtone, made precious by the foil
Of *England*'s chair, where he is falſely ſet:
One that hath ever been God's enemy;
Then if you fight againſt God's enemy,
God will in juſtice ward you as his ſoldiers.
If you do ſweat to put a tyrant down,
You ſleep in peace, the tyrant being ſlain:
If you do fight againſt your country's foes,
Your country's fat ſhall pay your pains the hire.
If you do fight in ſafeguard of your wives,
Your wives ſhall welcome home the conquerors.
If you do free your children from the ſword,
Your children's children quit it in your age.
Then in the name of God and all theſe rights,
Advance your ſtandards, draw your willing ſwords.
For me, the ranſom of my bold attempt
Shall be this cold corps on the earth's cold face:
But if I thrive, the gain of my attempt
The leaſt of you ſhall ſhare his part thereof.
Sound drums and trumpets boldly, chearfully,
God, and Saint *George!* *Richmond*, and victory!

SCENE

SCENE VI.

Enter King Richard, Ratcliff, *and* Catesby.

K. *Rich.* WHat ſaid *Northumberland*, as touching *Richmond?*
Rat. That he was never trained up in arms.
K. *Rich.* He ſaid the truth; and what ſaid *Surrey* then?
Rat. He ſmil'd and ſaid, the better for our purpoſe.
K. *Rich.* He was i'th' right, and ſo indeed it is.
Tell the clock there---- give me a Kalendar. [*Clock ſtrikes.*
Who ſaw the ſun to-day?
Rat. Not I, my lord.
K. *Rich.* Then he diſdains to ſhine; for by the book,
He ſhould have brav'd the eaſt an hour ago----
A black day it will be to ſome body, *Ratcliff.*
Rat. My lord?
K. *Rich.* The ſun will not be ſeen to-day;
The ſky doth frown and lowre upon our army----
I would theſe dewy tears were from the ground----
Not ſhine to-day? why what is that to me
More than to *Richmond?* for the ſelf-ſame heav'n
That frowns on me, looks ſadly upon him.

Enter Norfolk.

Nor. Arm, arm, my lord, the foe vaunts in the field.
K. *Rich.* Come, buſtle, buſtle----capariſon my horſe.
Call up lord *Stanley*, bid him bring his power,
I will lead forth my ſoldiers to the plain,
And thus my battel ſhall be ordered.
My foreward ſhall be drawn in length,
Conſiſting equally of horſe and foot:
Our archers ſhall be placed in the midſt;

John

John Duke of *Norfolk*, *Thomas* Earl of *Surrey*,
Shall have the leading of the foot and horſe.
They thus directed, we our ſelf will follow
In the main battel, which on either ſide
Shall be well winged with our chiefeſt horſe:
This and St. *George* to boot. What think'ſt thou, *Norfolk?*
Nor. A good direction, warlike Soveraign.
This paper found I on my tent this morning. [*Giving a ſcrowl.*

Jocky *of* Norfolk, *be not ſo bold,* [Reads.
For Dickon *thy maſter is bought and ſold.*

K. *Rich.* A thing deviſed by the enemy.
Go gentlemen, go each man to his charge.
Let not our babling dreams affright our ſouls;
Conſcience is but a word that cowards uſe,
Devis'd at firſt to keep the ſtrong in awe.
Our ſtrong arms be our conſcience, ſwords our law.
March on, join bravely, let us to't pell mell,
If not to heav'n, then hand in hand to hell.
What ſhall I ſay more than I have inferr'd?
Remember whom you are to cope withal,
A ſort of vagabonds, of raſcals, run-aways,
A ſcum of *Britons*, and baſe lackey-peaſants,
Whom their o'er-cloyed country vomits forth
To deſperate adventures and deſtruction.
You ſleeping ſafe, they bring you to unreſt:
You having lands, and bleſt with beauteous wives,
They would reſtrain the one, diſtain the other.
And who doth lead them but a paltry fellow,
Long kept in *Britain* at our mother's coſt?
A milk-ſop, one that never in his life
Felt ſo much cold, as over ſhooes in ſnow.
Let's whip theſe ſtragglers o'er the ſeas again,

Laſh hence theſe over-weening rags of *France*,
Theſe famiſh'd beggars, weary of their lives;
Who, but for dreaming on this fond exploit,
For want of means, poor rats, had hang'd themſelves.
If we be conquer'd, let men conquer us,
And not thoſe baſtard-*Britons*, whom our fathers
Have in their own land beaten, bobb'd and thump'd,
And on record left them the heirs of ſhame.
Shall theſe enjoy our lands? lye with our wives?
Raviſh our daughters?---hark, I hear their drum. [*Drum afar off.*
Fight gentlemen of *England*, fight bold yeomen!
Draw, archers, draw your arrows to the head:
Spur your proud horſes hard, and ride in blood:
Amaze the welkin with your broken ſtaves!

Enter a Meſſenger.

What ſays lord *Stanley*, will he bring his power?
Meſ. My lord, he doth deny to come.
K. *Rich.* Off with his ſon *George*'s head.
Nor. My lord, the enemy is paſt the marſh;
After the battel let *George Stanley* die.
K. *Rich.* A thouſand hearts are great within my boſom.
Advance our ſtandards, ſet upon our foes,
Our ancient word of courage, fair St. *George*,
Inſpire us with the ſpleen of fiery dragons.
Upon them! Victory ſits on our helms. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

Alarum. Excurſions. Enter Catesby.

Cateſ. RESCUE, my lord of *Norfolk*, reſcue, reſcue:
The King enacts more wonders than a man,

Daring an oppoſite to every danger:
His horſe is ſlain, and all on foot he fights,
Seeking for *Richmond* in the throat of death.
Reſcue, fair lord, or elſe the day is loſt.

Alarum. Enter King Richard.

K. *Rich.* A horſe, a horſe, my kingdom for a horſe.
Cateſ. Withdraw, my lord, I'll help you to a horſe.
K. *Rich.* Slave, I have ſet my life upon a caſt,
And I will ſtand the hazard of the dye:
I think there be ſix *Richmonds* in the field,
Five have I ſlain to-day inſtead of him.
A horſe, a horſe, my kingdom for a horſe.

Alarums. Enter King Richard *and* Richmond; *they fight,* Richard *is ſlain.*

Retreat, and Flouriſh. Enter Richmond, Stanley *bearing the Crown, with divers other lords.*

Richm. God and your arms be prais'd, victorious friends;
The day is ours, the bloody dog is dead.
Stan. Couragious *Richmond*, well haſt thou acquit thee:
Lo, here theſe long uſurped royalties,
From the dead temples of this bloody wretch
Have I pluckt off, to grace thy brows withal.
Wear it, enjoy it, and make uſe of it.
Richm. Great God of heaven, ſay Amen to all.
But tell me firſt, is young *George Stanley* living?
Derby. He is, my lord, and ſafe in *Leiceſter* town;
Whither, if you ſo pleaſe, we may withdraw us.
Richm. What men of note are ſlain on either ſide?
Derby. John Duke of *Norfolk*, *Walter* the lord *Ferris*,
Sir *Robert Brakenbury*, Sir *William Brandon.*

Richm.

Richm. Inter their bodies as becomes their births.
Proclaim a pardon to the ſoldiers fled,
That in ſubmiſſion will return to us.
And then, as we have ta'en the ſacrament,
We will unite the White Roſe and the Red.
Smile heav'n upon this fair conjunction,
That long hath frown'd upon their enmity:
What traitor hears me, and ſays not Amen?
England hath long been mad, and ſcar'd her ſelf;
The brother blindly ſhed the brother's blood,
The father raſhly ſlaughter'd his own ſon,
The ſons, compell'd, been butchers to the ſire: *
O now let *Richmond* and *Elizabeth*,
The true ſucceeders of each royal houſe,
By God's fair ordinance conjoin together!
And let their heirs (God, if thy will be ſo)
Enrich the time to come with ſmooth-fac'd peace,
With ſmiling plenty, and fair proſp'rous days.
Abate the edge of traitors, gracious lord!
That would reduce theſe bloody days again,
And make poor *England* weep in ſtreams of blood.
Let them not live to taſte this land's encreaſe,
That would with treaſon wound this fair land's peace.
Now civil wounds are ſtopp'd, peace lives agen:
That ſhe may long live here, God ſay, Amen. [*Exeunt.*

* ——— butchers to the ſire:
All this divided *York* and *Lancaſter*,
Divided in their dire diviſion.
O now let, *&c.*

The LIFE of

HENRY

THE

EIGHTH.

PROLOGUE.

I Come no more to make you laugh; things now
That bear a weighty and a ſerious brow,
Sad, high, and working, full of ſtate and woe,
Such noble ſcenes, as draw the eye to flow,
We ſhall preſent. Thoſe that can pity, here
May, if they think it well, let fall a tear;
The ſubject will deſerve it. Such as give
Their money out of hope they may believe,
May here find truth too. Thoſe that come to ſee
Only a ſhow or two, (and ſo agree,
The play may paſs) if they be ſtill and willing,
I'll undertake may ſee away their ſhilling
Richly in two ſhort hours. Only they
That come to hear a merry, bawdy play;
A noiſe of targets; or to ſee a fellow
In a long motley coat, guarded with yellow;
Will be deceiv'd: for, gentle hearers, know
To rank our choſen truth with ſuch a ſhow
As fool and fight is, (beſide forfeiting
Our own brains, and th' opinion that we bring
To make that only true we now intend)
Will leave us ne'er an underſtanding friend.
Therefore, for goodneſs ſake, as you are known
The firſt and happieſt hearers of the town,
Be ſad, as we would make ye. Think ye ſee
The very perſons of our noble ſtory,
As they were living: think you ſee them great,
And follow'd with the gen'ral throng, and ſweat
Of thouſand friends; Then, in a moment, ſee
How ſoon this mightineſs meets miſery!
And if you can be merry then, I'll ſay
A man may weep upon his wedding day.

Dra-

Dramatis Perſonæ.

KING Henry *the Eighth.*
Cardinal Wolſey, *his firſt Miniſter and Favourite.*
Cranmer, *Archbiſhop of* Canterbury.
Duke of Norfolk.
Duke of Buckingham.
Duke of Suffolk.
Earl of Surrey.
Lord Chamberlain.
Cardinal Campeius, *the Pope's Legat.*
Capucius, *Ambaſſador from the Emperor* Charles *the Fifth.*
Gardiner, *Biſhop of* Wincheſter.
Lord Abergavenny.
Lord Sands.
Sir Henry Guildford.
Sir Thomas Lovell.
Sir Anthony Denny.
Sir Nicholas Vaux.
Cromwell, *firſt Servant to* Wolſey, *afterwards to the King.*
Griffith, *Gentleman-Uſher to Queen* Katherine.
Three Gentlemen.
Dr. Butts, *Phyſician to the King.*
Surveyor to the Duke of Buckingham.
Porter and his Man.

Queen Katharine, *firſt Wife to King* Henry, *afterwards Divorc'd.*
Anne Bullen, *belov'd by the King, and afterwards married to him.*
An old Lady, Friend to Anne Bullen.
Patience, *Woman of the Bed-Chamber to Queen* Katharine.

Several Lords and Ladies in the dumb Shews. Women attending upon the Queen. Spirits which appear to her. Scribes, Officers, Guards, and other Attendants.

The SCENE *lies moſtly in* LONDON.

THE

The LIFE of *HENRY* VIII.

ACT I. SCENE I.

Enter the Duke of Norfolk *at one door: at the other the Duke of* Buckingham, *and the Lord* Abergavenny.

BUCKINGHAM.

GOOD morrow, and well met. How have ye done
Since laſt we ſaw y'in *France*?
Nor. I thank your Grace:
Healthful, and ever ſince a freſh admirer
Of what I ſaw there.
Buck. An untimely ague
Staid me a priſoner in my chamber, when
Thoſe [a] ſuns of glory, thoſe two lights of men
Met in the vale of *Arde*.
Nor. 'Twixt *Guynes* and *Arde*:
I was then preſent, ſaw 'em ſalute on horſe-back,
Beheld them when they lighted, how they clung
In their embracement, as they grew together;
Which had they, what four thron'd ones could have weigh'd
Such a compounded one?
Buck. All the whole time
I was my chamber's priſoner.

[a] *ſons.*

Nor. Then you loſt
The view of earthly glory: men might ſay
'Till this time pomp was ſingle, but now marry'd
To one above it ſelf. Each following day
Became the next day's maſter, 'till the laſt
Made former wonders, its. To-day the *French*,
All clinquant, all in gold, like heathen gods
Shone down the *Engliſh*; and to-morrow they
Made *Britain*, *India*: every man that ſtood,
Shew'd like a mine. Their dwarfiſh pages were
As Cherubins, all gilt; the Madams too,
Not us'd to toil, did almoſt ſweat to bear
The pride upon them, that their very labour
Was to them as a painting. Now this mask
Was cry'd incomparable; and th'enſuing night
Made it a fool and beggar. The two Kings
Equal in luſtre, were now beſt, now worſt,
As preſence did preſent them; him in eye,
Still him in praiſe; and being preſent both,
'Twas ſaid they ſaw but one, and no diſcerner
Durſt wag his tongue in cenſure. When theſe ſuns,
(For ſo they phraſe 'em) by their heralds, challeng'd
The noble ſpirits to arms, they did perform
Beyond thought's compaſs, that old fabulous ſtory
(Being now ſeen poſſible enough) got credit;
That † *Bevis* was believ'd.

Buck. Oh, you go far.

Nor. As I belong to worſhip, and affect
In honour, honeſty; the tract of ev'ry thing
Would by a good diſcourſer loſe ſome life,
Which action's ſelf was tongue to.

Buck. All was royal;
To the diſpoſing of it nought rebell'd,

Order

† *The old romantic legend of* Bevis *of* Southampton.

Order gave each thing view. The office did
Distinctly his full function. Who did guide,
I mean who set the body and the limbs
Of this great sport together, as you guess?

Nor. One sure, that promises no † element
In such a business.

Buck. Pray you, who, my lord?

Nor. All this was order'd by the good discretion
Of the right rev'rend Cardinal of *York.*

Buck. The devil speed him: no man's pye is freed
From his ambitious finger. What had he
To do in these fierce vanities? I wonder
That such a ‡ketch can with his very bulk
Take up the rays o'th' beneficial sun,
And keep it from the earth.

Nor. Yet surely Sir,
There's in him stuff that puts him to these ends.
For being not propt by ancestry, whose grace
Chalks successors their way; nor call'd upon
For high feats done to th' crown; neither ally'd
To eminent assistants; but spider like
Out of his self-drawn web; this gives us note,
The force of his own merit makes his way,
A gift that heaven gives for him, which buys
A place next to the King.

Aber. I cannot tell
What heav'n hath giv'n him; let some graver eye
Pierce into that: but I can see his pride
Peep through each part of him; whence has he that,
If not from hell? the devil is a niggard,
Or has giv'n all before, and he begins
A new hell in himself.

† *no* rudiment *or* beginning.
‡ ketch, *from the* Italian Caicchio, *signifying a* Tub, Barrel, *or* Hogshead. Skinner.

Buck. Why the devil,
Upon this *French* going out, took he upon him,
Without the privity o'th' King, t' appoint
Who ſhould attend him? he makes up the file
Of all the gentry; for the moſt part ſuch
To whom as great a charge as little honour
He meant to lay upon: And his own letter
(The honourable board of council out)
Muſt fetch in him he † papers.

Aber. I do know
Kinſmen of mine, three at the leaſt, that have
By this ſo ſicken'd their eſtates, that never
They ſhall abound as formerly.

Buck. O many
Have broke their backs with laying mannors on 'em
For this great journey. What did this great vanity
But miniſter communication of
A moſt poor iſſue?

Nor. Grievingly I think,
The peace between the *French* and us, not values
The coſt that did conclude it.

Buck. Every man,
After the hideous ſtorm that follow'd, was
A thing inſpir'd; and not conſulting, broke
Into a gen'ral propheſie; that this tempeſt,
Daſhing the garment of this peace, aboaded
The ſudden breach on't.

Nor. Which is budded out:
For *France* hath flaw'd the league, and hath attach'd
Our merchants goods at *Bourdeaux*.

Aber. Is it therefore
Th' ambaſſador is ſilenc'd?

Nor.

† *he* papers, *a* verb; *His own letter, by his own ſingle authority and without the concurrence of the Council, muſt fetch in Him whom he papers down.* I don't underſtand it, unleſs this be the meaning.

Nor. Marry is't.

Aber. A proper title of a peace, and purchas'd
At a ſuperfluous rate!

Buck. Why all this buſineſs
Our rev'rend Cardinal carried.

Nor. Like it your Grace,
The ſtate takes notice of the private difference
Betwixt you and the Cardinal. I adviſe you
(And take it from a heart that wiſhes you
Honour and plenteous ſafety) that you read
The Cardinal's malice and his potency
Together: to conſider further, that
What his high hatred would effect, wants not
A miniſter in his pow'r. You know his nature,
That he's revengeful; and I know his ſword
Hath a ſharp edge: it's long, and't may be ſaid,
It reaches far; and where 'twill not extend,
Thither he darts it. Boſom up my counſel,
You'll find it wholſome. Lo, where comes that rock
That I adviſe your ſhunning.

SCENE II.

Enter Cardinal Wolſey, *the purſe born before him, certain of the guard, and two ſecretaries with papers; the Cardinal in his paſſage fixeth his eye on* Buckingham, *and* Buckingham *on him, both full of diſdain.*

Wol. The Duke of *Buckingham*'s ſurveyor? ha?
Where's his examination?

Secr. Here, ſo pleaſe you.

Wol. Is he in perſon ready?

Secr. Ay, an't pleaſe your Grace.

Wol. Well, we ſhall then know more,

And

And *Buckingham* ſhall leſſen this big look.

[*Exeunt Cardinal and his train.*

Buck. This butcher's cur is venom-mouth'd, and I
Have not the pow'r to muzzle him, therefore beſt
Not wake him in his ſlumber. A beggar's book
Out-worths a noble's blood.

Nor. What, are you chaf'd?
Ask God for temp'rance, that's th' appliance only
Which your diſeaſe requires.

Buck. I read in's looks
Matter againſt me, and his eye revil'd
Me as his abject object; at this inſtant
He bores me with ſome trick, he's gone to th' King:
I'll follow and out-ſtare him.

Nor. Stay, my lord,
And let your reaſon with your choler queſtion
What 'tis you go about. To climb ſteep hills
Requires ſlow pace at firſt. Anger is like
A full-hot horſe, who being allow'd his way,
Self-mettle tires him: not a man in *England*
Can adviſe me, like you: be to your ſelf
As you would to your friend.

Buck. I'll to the King,
And from a mouth of honour quite cry down
This *Ipſwich* fellow's inſolence, or proclaim
There's diff'rence in no perſons.

Nor. Be advis'd;
Heat not a furnace for your foe ſo hot
That it do ſinge your ſelf. We may out-run
By violent ſwiftneſs, that which we run at;
And loſe by over-running: know you not,
The fire that mounts the liquor 'till't run o'er,
In ſeeming to augment it, waſtes it: be

Advis'd I ſay again, there is no *Engliſh*
Soul ſtronger to direct you than your ſelf,
If with the ſap of reaſon you would quench,
Or but allay the fire of paſſion.
Buck. Sir,
I'm thankful to you, and I'll go along
By your preſcription; but this top-proud fellow,
Whom from the flow of gall I name not, but
From ſincere motions; by intelligence
And proofs as clear as founts in *July*, when
We ſee each grain of gravel, I do know
To be corrupt and treaſonous.
Nor. Say not, treaſonous.
Buck. To th' King I'll ſay't, and make my vouch as ſtrong
As ſhore of rock---- attend. This holy fox,
Or wolf, or both (for he is equal rav'nous
As he is ſubtle, and as prone to miſchief
As able to perform't) his mind and place
Infecting one another; yea reciprocally,
Only to ſhew his pomp, as well in *France*
As here at home, ſuggeſts the King our maſter
To this laſt coſtly treaty, th' enterview,
That ſwallow'd ſo much treaſure, and like a glaſs
Did break i'th' rinſing.
Nor. Faith, and ſo it did.
Buck. Pray give me favour, Sir,---- this cunning Cardinal
The articles o'th' combination drew
As himſelf pleas'd; and they were ratify'd
As he cry'd, let it be---- to as much end,
As give a crutch to th' dead. But our [b] Court-Cardinal
Has done this, and 'tis well---- for worthy *Wolſey*,
Who cannot err, he did it. Now this follows,
(Which, as I take it, is a kind of puppy

To

[b] *count.*

To th' old dam, treaſon) *Charles* the Emperor,
Under pretence to ſee the Queen his aunt,
(For 'twas indeed his colour, but he came
To whiſper *Wolſey*) here makes viſitation:
His fears were, that the interview betwixt
England and *France*, might through their amity
Breed him ſome prejudice; for from this league
Peep'd harms that menac'd him. He privily
Deals with our Cardinal, and as I trow,
Which I do well---- for I am ſure the Emperor
Paid ere he promis'd, whereby his ſuit was granted
Ere it was ask'd. But when the way was made,
And pav'd with gold; the Emp'ror thus deſir'd,
That he would pleaſe to alter the King's courſe,
And break the foreſaid peace. Let the King know,
(As ſoon he ſhall by me) that thus the Cardinal
Does buy and ſell his honour as he pleaſes,
And for his own advantage.

Nor. I am ſorry
To hear this of him; and could wiſh you were
Something miſtaken in't.

Buck. No, not a ſyllable:
I do pronounce him in that very ſhape
He ſhall appear in proof.

SCENE III.

Enter Brandon, *a Serjeant at arms before him, and two or three of the guard.*

Bran. Your office, Serjeant; execute it.

Serj. Sir,
My lord the Duke of *Buckingham*, and Earl
Of *Hertford*, *Stafford*, and *Northampton*, I

Arreſt

Arreſt thee of high treaſon, in the name
Of our moſt Sov'reign King.
Buck. Lo you, my lord,
The net has fall'n upon me; I ſhall periſh
Under device and practice.
Bran. I am ſorry
To ſee you ta'en from liberty, to look on
The buſineſs preſent. 'Tis his Highneſs pleaſure
You ſhall to th' *Tower*.
Buck. It will help me nothing
To plead mine innocence; for that dye is on me,
Which makes my whit'ſt part black. The will of heav'n
Be done in this and all things: I obey.
O my lord *Aberganny*, fare ye well.
Bran. Nay, he muſt bear you company. The King
Is pleas'd you ſhall to th' *Tower*, 'till you know
How he determines further.
Aber. As the Duke ſaid,
The will of heav'n be done, and the King's pleaſure
By me obey'd.
Bran. Here is a warrant from
The King, t' attach lord *Montague*, and the bodies
Of the Duke's confeſſor, *John de la Car*,
One *Gilbert Peck*, his counſellor.
Buck. So, ſo;
Theſe are the limbs o'th' plot: no more, I hope?
Bran. A monk o'th' *Chartreux*.
Buck. *Michael Hopkins?*
Bran. He.
Buck. My ſurveyor is falſe, the o'er-great Cad inal
Hath ſhew'd him gold; my life is ſpann'd already:
I am the ſhadow of poor *Buckingham*,

Whoſe figure ev'n this inſtant cloud puts on,
By dark'ning my clear ſun. My lord, farewel. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

Cornet. Enter King Henry, *leaning on the Cardinal's ſhoulder; the Nobles and Sir* Thomas Lovel; *the Cardinal places himſelf under the King's feet, on his right ſide.*

King. MY life it ſelf, and the beſt heart of it,
Thanks you for this great care: I ſtood i'th' level
Of a full-charg'd confed'racy, and give thanks
To you that choak'd it. Let be call'd before us
That gentleman of *Buckingham*'s in perſon,
I'll hear him his confeſſions juſtifie,
And point by point the treaſons of his maſter
He ſhall again relate.

A noiſe, with crying, Room for the Queen. Uſher'd by the Duke of Norfolk, *Enter the Queen,* Norfolk *and* Suffolk; *She kneels. The King riſeth from his ſtate, takes her up, kiſſes and placeth her by him.*

Queen. Nay, we muſt longer kneel; I am a ſuitor.
King. Ariſe, and take place by us; half your ſuit
Never name to us; you have half our power:
The other moiety ere you ask is given;
Repeat your will and take it.
Queen. Thank your Majeſty.
That you would love your ſelf, and in that love
Not unconſider'd leave your honour, nor
The dignity of your office, is the point
Of my petition.
King. Lady mine, proceed.

Queen.

Queen. I am ſollicited, not by a few,
And thoſe of true condition, that your ſubjects
Are in great grievance. There have been commiſſions
Sent down among 'em, which have flaw'd the heart
Of all their loyalties; wherein although [*To* Wolſey.
(My good lord Cardinal) they vent reproaches
Moſt bitterly on you as putter on
Of theſe exactions, yet the King our maſter
(Whoſe honour heav'n ſhield from ſoil) eſcapes not
Language unmannerly; yea ſuch which breaks
The ſides of loyalty, and almoſt appears
In loud rebellion.

Nor. Not almoſt appears,
It doth appear; for upon theſe taxations,
The clothiers all, not able to maintain
The many to them 'longing, have put off
The ſpinſters, carders, fullers, weavers, who
Unfit for other life, compell'd by hunger
And lack of other means, in deſp'rate manner
Daring th' event to th' teeth, are all in uproar,
And danger ſerves among them.

King. Taxation?
Wherein? and what taxation? my lord Cardinal,
You that are blam'd for it alike with us,
Know you of this taxation?

Wol. Pleaſe you, Sir,
I know but of a ſingle part in ought
Pertains to th' ſtate, and front but in that file
Where others tell ſteps with me.

Queen. No, my lord,
You know no more than others: but you frame
Things that are known alike, which are not wholſome
To thoſe which would not know them, and yet muſt

Perforce be their acquaintance. Theſe exactions
(Whereof my Sov'raign would have note) they are
Moſt peſtilent to th' hearing; and to bear 'em,
The back is ſacrifice to th' load; they ſay,
They are devis'd by you, or elſe you ſuffer
Too hard an exclamation.

King. Still exaction!
The nature of it, in what kind let's know
Is this exaction?

Queen. I am much too vent'rous
In tempting of your patience, but am bolden'd
Under your promis'd pardon. The ſubjects grief
Comes through commiſſions, which compel from each
The ſixth part of his ſubſtance, to be levy'd
Without delay; and the pretence for this
Is nam'd your wars in *France*. This makes bold mouths;
Tongues ſpit their duties out, and cold hearts freeze
Allegiance in them; All their curſes now
Live where their pray'rs did; and it's come to paſs,
That tractable obedience is a ſlave
To each incenſed will. I would your Highneſs
Would give it quick conſideration, for
There is no primer baſeneſs.

King. By my life,
This is againſt our pleaſure.

Wol. And for me,
I have no further gone in this, than by
A ſingle voice, and that not paſt me but
By learned approbation of the judges.
If I'm traduc'd by tongues, which neither know
My faculties nor perſon, yet will be
The chronicles of my doing; let me ſay,
'Tis but the fate of place, and the rough brake

That

That virtue muſt go through: we muſt not ſtint
Our neceſſary actions, in the fear
To cope malicious cenſurers; which ever,
As rav'nous fiſhes, do a veſſel follow
That is new trimm'd; but benefit no further
Than vainly longing. What we oft do beſt,
By ſick interpreters, or weak ones, is
Not ours, or not allow'd: what worſt, as oft
Hitting a groſſer quality, is cry'd up
For our beſt act: if we ſtand ſtill, in fear
Our motion will be mock'd or carped at,
We ſhould take root here where we ſit:
Or ſit ſtate-ſtatues only.

King. Things done well,
And with a care, exempt themſelves from fear:
Things done without example, in their iſſue
Are to be fear'd. Have you a precedent
Of this commiſſion? I believe not any.
We muſt not rend our ſubjects from our laws,
And ſtick them in our will. Sixth part of each!
A trembling contribution!---- why we take
From ev'ry tree, lop, bark, and part o'th' timber:
And though we leave it with a root thus hackt,
The air will drink the ſap. To ev'ry country
Where this is queſtion'd, ſend our letters, with
Free pardon to each man that has deny'd
The force of this commiſſion; pray look to't,
I put it to your care.

Wol. A word with you. [*To the Secretary.*
Let there be letters writ to ev'ry ſhire
Of the King's grace and pardon: The griev'd commons
Hardly conceive of me; let it be nois'd,
That through our interceſſion, this revokement

And

And pardon comes; I ſhall anon adviſe you
Further in the proceeding. [*Exit Secretary.*

SCENE V.

Enter Surveyor.

Queen. I'm ſorry that the Duke of *Buckingham*
Is run in your diſpleaſure.

King. It grieves many;
The gentleman is learn'd, a moſt rare ſpeaker,
To nature none more bound, his training ſuch,
That he may furniſh and inſtruct great teachers,
And never ſeek for aid out of himſelf.
Yet ſee, when noble benefits ſhall prove
Not well diſpos'd, the mind growing once corrupt,
They turn to vicious forms, ten times more ugly
Than ever they were fair. This man ſo compleat,
Who was enroll'd 'mongſt wonders, and when we
Almoſt with liſt'ning raviſh'd, could not find
His hour of ſpeech, a minute; he, my lady,
Hath into monſtrous habits put the graces
That once were his, and is become as black
As if beſmear'd in hell. Sit, you ſhall hear
(This was his gentleman in truſt) of him
Things to ſtrike honour ſad. Bid him recount
To-fore-recited practices, whereof
We cannot feel too little, hear too much.

Wol. Stand forth, and with bold ſpirit relate, what you,
Moſt like a careful ſubject, have collected
Out of the Duke of *Buckingham.*

King. Speak freely.

Surv. Firſt, it was uſual with him, ev'ry day
It would infect his ſpeech, that if the King

Should

Should without iſſue die, he'd carry't ſo
To make the ſcepter his. Theſe very words
I've heard him utter to his ſon-in-law,
Lord *Aberganny*, to whom by oath he menac'd
Revenge upon the Cardinal.
Wol. Pleaſe your Highneſs, note
His dangerous conception in this point:
Not friended by his wiſh to your high perſon,
His will is moſt malignant, and it ſtretches
Beyond you to your friends.
Queen. My learn'd lord Cardinal,
Deliver all with charity.
King. Speak on;
How grounded he his title to the crown
Upon our fail? to this point haſt thou heard him
At any time ſpeak ought?
Surv. He was brought to this,
By a vain propheſie of *Nicolas Henton*.
King. What was that *Henton*?
Surv. Sir, a *Chartreux* Friar,
His confeſſor, who fed him ev'ry minute
With words of Sov'reignty.
King. How know'ſt thou this?
Surv. Not long before your Highneſs ſped to *France*,
The Duke being at the *Roſe*, within the pariſh
St. *Lawrence Poultrey*, did of me demand
What was the ſpeech among the *Londoners*
Concerning the *French* journey? I reply'd,
Men fear'd the *French* would prove perfidious
To the King's danger: preſently the Duke
Said, 'twas the fear indeed, and that he doubted
'Twould prove the verity of certain words
Spoke by a holy Monk, that oft, ſays he,

Hath

Hath ſent to me, wiſhing me to permit
John de la Car my chaplain, a choice hour
To hear from him a matter of ſome moment:
Who (after under the commiſſion's ſeal
He ſolemnly had ſworn, that what he ſpoke
My chaplain to no creature living but
To me ſhould utter) with demure confidence
Thus pauſingly enſu'd; Neither the King, nor's heirs
(Tell you the Duke) ſhall proſper, bid him ſtrive
To gain the love o'th' commonalty, the Duke
Shall govern *England*-----

Queen. If I know you well,
You were the Duke's ſurveyor, and loſt your office
On the complaint o'th' tenants; take good heed
You charge not in your ſpleen a noble perſon,
And ſpoil your noble ſoul; I ſay take heed;
Yes, heartily I beſeech you.

King. Let him on.
Go forward.

Surv. On my ſoul, I'll ſpeak but truth.
I told my lord the Duke, by th' devil's illuſions
The Monk might be deceiv'd, and that 'twas dang'rous
For him to ruminate on this, until
It forg'd him ſome deſign, (which, being believ'd,
It was much like to do) he anſwer'd, Tuſh,
It can do me no damage: adding further,
That had the King in his laſt ſickneſs fail'd,
The Cardinal's and Sir *Thomas Lovell*'s heads
Should have gone off.

King. Ha! what, ſo rank? ah ha----
There's miſchief in this man; canſt thou ſay further?

Surv. I can, my Liege.

King. Proceed.

Surv.

Surv. Being at *Greenwich*,
After your Highneſs had reprov'd the Duke
About Sir *William Blomer*-----
King. I remember
Of ſuch a time, he being my ſworn ſervant,
The Duke retain'd him his. But on; what hence?
Surv. If, quoth he, I for this had been committed,
As to the *Tower*, I thought; I would have plaid
The part my father meant to act upon
Th' uſurper *Richard*, who being at *Salisbury*,
Made ſuit to come in's preſence; which, if granted,
(As he made ſemblance of his duty) would
Have put his knife into him.
King. A giant traitor!
Wol. Now, Madam, may his Highneſs live in freedom,
And this man out of priſon?
Queen. God mend all.
King. There's ſomething more would out of thee; what ſay'ſt?
Surv. After the Duke his father with the knife,
He ſtretch'd him, and with one hand on his dagger,
Another ſpread on's breaſt, mounting his eyes,
He did diſcharge a horrible oath, whoſe tenour
Was, were he evil us'd, he would out-go
His father, by as much as a performance
Does an irreſolute purpoſe.
King. There's his period,
To ſheath his knife in us: he is attach'd,
Call him to preſent tryal; if he may
Find mercy in the law, 'tis his; if none,
Let him not ſeek't of us: by day and night
He's traitor to the height. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI.

Enter Lord Chamberlain, and Lord Sands.

Cham. IS't poſſible the ſpells of *France* ſhould juggle
Men into ſuch ſtrange myſteries?
Sands. New cuſtoms,
Though they be never ſo ridiculous,
Nay let 'em be unmanly, yet are follow'd.
Cham. As far as I ſee, all the good our *Engliſh*
Have got by the laſt voyage, is but meerly
A fit or two o'th' face, but they are ſhrewd ones;
For when they hold 'em, you would ſwear directly
Their very noſes had been counſellors
To *Pepin* or *Clotharius*, they keep ſtate ſo.
Sands. They've all new legs, and lame ones; one would take it,
(That never ſaw 'em pace before) the ſpavin
And ſpring-halt reign'd among 'em.
Cham. Death! my lord,
Their cloaths are after ſuch a pagan cut too,
That ſure they've worn out Chriſtendom: how now?
What news, Sir *Thomas Lovell?*

Enter Sir Thomas Lovell.

Lov. 'Faith, my lord,
I hear of none, but the new proclamation
That's clap'd upon the court gate.
Cham. What is't for?
Lov. The reformation of our travell'd gallants,
That fill the court with quarrels, talk and tailors.
Cham. I'm glad 'tis there; now I would pray our Monſieurs
To think an *Engliſh* courtier may be wiſe,

And never ſee the *Louvre*.
Lov. They muſt either
(For ſo run the conditions) leave thoſe remnants
Of fool and feather, that they got in *France*;
With all their honourable points of ignorance
Pertaining thereunto, as fights and fire-works;
Abuſing better men than they can be
Out of a foreign wiſdom, clean renouncing
The faith they have in tennis, and tall ſtockings,
Short bolſter'd breeches, and thoſe types of travel,
And underſtand again like honeſt men----
Or pack to their old play-fellows; there, I take it,
They may, *cum privilegio*, wear away
The lag-end of their lewdneſs, and be laugh'd at.
Sands. 'Tis time to give them phyſick, their diſeaſes
Are grown ſo catching.
Cham. What a loſs our ladies
Will have of theſe trim vanities?
Lov. Ay marry,
There will be woe indeed, lords; the ſly whoreſons
Have got a ſpeeding trick to lay down ladies:
A *French* ſong and a fiddle has no fellow.
Sands. The devil fiddle 'em; I'm glad they're going,
For ſure there's no converting 'em: now Sirs,
An honeſt country lord, as I am, beaten
A long time out of play, may bring his plain ſong,
And have an hour of hearing, and by'r lady
Held currant muſick too.
Cham. Well ſaid, lord *Sands*,
Your colt's tooth is not caſt yet?
Sands. No, my lord,
Nor ſhall not, while I have a ſtump.
Cham. Sir *Thomas*,

Whither are you a-going?
Lov. To the Cardinal's;
Your lordſhip is a gueſt too.
Cham. O, 'tis true;
This night he makes a ſupper, and a great one,
To many lords and ladies; there will be
The beauty of this kingdom, I'll aſſure you.
Lov. That churchman bears a bounteous mind indeed;
A hand as fruitful as the land that feeds us,
His dew falls ev'ry where.
Cham. No doubt, he's noble;
He had a black mouth that ſaid other of him.
Sands. He may, my lord, h'as wherewithal in him;
Sparing would ſhew a worſe ſin than ill doctrine.
Men of his way ſhould be moſt liberal,
They're ſet here for examples.
Cham. True, they are ſo;
But few now give ſo great ones: my barge ſtays;
Your lordſhip ſhall along: come, good Sir *Thomas*,
We ſhall be late elſe, which I would not be,
For I was ſpoke to, with Sir *Henry Guilford*,
This night to be comptrollers.
Sands. I'm your lordſhip's. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

Hautboys. A ſmall table under a ſtate for the Cardinal, a longer table for the gueſts. Then enter Anne Bullen, *and divers other ladies and gentlemen, as gueſts, at one door; at another door, enter Sir* Henry Guilford.

Guil. Ladies, a gen'ral welcome from his grace
Salutes ye all: this night he dedicates
To fair content and you: none here he hopes,

In

In all this noble bevy, has brought with her
One care abroad: he would have all as merry,
As, firſt, good company, good wine, good welcome,
Can make good people.

Enter Lord Chamberlain, Lord Sands *and* Lovell.

O my lord, y'are tardy;
The very thought of this fair company
Clap'd wings to me.
Cham. You're young, Sir *Harry Guilford.*
Sands. Sir *Thomas Lovell,* had the Cardinal
But half my lay-thoughts in him, ſome of theſe
Should find a running banquet ere they reſted;
I think would better pleaſe 'em: by my life,
They are a ſweet ſociety of fair ones.
Lov. O that your lordſhip were but now confeſſor
To one or two of theſe.
Sands. I would I were,
They ſhould find eaſie penance.
Love. 'Faith, how eaſie?
Sands. As eaſie as a down bed would afford it.
Cham. Sweet ladies, will it pleaſe you ſit: Sir *Harry,*
Place you that ſide, I'll take the charge of this:
His Grace is entring; nay you muſt not freeze:
Two women plac'd together make cold weather:
My lord *Sands,* you are one will keep 'em waking;
Pray ſit between theſe ladies.
Sands. By my faith,
And thank your lordſhip. By your leave, ſweet ladies;
If I chance to talk a little wild, forgive me:
I had it from my father.
Anne. Was he mad, Sir?
Sands. O very mad, exceeding mad, in love too;

But he would bite none; juſt as I do now,
He'd kiſs you twenty with a breath.
Cham. Well ſaid, my lord:
So now y'are fairly ſeated: gentlemen,
The penance lyes on you, if theſe fair ladies
Paſs away frowning.
Sands. For my little cue,
Let me alone.

Hautboys. Enter Cardinal Wolſey, *and takes his ſtate.*

Wol. Y'are welcome, my fair gueſts; that noble lady
Or gentleman that is not freely merry
Is not my friend. This to confirm my welcome,
And to you all good health.
Sands. Your Grace is noble:
Let me have ſuch a bowl may hold my thanks,
And ſave me ſo much talking.
Wol. My lord *Sands*,
I am beholden to you; cheer your neighbour:
Ladies, you are not merry; gentlemen,
Whoſe fault is this?
Sands. The red wine firſt muſt riſe
In their fair cheeks, my lord, then we ſhall have 'em
Talk us to ſilence.
Anne. You're a merry gameſter,
My lord *Sands.*
Sands. Yes, if I make my play:
Here's to your ladyſhip, and pledge it, madam:
For 'tis to ſuch a thing----
Anne. You cannot ſhew me.
Sands. I told your Grace that they would talk anon.
[*Drum and trumpets, chambers diſcharged.*
Wol. What's that?

Cham.

Cham. Look out there, ſome of ye.
Wol. What warlike voice,
And to what end is this? nay, ladies, fear not;
By all the laws of war y'are privileged.

Enter a Servant.

Cham. How now, what is't?
Ser. A noble troop of ſtrangers,
For ſo they ſeem, have left their barge, and landed,
And hither make, as great ambaſſadors
From foreign Princes.
Wol. Good Lord Chamberlain,
Go, give 'em welcome; you can ſpeak the *French* tongue,
And pray receive 'em nobly, and conduct 'em
Into our preſence, where this heav'n of beauty
Shall ſhine at full upon them. Some attend him.
[*All ariſe, and tables removed.*
You've now a broken banquet, but we'll mend it.
A good digeſtion to you all; and once more
I ſhowre a welcome on ye: welcome all.

Hautboys. Enter King and others as maskers, habited like Shepherds, uſher'd by the Lord Chamberlain. They paſs directly before the Cardinal, and gracefully ſalute him.

A noble company! what are their pleaſures?
Cham. Becauſe they ſpeak no *Engliſh*, thus they pray'd
To tell your Grace, that having heard by fame
Of this ſo noble and ſo fair aſſembly,
This night to meet here, they could do no leſs,
Out of the great reſpect they bear to beauty,
But leave their flocks, and under your fair conduct
Crave leave to view theſe ladies, and entreat

An

An hour of revels with 'em.

Wol. Say, Lord Chamberlain,
They've done my poor houſe grace: for which I pay 'em
A thouſand thanks, and pray 'em take their pleaſures.

[*Chuſe ladies, King and* Anne Bullen.

King. The faireſt hand I ever touch'd! O beauty,
'Till now I never knew thee. [*Muſick. Dance.*

Wol. My lord.

Cham. Your Grace?

Wol. Pray tell 'em thus much from me:
There ſhould be one amongſt 'em by his perſon
More worthy this place than my ſelf, to whom,
If I but knew him, with my love and duty
I would ſurrender it. [*Whiſper.*

Cham. I will, my lord.

Wol. What ſay they?

Cham. Such a one, they all confeſs,
There is indeed, which they would have your Grace
Find out, and he will take it.

Wol. Let me ſee then:
By all your good leaves, gentlemen, here I'll make
My royal choice.

King. You've found him, Cardinal:
You hold a fair aſſembly: you do well, lord.
You are a church-man, or I'll tell you, Cardinal,
I ſhould judge you unhappily.

Wol. I'm glad
Your Grace is grown ſo pleaſant.

King. My Lord Chamberlain,
Pr'ythee come hither, what fair lady's that?

Cham. An't pleaſe your Grace, Sir *Thomas Bullen*'s daughter,
(The Viſcount *Rochford*,) one of her Highneſs' women.

King.

King. By heaven ſhe's a dainty one: ſweet heart,
I were unmannerly to take you out, [*To* Anne Bullen.
And not to kiſs you. A health, gentlemen,
Let it go round.

Wol. Sir *Thomas Lovell*, is the banquet ready
I' th' privy chamber?

Lov. Yes, my lord.

Wol. Your Grace,
I fear, with dancing is a little heated.

King. I fear too much.

Wol. There's freſher air, my lord,
In the next chamber.

King. Lead in your ladies every one: ſweet partner,
I muſt not yet forſake you; let's be merry,
Good my lord Cardinal: I have a dozen healths
To drink to theſe fair ladies, and a meaſure
To lead 'em once again, and then let's dream
Who's beſt in favour. Let the muſick knock it.

[*Exeunt with Trumpets.*

ACT II. SCENE I.

Enter two Gentlemen at ſeveral Doors.

1 GENTLEMAN.

WHITHER away ſo faſt?

2 *Gen.* O Sir, God ſave ye:
Ev'n to the hall, to hear what ſhall become
Of the great Duke of *Buckingham.*

1 *Gen.* I'll ſave you
That labour, Sir. All's now done, but the ceremony

Of bringing back the pris'ner.

2 *Gen.* Were you there?

1 *Gen.* Yes indeed was I.

2 *Gen.* Pray ſpeak what has happen'd?

1 *Gen.* You may gueſs quickly what.

2 *Gen.* Is he found guilty?

1 *Gen.* Yes, truly is he, and condemn'd upon't.

2 *Gen.* I'm ſorry for't.

1 *Gen.* So are a number more.

2 *Gen.* But pray how paſt it?

1 *Gen.* I'll tell you in a little. The great Duke
Came to the Bar; where, to his Accuſations
He pleaded ſtill not guilty, and alledg'd
Many ſharp reaſons to defeat the law.
The King's Attorney, on the contrary,
Urg'd on examinations, proofs, confeſſions
Of divers witneſſes, which the Duke deſir'd
To have brought *viva voce* to his Face;
At which appear'd againſt him, his ſurveyor,
Sir *Gilbert Pecke* his chancellor, and *John Car*
Confeſſor to him, with that devil monk
Hopkins, that made this miſchief.

2 *Gen.* That was he
That fed him with his prophecies.

1 *Gen.* The ſame.
All theſe accus'd him ſtrongly, which he fain
Would have flung from him; but indeed he could not
And ſo his Peers upon this evidence
Have found him guilty of high treaſon. Much
He ſpoke, and learnedly for life; but all
Was either pitied in him, or forgotten.

2 *Gen.* After all this, how did he bear himſelf?

1 *Gen.* When he was brought again to th' bar, to hear

His knell rung out, his judgment, he was ſtirr'd
With ſuch an agony, he ſweat extreamly,
And ſomething ſpoke in choler, ill and haſty;
But he fell to himſelf again, and ſweetly
In all the reſt ſhew'd a moſt noble patience.
2 *Gen.* I do not think he fears death.
1 *Gen.* Sure he does not,
He never was ſo womaniſh; the cauſe
He may a little grieve at.
2 *Gen.* Certainly,
The Cardinal is the end of this.
1 *Gen.* 'Tis likely,
By all conjectures: firſt *Kildare*'s attainder,
Then deputy of *Ireland*; who remov'd,
Earl *Surrey* was ſent thither, and in haſte too,
Leſt he ſhould help his father.
2 *Gen.* That trick of ſtate
Was a deep envious one.
1 *Gen.* At his return,
No doubt he will requite it; this is noted,
And gen'rally, who ever the King favours,
The Cardinal inſtantly will find employment for,
And far enough from court too.
2 *Gen.* All the commons
Hate him perniciouſly, and o' my conſcience
Wiſh him ten fathom deep: this Duke as much
They love and doat on, call him bounteous *Buckingham*,
The Mirror of all courteſie.

SCENE II.

Enter Buckingham *from his Arraignment. Tipſtaves before him, the Axe with the edge towards him, Halberds on each ſide, accompanied with Sir* Thomas Lovel, *Sir* Nicholas Vaux, Walter Sands, *and common People*, &c.

1 *Gen.* Stay there, Sir,
And ſee the noble ruin'd Man you ſpeak of.
2 *Gen.* Let's ſtand cloſe and behold him.
Buck. All good People,
You that thus far have come to pity me,
Hear what I ſay, and then go home and loſe me.
I have this day receiv'd a traitor's judgment,
And by that name muſt die; yet heav'n bear witneſs,
And if I have a conſcience, let it ſink me
Even as the axe falls, if I be not faithful.
To th' law I bear no malice for my death,
'T has done, upon the Premiſes, but Juſtice:
But thoſe that ſought it, I could wiſh more chriſtians;
Be what they will, I heartily forgive 'em;
Yet let 'em look they glory not in miſchief,
Nor build their evils on the graves of great men;
For then, my guiltleſs blood muſt cry againſt 'em.
For further life in this world I ne'er hope,
Nor will I ſue, although the King have mercies
More than I dare make faults. You few that lov'd me,
And dare be bold to weep for *Buckingham*,
His noble friends and fellows, whom to leave
Is only bitter to him, only dying;
Go with me like good Angels to my end,
And as the long divorce of ſteel falls on me,
Make of your prayers one ſweet ſacrifice,

And

And lift my ſoul to heav'n. Lead on a God's name.
Lov. I do beſeech your Grace for charity,
If ever any malice in your heart
Were hid againſt me, now forgive me frankly.
Buck. Sir *Thomas Lovell*, I as free forgive you
As I would be forgiven: I forgive all.
There cannot be thoſe numberleſs offences
'Gainſt me, I can't take peace with: no black envy
Shall make my grave.---Commend me to his Grace:
And if he ſpeak of *Buckingham*, pray tell him,
You met him half in heav'n: my vows and pray'rs
Yet are the King's; and 'till my ſoul forſake me,
Shall cry for bleſſings on him. May he live
Longer than I have time to tell his years;
Ever belov'd and loving may his rule be;
And when old time ſhall lead him to his end,
Goodneſs and he fill up one monument.
Lov. To th' water-ſide I muſt conduct your Grace,
Then give my charge up to Sir *Nicholas Vaux*,
Who undertakes you to your end.
Vaux. Prepare there,
The Duke is coming: ſee the barge be ready,
And fit it with ſuch furniture as ſuits
The greatneſs of his perſon.
Buck. Nay, Sir *Nicholas*,
Let it alone; my ſtate now will but mock me.
When I came hither, I was Lord high conſtable,
And Duke of *Buckingham*; now, poor *Edward Bohun*.
Yet I am richer than my baſe accuſers,
That never knew what truth meant; I now ſeal it;
And with that blood will make 'em one day groan for't.
My noble father, *Henry* of *Buckingham*,

Who

Who firſt rais'd head againſt uſurping *Richard*,
Flying for ſuccour to his ſervant *Baniſter*,
Being diſtreſs'd, was by that wretch betray'd,
And without tryal fell; God's peace be with him!
Henry the Sev'nth ſucceeding, truly pitying
My father's loſs, like a moſt royal Prince
Reſtor'd to me my honours; and from ruins,
Made my name once more noble. Now his ſon,
Henry the Eighth, [a] name, honour, life, and all
That made me happy, at one ſtroak has taken
For ever from the world. I had my tryal,
And muſt needs ſay, a noble one; which makes me
A little happier than my wretched father:
Yet thus far we are one in fortune, both
Fell by our ſervants, by thoſe men we lov'd.
A moſt unnatural and faithleſs ſervice!
Heav'n has an end in all: yet, you that hear me,
This from a dying man receive as certain:
Where you are lib'ral of your loves and counſels,
Be ſure you be not looſe; thoſe you make friends,
And give your hearts to, when they once perceive
The leaſt rub in your fortunes, fall away
Like water from ye, never found again,
But where they mean to ſink ye. All good people
Pray for me! I muſt leave ye; the laſt hour
Of my long weary life is come upon me:
Farewel; and when you would ſay ſomething ſad,
Speak how I fell---- I've done; and God forgive me.

[*Exeunt* Buckingham *and Train.*

1 *Gen.* O, this is full of pity; Sir, it calls,
I fear, too many curſes on their heads,
That were the authors.

2 *Gen.* If the Duke be guiltleſs,

'Tis

[a] *life, honour, name, and all*

'Tis full of woe; yet I can give you inkling
Of an enſuing evil, if it fall,
Greater than this.
1 *Gen.* Good angels keep it from us:
What may it be? you do not doubt my faith, Sir?
2 *Gen.* This ſecret is ſo weighty, 'twill require
A ſtrong faith to conceal it.
1 *Gen.* Let me have it;
I do not talk much.
2 *Gen.* I am confident;
You ſhall, Sir; did you not of late days hear
A buzzing, of a ſeparation,
Between the King and *Kath'rine*?
1 *Gen.* Yes, but it held not;
For when the King once heard it, out of anger
He ſent command to the Lord Mayor ſtrait
To ſtop the rumour, and allay thoſe tongues
That durſt diſperſe it.
2 *Gen.* But that ſlander, Sir,
Is found a truth now; for it grows again
Freſher than e'er it was, and held for certain
The King will venture at it. Either the Cardinal,
Or ſome about him near, have (out of malice
To the good Queen) poſſeſt him with a ſcruple
That will undo her: to confirm this too,
Cardinal *Campeius* is arriv'd, and lately,
As all think for this buſineſs.
1 *Gen.* 'Tis the Cardinal;
And meerly to revenge him on the Emperor,
For not beſtowing on him, at his asking,
The Arch-biſhoprick of *Toledo*, this is purpos'd.
2 *Gen.* I think you've hit the mark; but is't not cruel,
That ſhe ſhould feel the ſmart of this? the Cardinal

Will

Will have his will, and ſhe muſt fall.

1 *Gen.* 'Tis woful.

We are too open here to argue this:
Let's think in private more. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE III.

Enter Lord Chamberlain, reading a letter.

MY lord, the horſes your lordſhip ſent for, with all the care I had I ſaw well choſen, ridden, and furniſh'd. They were young and handſome, and of the beſt breed in the North. When they were ready to ſet out for London, *a man of my lord Cardinal's, by commiſſion and main power took 'em from me, with this reaſon; his maſter would be ſerv'd before a ſubject, if not before the King, which ſtopp'd our mouths, Sir.*

I fear he will indeed; well, let him have them; he will have all, I think.

Enter to the Lord Chamberlain the Dukes of Norfolk *and* Suffolk.

Nor. Well met, my Lord Chamberlain.

Cham. Good day to both your Graces.

Suf. How is the King employ'd?

Cham. I left him private,
Full of ſad thoughts and troubles.

Nor. What's the cauſe?

Cham. It ſeems the marriage with his brother's wife
Has crept too near his conſcience.

Suf. No, his conſcience
Has crept too near another lady.

Nor. 'Tis ſo;
This is the Cardinal's doing; the King-Cardinal:
That blind prieſt, like the eldeſt ſon of fortune,

Turns what he liſt. The King will know him one day.
Suf. Pray God he do; he'll never know himſelf elſe.
Nor. How holily he works in all his buſineſs,
And with what zeal? for now he has crackt the league
'Tween us and th' Emperor, the Queen's great nephew:
He dives into the King's ſoul, and there ſcatters
Doubts, dangers, wringing of the conſcience,
Fears, and deſpair, and all theſe for his marriage;
And out of all theſe to reſtore the King,
He counſels a divorce, a loſs of her
That like a jewel has hung twenty years
About his neck, yet never loſt her luſtre;
Of her that loves him with that excellence,
That angels love good men with; even of her,
That, when the greateſt ſtroke of fortune falls,
Will bleſs the King; and is not this courſe pious?
Cham. Heav'n keep me from ſuch counſel! 'tis moſt true,
Theſe news are ev'ry where, ev'ry tongue ſpeaks 'em,
And ev'ry true heart weeps for't. All that dare
Look into theſe affairs, ſee his main end,
The *French* King's ſiſter. Heav'n will one day open
The King's eyes, that ſo long have ſlept upon
This bold, bad man.
Suf. And free us from his ſlavery.
Nor. We had need pray, and heartily, for deliv'rance;
Or this imperious man will work us all
From Princes into pages; all mens honours
Lye like one lump before him, to be faſhion'd
Into what pitch he pleaſe.
Suf. For me, my lords,
I love him not, nor fear him, there's my creed:
As I am made without him, ſo I'll ſtand,

If the King pleaſe: his curſes and his bleſſings
Touch me alike; they're breath I not believe in.
I knew him, and I know him; ſo I leave him
To him, that made him proud, the Pope.

Nor. Let's in;
And with ſome other buſineſs, put the King
From theſe ſad thoughts that work too much upon him;
My lord, you'll bear us company?

Cham. Excuſe me,
The King hath ſent me other-where: beſides
You'll find a moſt unfit time to diſturb him:
Health to your lordſhips. [*Exit Lord Chamberlain.*

Nor. Thanks, my good Lord Chamberlain.

The Scene draws, and diſcovers the King ſitting and reading penſively.

Suf. How ſad he looks! ſure he is much afflicted.

King. Who's there? ha?

Nor. Pray God he be not angry.

King. Who's there, I ſay? how dare you thruſt your ſelves
Into my private meditations?
Who am I? ha?

Nor. A gracious King, that pardons all offences
Malice ne'er meant: our breach of duty this way,
Is buſineſs of eſtate; in which we come
To know your royal pleaſure.

King. Ye are too bold:
Go to; I'll make ye know your times of buſineſs:
Is this an hour for temporal affairs? ha?

Enter Wolſey, *and* Campeius *the Pope's Legat, with a Commiſſion.*

Who's there? my good Lord Cardinal? O my *Wolſey*,

The

The quiet of my wounded conſcience;
Thou art a cure fit for the King. You're welcome,
Moſt learned rev'rend Sir, into our kingdom,
Uſe us, and it; my good lord, have great care
I be not found a talker.

Wol. Sir, you cannot:
I would your Grace would give us but an hour
Of private conf'rence.

King. We are buſie; go.

Nor. This prieſt has no pride in him?

Suf. Not to ſpeak of:
I would not be ſo ſick though, for his place:
But this cannot continue.

Nor. If it do,
I'll venture one heave at him.

Suf. I another. [*Exeunt* Norfolk *and* Suffolk.

Wol. Your Grace has giv'n a precedent of wiſdom
Above all Princes, in committing freely
Your ſcruple to the voice of Chriſtendom:
Who can be angry now? what envy reach you?
The *Spaniard*, ty'd by blood and favour to her,
Muſt now confeſs, if they have any goodneſs,
The tryal juſt and noble. All the clerks,
I mean the learned ones in chriſtian kingdoms,
Have their free voices. *Rome*, the nurſe of judgment,
Invited by your noble ſelf, hath ſent
One gen'ral tongue unto us, this good man,
This juſt and learned prieſt, Cardinal *Campeius*,
Whom once more I preſent unto your Highneſs.

King. And once more in mine arms I bid him welcome,
And thank the holy conclave for their loves,
They've ſent me ſuch a man I would have wiſh'd for.

Cam. Your Grace muſt needs deſerve all ſtrangers loves,

You are ſo noble: to your Highneſs' hand
I tender my commiſſion; by whoſe virtue,
(The court of *Rome* commanding) you, my lord
Cardinal of *York* are join'd with me, their ſervant,
In the impartial judging of this buſineſs.

King. Two equal men: the Queen ſhall be acquainted
Forthwith for what you come. Where's *Gardiner?*

Wol. I know your Majeſty has always lov'd her
So dear in heart, not to deny her what
A woman of leſs place might ask by law,
Scholars allow'd freely to argue for her.

King. Ay and the beſt, ſhe ſhall have; and my favour
To him that does beſt, God forbid elſe. Cardinal,
Pr'ythee call *Gardiner* to me, my new Secretary,
I find him a fit fellow.

Enter Gardiner.

Wol. Give me your hand; much joy and favour to you;
You are the King's now.

Gard. But to be commanded
For ever by your Grace, whoſe hand has rais'd me.

King. Come hither, *Gardiner.* [*Walks and whiſpers.*

Cam. My lord of *York*, was not one doctor *Pace*
In this man's place before him?

Wol. Yes, he was.

Cam. Was he not held a learned man?

Wol. Yes, ſurely.

Cam. Believe me, there's an ill opinion ſpread then
Ev'n of your ſelf, lord Cardinal.

Wol. How? of me?

Cam. They will not ſtick to ſay you envy'd him;
And fearing he would riſe, he was ſo virtuous,
Kept him a foreign man ſtill; which ſo griev'd him

That

That he ran mad and dy'd.

Wol. Heav'n's peace be with him!
That's chriſtian care enough: for living murmurers,
There's places of rebuke. He was a fool,
For he would needs be virtuous. That good fellow,
If I command him, follows my appointment;
I will have none ſo near elſe. Learn this, brother,
We live not to be grip'd by meaner perſons.

King. Deliver this with modeſty to th' Queen. [*Exit* Gardiner.
The moſt convenient place that I can think of,
For ſuch receit of learning, is *Black-Fryars:*
There ye ſhall meet about this weighty buſineſs.
My *Wolſey*, ſee it furniſh'd. O my lord,
Would it not grieve an able man to leave
So ſweet a bedfellow? but conſcience, conſcience-----
O 'tis a tender place, and I muſt leave her. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE V.

Enter Anne Bullen, *and an old Lady.*

Anne. NOT for that neither ---- here's the pang that pinches.
His Highneſs liv'd ſo long with her, and ſhe
So good a lady, that no tongue could ever
Pronounce diſhonour of her; by my life,
She never knew harm-doing: oh, now after
So many courſes of the ſun enthron'd,
Still growing in a majeſty and pomp,
The which to leave, a thouſand-fold more bitter
Than ſweet at firſt t'acquire. After this proceſs,
To give her the avaunt! it is a pity
Would move a monſter.

Old L. Hearts of moſt hard temper
Melt and lament for her.

Anne.

Anne. In God's will, better
She ne'er had known pomp; though't be temporal,
Yet if that quarrel, fortune, do divorce
It from the bearer, 'tis a ſuff'rance panging
As ſoul and body's ſev'ring.
Old L. Ah poor lady,
She's ſtranger now again.
Anne. So much the more
Muſt pity drop upon her; verily
I ſwear 'tis better to be lowly born,
And range with humble livers in content,
Than to be perk'd up in a gliſt'ring grief,
And wear a golden ſorrow.
Old L. Our content
Is our beſt having.
Anne. By my troth and maidenhead,
I would not be a Queen.
Old L. Beſhrew me I would,
And venture maidenhead for't; and ſo would you,
For all this ſpice of your hypocriſie;
You that have ſo fair parts of woman on you,
Have too a woman's heart, which ever yet
Affected eminence, wealth, ſovereignty;
Which, to ſay ſooth, are bleſſings; and which gifts
(Saving your mincing) the capacity
Of your ſoft † chiverel conſcience would receive,
If you might pleaſe to ſtretch it.
Anne. Nay, good troth-----
Old L. Yes, troth and troth; you would not be a Queen?
Anne. No, not for all the riches under heav'n.
Old L. 'Tis ſtrange; a three-pence bow'd would hire me,
Old as I am, to queen it; but I pray you,
What think you of a Dutcheſs? have you limbs

To

† i. e. *Tender, from* Cheverillus, *a* young Cock, *a* Chick.

To bear that load of title?

Anne. No, in truth.

Old L. Then you are weakly made: pluck off a little:
I would not be a young Count in your way,
For more than bluſhing comes to: if your back
Cannot vouchſafe this burthen, 'tis too weak
Ever to get a boy.

Anne. How do you talk!
I ſwear again, I would not be a Queen
For all the world.

Old L. In faith for little *England*
You'll venture an emballing: I my ſelf
Would for *Carnarvanſhire*, though there belong'd
No more to th' crown but that. Lo, who comes here?

Enter Lord Chamberlain.

Cham. Good-morrow, ladies; what were't worth to know
The ſecret of your conf'rence?

Anne. My good lord,
Not your demand; it values not your asking:
Our miſtreſs' ſorrows we were pitying.

Cham. It was a gentle buſineſs, and becoming
The action of good women: there is hope
All will be well.

Anne. Now I pray God, amen.

Cham. You bear a gentle mind, and heav'nly bleſſings
Follow ſuch creatures. That you may, fair lady,
Perceive I ſpeak ſincerely, and high notes
Ta'en of your many virtues; the King's Majeſty
Commends his good opinion to you, and
Does purpoſe honour to you no leſs flowing
Than Marchioneſs of *Pembrook*; to which title
A thouſand pound a year, annual ſupport,

Out

Out of his grace he adds.

Anne. I do not know
What kind of my obedience I ſhould tender;
More than my all, is nothing: for my prayers
Are not words duly hallow'd, nor my wiſhes
More worth than vanities; yet pray'rs and wiſhes
Are all I can return. 'Beſeech your lordſhip,
Vouchſafe to ſpeak my thanks and my obedience,
As from a bluſhing handmaid to his Highneſs;
Whoſe health and royalty I pray for.

Cham. Lady,
I ſhall not fail t'approve the fair conceit
The King hath of you. ---- I've perus'd her well,
Beauty and honour in her are ſo mingled [*Aſide.*
That they have caught the King; and who knows yet,
But from this lady may proceed a gem
To lighten all this Iſle? I'll to the King,
And ſay I ſpoke with you. [*Exit Chamberlain.*

Anne. My honour'd lord.

Old L. Why this it is: ſee, ſee,
I have been begging ſixteen years in court
(Am yet a courtier beggarly) nor could
Come pat betwixt *too early* and *too late*,
For any ſuit of pounds: And you, oh fate!
(A very freſh fiſh here; fie, fie upon
This compell'd fortune) have your mouth fill'd up
Before you open it.

Anne. This is ſtrange to me.

Old L. How taſtes it? is it bitter? forty pence, no:
There was a lady once ('tis an old ſtory)
That would not be a Queen, that would ſhe not,
For all the mud in *Egypt*; have you heard it?

Anne. Come, you are pleaſant.

Old L. With your theme, I could
O'er-mount the lark. The marchioneſs of *Pembrook!*
A thouſand pounds a year, for pure reſpect!
No other obligation? By my life
That promiſes more thouſands: honour's train
Is longer than his fore-skirt. By this time
I know your back will bear a Dutcheſs. Say,
Are you not ſtronger than you were?

Anne. Good lady,
Make your ſelf mirth with your particular fancy,
And leave me out on't. Would I had no being,
If this ſalute my blood a jot; it faints me
To think what follows.
The Queen is comfortleſs, and we forgetful
In our long abſence; pray do not deliver
What here y'ave heard, to her.

Old L. What do you think me?---- [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI.

Trumpets, Sonnet, and Cornets. Enter two Vergers, with ſhort ſilver wands; next them two Scribes in the habits of Doctors: after them, the Biſhop of Canterbury *alone; after him, the Biſhops of* Lincoln, Ely, Rocheſter, *and St.* Aſaph; *next them, with ſome ſmall diſtance, follows a gentleman bearing the purſe, with the great ſeal, and the Cardinal's hat; then two Prieſts, bearing each a ſilver croſs; then a gentleman-uſher bare headed, accompanied with a ſerjeant at arms, bearing a mace; then two gentlemen, bearing two ſilver pillars; after them, ſide by ſide, the two Cardinals, two noblemen with the ſword and mace. The King takes place under the cloth of ſtate; the two Cardinals ſit under*

under him as judges. The Queen takes place ſome diſtance from the King. The biſhops place themſelves on each ſide the court in manner of a conſiſtory: below them, the ſcribes. The lords ſit next the biſhops. The reſt of the attendants ſtand in convenient order about the ſtage.

Wol. WHILST our commiſſion from *Rome* is read,
Let ſilence be commanded.

King. What's the need?
It hath already publickly been read,
And on all ſides th' authority allow'd,
You may then ſpare that time.

Wol. Be't ſo, proceed.

Scribe. Say, *Henry* King of *England*, come into the court.

Cryer. *Henry* King of *England*, &c.

King. Here.

Scribe. Say, *Katherine* Queen of *England*,
Come into the court.

Cryer. *Katherine*, Queen of *England*, &c.

[*The Queen makes no anſwer, riſes out of her chair, goes about the court, comes to the King, and kneels at his feet; then ſpeaks;*]
Sir, I deſire you do me right and juſtice,
And to beſtow your pity on me; for
I am a moſt poor woman, and a ſtranger,
Born out of your dominions; having here
No judge indiff'rent, and no more aſſurance
Of equal friendſhip and proceeding. Alas, Sir,
In what have I offended you? what cauſe
Hath my behaviour giv'n to your diſpleaſure,
That thus you ſhould proceed to put me off,
And take your good grace from me? Heaven witneſs,
I've been to you a true and humble wife,
At all times to your will conformable:

Ever

Ever in fear to kindle your diſlike,
Yea, ſubject to your count'nance; glad or ſorry,
As I ſaw it inclin'd: when was the hour
I ever contradicted your deſire?
Or made it not mine too? which of your friends
Have I not ſtrove to love, although I knew
He were mine enemy? what friend of mine,
That had to him deriv'd your anger, did I
Continue in my liking? nay, gave notice
He was from thence diſcharg'd? Sir, call to mind,
That I have been your wife, in this obedience,
Upward of twenty years, and have been bleſt
With many children by you. If in the courſe
And proceſs of this time you can report,
And prove it too, againſt mine honour ought,
My bond of wedlock, or my love and duty
Againſt your ſacred perſon; in God's name
Turn me away; and let the foul'ſt contempt
Shut door upon me, and ſo give me up
To the ſharp'ſt kind of juſtice. Pleaſe you, Sir,
The King your father was reputed for
A Prince moſt prudent, of an excellent
And unmatch'd wit and judgment. *Ferdinand*
My father, King of *Spain*, was reckon'd one
The wiſeſt Prince that there had reign'd, by many
A year before. It is not to be queſtion'd,
That they had gather'd a wiſe council to them
Of ev'ry realm, that did debate this buſineſs,
Who deem'd our marriage lawful. Wherefore humbly,
Sir, I beſeech you, ſpare me, 'till I may
Be by my friends in *Spain* advis'd; whoſe counſel
I will implore. If not, i' th' name of God
Your pleaſure be fulfill'd.

Wol. You have here, lady,
(And of your choice) theſe rev'rend fathers, men
Of ſingular integrity and learning:
Yea, the elect o' th' land, who are aſſembled
To plead your cauſe. It ſhall be therefore bootleſs
That longer you defer the court, as well
For your own quiet, as to rectifie
What is unſettled in the King.

Cam. His Grace
Hath ſpoken well and juſtly; therefore, madam,
It's fit this royal ſeſſion do proceed,
And that without delay their arguments
Be now produc'd, and heard.

Queen. Lord Cardinal,
To you I ſpeak.

Wol. Your pleaſure, madam.

Queen. Sir,
I am about to weep; but thinking that
We are a Queen, or long have dream'd ſo, certain
The daughter of a King, my drops of tears
I'll turn to ſparks of fire.

Wol. Be patient yet-----

Queen. I will, when you are humble; nay before,
Or God will puniſh me. I do believe,
Induc'd by potent circumſtances, that
You are mine enemy, and make my challenge.
You ſhall not be my judge. For it is you
Have blown this coal betwixt my lord and me,
Which God's dew quench! therefore I ſay again,
I utterly abhor, yea from my ſoul
Refuſe you for my judge, whom yet once more
I hold my moſt malicious foe, and think not
At all a friend to truth.

Wol.

Wol. I do profeſs
You ſpeak not like your ſelf, who ever yet
Have ſtood to charity, and diſplay'd th' effects
Of diſpoſition gentle, and of wiſdom
O'er-topping woman's power. Madam, you wrong me.
I have no ſpleen againſt you, nor injuſtice
For you, or any; how far I've proceeded,
Or how far further ſhall, is warranted
By a commiſſion from the conſiſtory,
Yea, the whole conſiſt'ry of *Rome*. You charge me,
That I have blown this coal; I do deny it.
The King is preſent; if't be known to him
That I gainſay my deed, how may he wound,
And worthily, my falſhood? yea, as much
As you have done my truth. But if he know
That I am free of your report, he knows
I am not of your wrong. Therefore in him
It lyes to cure me, and the cure is to
Remove theſe thoughts from you. The which before
His Highneſs ſhall ſpeak in, I do beſeech
You, gracious madam, to unthink your ſpeaking,
And ſay no more.

Queen. My lord, my lord, I am
A ſimple woman, much too weak t' oppoſe
Your cunning. You are meek, and humble-mouth'd;
You ſign your place and calling, in full ſeeming,
With meekneſs and humility; but your heart
Is cramm'd with arrogance, with ſpleen and pride.
You have by fortune and his Highneſs' favours
Gone ſlightly o'er low ſteps, and now are mounted
Where pow'rs are your retainers; and your words,
Domeſticks to you, ſerve your will, as't pleaſe
Your ſelf pronounce their office. I muſt tell you,

You tender more your perſon's honour, than
Your high profeſſion ſpiritual. That again
I do refuſe you for my judge, and here
Before you all, appeal unto the Pope
To bring my whole cauſe 'fore his holineſs,
And to be judg'd by him.

[*She curtſies to the King, and offers to depart.*

Cam. The Queen is obſtinate,
Stubborn to juſtice, apt t'accuſe it, and
Diſdainful to be try'd by't; 'tis not well.
She's going away.

King. Call her again.

Cryer. Katherine, Queen of *England,* come into the court.

Uſher. Madam, you are call'd back.

Queen. What need you note it? pray you keep your way.
When you are call'd, return. Now the lord help,
They vex me paſt my patience ---- pray paſs on;
I will not tarry; no, nor ever more
Upon this buſineſs my appearance make
In any of their courts. [*Exeunt Queen and her Attendants.*

SCENE VII.

King. Go thy ways, *Kate,*
That man i'th' world, who ſhall report he has
A better wife, let him in nought be truſted,
For ſpeaking falſe in that. Thou art alone,
(If thy rare qualities, ſweet gentleneſs,
Thy meekneſs ſaint-like, wife-like government,
Obeying in commanding, and thy parts
Sovereign and pious, could but ſpeak thee out)
The Queen of earthly Queens. She's noble born;
And like her true nobility, ſhe has

Carried her ſelf tow'rds me.

Wol. Moſt gracious Sir,
In humbleſt manner I require your Highneſs
That it ſhall pleaſe you to declare, in hearing
Of all theſe ears (for where I'm robb'd and bound,
There muſt I be unloos'd, although not there
At once, and fully ſatisfy'd) if I
Did broach this buſineſs to your Highneſs, or
Laid any ſcruple in your way, which might
Induce you to the queſtion on't; or ever
Have to you, but with thanks to God for ſuch
A royal lady, ſpake one the leaſt word,
That might be prejudice of her preſent ſtate,
Or touch of her good perſon?

King. My lord Cardinal,
I do excuſe you; yea, upon mine honour,
I free you from't: you are not to be taught,
That you have many enemies, that know not
Why they are ſo, but like the village curs,
Bark when their fellows do. By ſome of theſe
The Queen is put in anger; y'are excus'd:
But will you be more juſtify'd? you ever
Have wiſh'd the ſleeping of this buſineſs, never
Deſir'd it to be ſtirr'd; but oft have hindred
The paſſages made tow'rds it: on my honour
I ſpeak, my good lord Cardinal, to this point;
And thus far clear him. Now, what mov'd me to't.
I will be bold with time and your attention:
Then mark th' inducement. Thus it came; give heed to't.
My conſcience firſt receiv'd a tenderneſs,
Scruple, and prick, on certain ſpeeches utter'd
By th' biſhop of *Bayon*, then *French* ambaſſador,
Who had been hither ſent on the debating

A marriage 'twixt the Duke of *Orleans* and
Our daughter *Mary*: I'th' progreſs of this buſineſs,
Ere a determinate reſolution, he
(I mean the biſhop) did require a reſpite,
Wherein he might the King his lord advertiſe,
Whether our daughter were legitimate;
Reſpecting this our marriage with the Dowager,
Sometime our brother's wife. This reſpite ſhook
The boſom of my conſcience, enter'd me,
Yea with a ſplitting power; and made to tremble
The region of my breaſt, which forc'd ſuch way,
That many maz'd conſiderings did throng
And preſt in with this caution. Firſt, methought
I ſtood not in the ſmile of heav'n, which had
Commanded nature, that my lady's womb
(If it conceiv'd a male-child by me) ſhould
Do no more offices of life to't, than
The grave does to the dead; for her male-iſſue,
Or died where they were made, or ſhortly after
This world had air'd them. Hence I took a thought,
This was a judgment on me, that my kingdom
(Well worthy the beſt heir o'th' world) ſhould not
Be glad in one by me. Then follows, that
I weigh'd the danger which my realms ſtood in
By this my iſſue's fail, and that gave to me
Many a groaning throe: thus hulling in
The wild ſea of my conſcience, I did ſteer
Towards this remedy, whereon we are
Now preſent here together; that's to ſay,
I meant to rectifie my conſcience, (which
I then did feel full ſick, and yet not well)
By all the rev'rend fathers of the land
And doctors learn'd. Firſt, I began in private

With

With you my lord of *Lincoln*; you remember
How under my oppreſſion I did reel,
When I firſt mov'd you.
Lin. Very well, my liege.
King. I have ſpoke long; be pleas'd your ſelf to ſay
How far you ſatisfy'd me.
Lin. Pleaſe your Highneſs,
The queſtion did at firſt ſo ſtagger me,
Bearing a ſtate of mighty moment in't,
And conſequence of dread; that I committed
The daring'ſt counſel which I had to doubt:
And did intreat your Highneſs to this courſe
Which you are running here.
King. I then mov'd you
My lord of *Canterbury*, and got your leave
To make this preſent ſummons unſollicited.
I left no rev'rend perſon in this court,
But by particular conſent proceeded
Under your hands and ſeals. Therefore go on;
For no diſlike i'th' world againſt the perſon
Of our good Queen, but the ſharp thorny points
Of my alledged reaſons drive this forward.
Prove but our marriage lawful, by my life
And kingly dignity, we are contented
To wear our mortal ſtate to come, with her,
(*Katherine* our Queen) before the primeſt creature
That's paragon'd i'th' world.
Cam. So pleaſe your Highneſs,
The Queen being abſent, 'tis a needful fitneſs
That we adjourn this court to further day;
Mean while muſt be an earneſt motion
Made to the Queen, to call back her appeal
She intends to his Holineſs.

King. I may perceive
Theſe Cardinals trifle with me: I abhor
This dilatory ſloth, and tricks of *Rome*.
My learn'd and well-beloved ſervant *Cranmer*,
Pr'ythee return; with thy approach, I know,
My comfort comes along. Break up the court:
I ſay, ſet on. [*Exeunt, in manner as they enter'd.*

ACT III. SCENE I.

Enter Queen and her Women, as at work.

QUEEN.

TAKE thy lute, wench, my ſoul grows ſad with troubles:
Sing, and diſperſe 'em if thou canſt: leave working.

SONG.

ORpheus, *with his lute, made trees,*
And the mountain tops that freeze,
Bow themſelves when he did ſing.
To his muſick, plants and flowers
Ever roſe, as ſun and ſhowers
There had made a laſting ſpring.
Ev'ry thing that heard him play,
Ev'n the billows of the ſea,
Hung their heads, and then lay by.
In ſweet muſick is ſuch art,
Killing care, and grief of heart,
Fall aſleep, or hearing die.

Enter

Enter a Gentleman.

Queen. How now?
Gent. And't pleaſe your Grace, the two great Cardinals
Wait in the preſence.
Queen. Would they ſpeak with me?
Gent. They will'd me ſay ſo, Madam.
Queen. Pray their Graces
To come near; what can be their buſineſs
With me, a poor weak woman, fall'n from favour?
I do not like their coming. Now I think on't,
They ſhould be good men, their affairs are righteous,
But *all hoods make not monks.*

Enter the Cardinals Wolſey *and* Campeius.

Wol. Peace to your Highneſs.
Queen. Your Graces find me here part of a houſe-wife,
(I would be all) againſt the worſt may happen:
What are your pleaſures with me, rev'rend lords?
Wol. May't pleaſe you, noble Madam, to withdraw
Into your private chamber; we ſhall give you
The full cauſe of our coming.
Queen. Speak it here.
There's nothing I have done yet, o' my conſcience,
Deſerves a corner; would all other women
Could ſpeak this with as free a ſoul as I do!
My lords, I care not (ſo much I am happy
Above a number) if my actions
Were try'd by ev'ry tongue, ev'ry eye ſaw 'em,
Envy and baſe opinion ſet againſt 'em;
I know my life ſo even. If your buſineſs
Do ſeek me out, and that way I am wiſe in;
Out with it boldly: truth loves open dealing.

Wol. Tanta eſt erga te mentis integritas, Regina Sereniſſima. ----

Queen. Good my lord, no *Latin*;
I am not ſuch a truant ſince my coming,
As not to know the language I have liv'd in.
A ſtrange tongue makes my cauſe more ſtrange, ſuſpicious:
Pray ſpeak in *Engliſh*; here are ſome will thank you
If you ſpeak truth, for their poor miſtreſs' ſake.
Believe me ſhe has had much wrong. Lord Cardinal,
The willing'ſt ſin I ever yet committed
May be abſolv'd in *Engliſh*.

Wol. Noble lady,
I'm ſorry my integrity ſhould breed
(And ſervice to his Majeſty and you)
So deep ſuſpicion, where all faith was meant.
We come not by the way of accuſation,
To taint that honour every good tongue bleſſes;
Nor to betray you any way to ſorrow;
You have too much, good lady: but to know
How you ſtand minded in the weighty difference
Between the King and you? and to deliver,
Like free and honeſt men, our juſt opinions
And comforts to your cauſe.

Cam. Moſt honour'd madam,
My lord of *York*, out of his noble nature,
Zeal, and obedience he ſtill bore your Grace,
Forgetting like a good man your late cenſure
Both of his truth and him, (which was too far)
Offers, as I do, in a ſign of peace
His ſervice and his counſel. ----

Queen. To betray me.
My lords, I thank you both for your good wills,
Ye ſpeak like honeſt men, pray God ye prove ſo.
But how to make ye ſuddenly an anſwer

In ſuch a point of weight, ſo near mine honour,
(More near my life, I fear) with my weak wit,
And to ſuch men of gravity and learning,
(In truth I know not. I was ſet at work
Among my maids; full little, God knows, looking
Either for ſuch men, or ſuch buſineſs.
For her ſake that I have been, (for I feel
The laſt fit of my greatneſs) good your Graces,
Let me have time and council for my cauſe:
Alas, I am a woman, friendleſs, hopeleſs.

Wol. Madam, you wrong the King's love with thoſe fears,
Your hopes and friends are infinite.

Queen. In *England*,
But little for my profit: can you think, lords,
That any *Engliſh* man dare give me counſel?
Or be a known friend 'gainſt his Highneſs' pleaſure,
Though he be grown ſo deſp'rate to be honeſt,
And live a ſubject? nay forſooth, my friends
They, that muſt weigh out my afflictions,
They, that my truſt muſt grow to, live not here;
They are, as all my comforts are, far hence
In mine own country, lords.

Cam. I would your Grace
Would leave your griefs, and take my counſel.

Queen. How, Sir?

Cam. Put your main cauſe into the King's protection,
He's loving and moſt gracious. 'Twill be much
Both for your honour better, and your cauſe:
For if the tryal of the law o'er-take ye,
You'll part away diſgrac'd.

Wol. He tells you rightly.

Queen. Ye tell me what ye wiſh for both, my ruin:
Is this your chriſtian counſel? out upon ye.

Heav'n

Heav'n is above all yet; there ſits a Judge,
That no King can corrupt.

Cam. Your rage miſtakes us.

Queen. The more ſhame for ye; holy men I thought ye,
Upon my ſoul, two rev'rend Cardinal virtues;
But Cardinal ſins, and hollow hearts, I fear ye:
Mend 'em for ſhame, my lords: is this your comfort?
The cordial that ye bring a wretched lady?
A woman loſt among ye, laugh'd at, ſcorn'd?
I will not wiſh ye half my miſeries,
I have more charity. But ſay I warn'd ye;
Take heed, take heed for heav'ns ſake, leſt at once
The burthen of my ſorrows fall upon ye.

Wol. Madam, this is a meer diſtraction,
You turn the good we offer into envy.

Queen. Ye turn me into nothing. Wo upon ye,
And all ſuch falſe profeſſors! Would you have me
(If you have any juſtice, any pity,
If ye be any thing, but churchmens habits)
Put my ſick cauſe into his hands that hates me?
Alas, h'as baniſh'd me his bed already,
His love too, long ago. I'm old, my lords,
And all the fellowſhip I hold now with him
Is only by obedience. What can happen
To me, above this wretchedneſs? all your ſtudies
Make me a curſe, like this.

Cam. Your fears are worſe-----

Queen. Have I liv'd thus long (let me ſpeak my ſelf,
Since virtue finds no friends) a wife, a true one?
A woman (I dare ſay without vain-glory)
Never yet branded with ſuſpicion?
Have I, with all my full affections
Still met the King? lov'd him next heav'n, obey'd him?

Been, out of fondneſs, ſuperſtitious to him?
Almoſt forgot my prayers to content him?
And am I thus rewarded? 'tis not well, lords.
Bring me a conſtant woman to her husband,
One that ne'er dream'd a joy beyond his pleaſure;
And to that woman, when ſhe has done moſt,
Yet will I add an honour; a great patience.

Wol. Madam, you wander from the good we aim at.

Queen. My lord, I dare not make my ſelf ſo guilty,
To give up willingly that noble title
Your maſter wed me to: nothing but death
Shall e'er divorce my dignities.

Wol. Pray hear me-----

Queen. Would I had never trod this *Engliſh* earth,
Or felt the flatteries that grow upon it!
Ye've angels faces, but heav'n knows your hearts.
What ſhall become of me now! wretched lady!
I am the moſt unhappy woman living.
Alas, poor wenches, where are now your fortunes? [*To her women.*
Ship-wrack'd upon a kingdom, where no pity,
No friends, no hope! no kindred weep for me!
Almoſt no grave allow'd me! like the lilly,
That once was miſtreſs of the field and flouriſh'd,
I'll hang my head, and periſh.

Wol. If your Grace
Could but be brought to know our ends are honeſt,
You'll feel more comfort. Why ſhould we, good lady,
Upon what cauſe, wrong you? alas, our places,
The way of our profeſſion is againſt it:
We are to cure ſuch ſorrows, not to ſow 'em.
For goodneſs ſake conſider what you do,
How you may hurt your ſelf, nay utterly
Grow from the King's acquaintance, by this carriage.

The

The hearts of Princes kiſs obedience,
So much they love it: but to ſtubborn ſpirits,
They ſwell and grow as terrible as ſtorms.
I know you have a gentle, noble temper,
A ſoul as even as a calm; pray think us
Thoſe we profeſs, peace-makers, friends and ſervants.

Cam. Madam, you'll find it ſo: you wrong your virtues
With theſe weak womens fears. A noble ſpirit,
As yours was put into you, ever caſts
Such doubts, as falſe coin, from it. The King loves you;
Beware you loſe it not; for us (if you pleaſe
To truſt us in your buſineſs) we are ready
To uſe our utmoſt ſtudies in your ſervice.

Queen. Do what you will, my lords; and pray forgive me,
If I have us'd my ſelf unmannerly.
You know I am a woman, lacking wit
To make a ſeemly anſwer to ſuch perſons.
Pray do my ſervice to his Majeſty.
He has my heart yet; and ſhall have my prayers
While I ſhall have my life. Come, rev'rend fathers,
Beſtow your counſels on me. She now begs,
That little thought when ſhe ſet footing here,
She ſhould have bought her dignities ſo dear. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE II.

Enter the Duke of Norfolk, *Duke of* Suffolk, *Lord* Surrey, *and Lord Chamberlain.*

Nor. IF you will now unite in your complaints,
And force them with a conſtancy, the Cardinal
Cannot ſtand under them. If you omit
The offer of this time, I cannot promiſe

But

But that you ſhall ſuſtain more new diſgraces,
With theſe you bear already.
Sur. I am joyful
To meet the leaſt occaſion that may give me
Remembrance of my father-in-law the Duke,
To be reveng'd on him,
Suf. Which of the Peers
Have uncontemn'd gone by him, or at leaſt
Strangely neglected? when did he regard
The ſtamp of nobleneſs in any perſon
Out of himſelf?
Cham. My lords, you ſpeak your pleaſures:
What he deſerves of you and me, I know:
What we can do to him (though now the time
Give way to us) I much fear. If you cannot
Bar his acceſs to th' King, never attempt
Any thing on him; for he hath a witchcraft
Over the King in's tongue.
Nor. O fear him not,
His ſpell in that is out; the King hath found
Matter againſt him that for ever mars
The honey of his language. No, he's ſettled,
Not to come off, in his moſt high diſpleaſure.
Sur. I ſhould be glad to hear ſuch news as this
Once every hour.
Nor. Believe it this is true.
In the divorce, his contrary proceedings
Are all unfolded; wherein he appears,
As I would wiſh my enemy.
Sur. How came
His practices to light?
Suf. Moſt ſtrangely.
Sur. How?

Suf. The Cardinal's letters to the Pope miſcarried,
And came to th' eye o' th' King; wherein was read,
How that the Cardinal did intreat his holineſs
To ſtay the judgment o' th' divorce; for if
It did take place, I do, quoth he, perceive
My King is tangled in affection to
A creature of the Queen's, lady *Anne Bullen.*

Sur. Has the King this?

Suf. Believe it.

Sur. Will this work?

Cham. The King in this perceives him, how he coaſts
And hedges his own way. But in this point
All his tricks founder, and he brings his phyſick
After his patient's death; the King already
Hath married the fair lady.

Sur. Would he had!

Suf. May you be happy in your wiſh, my lord,
For I profeſs you have it.

Sur. Now all joy
Trace the conjunction.

Suf. My Amen to't.

Nor. All men's.

Suf. There's order given for her coronation:
Marry this is but young, and may be left
To ſome ears unrecounted. But, my lords,
She is a gallant creature, and compleat
In mind and feature, I perſuade me from her
Will fall ſome bleſſing to this land, which ſhall
In it be memoriz'd.

Sur. But will the King
Digeſt this letter of the Cardinal's?
The lord forbid.

Nor. Marry, Amen.

Suf.

Suf. No, no:
There be more waſps that buz about his noſe,
Will make this ſting the ſooner. Cardinal *Campeius*
Is ſtoln away to *Rome*, has ta'en no leave,
Hath left the cauſe to th' King unhandled, and
Is poſted as the agent of our Cardinal,
To ſecond all his plot. I do aſſure you,
The King cry'd ha! at this.
Cham. Now God incenſe him;
And let him cry ha, louder.
Nor. But, my lord,
When returns *Cranmer?*
Suf. He is return'd with his opinions, which
Have ſatisfy'd the King for his divorce,
Gather'd from all the famous colleges
Almoſt in Chriſtendom; ſoon, I believe,
His ſecond marriage ſhall be publiſh'd, and
Her coronation. *Katherine* no more
Shall be call'd Queen, but Princeſs dowager,
A widow to Prince *Arthur*.
Nor. This ſame *Cranmer*'s
A worthy fellow, and hath ta'en much pain
In the King's buſineſs.
Suf. He has, and we ſhall ſee him
For it an Archbiſhop.
Nor. So I hear.
Suf. 'Tis ſo.

Enter Wolſey *and* Cromwel.

The Cardinal.
Nor. Obſerve, obſerve, he's moody.
Wol. The packet, *Cromwel*,
Gave it you the King?
Crom. To his own hand, in's bed-chamber.

Wol. Look'd he o' th' inſide of the paper?
Crom. Preſently
He did unſeal them, and the firſt he view'd,
He did it with a ſerious mind; a heed
Was in his countenance. You he bad
Attend him here this morning.
Wol. Is he ready to come abroad?
Crom. I think by this he is.
Wol. Leave me a while. [*Exit* Comwel.
It ſhall be to the Dutcheſs of *Alenſon*, [*Aſide.*
The *French* King's ſiſter; he ſhall marry her.
Anne Bullen!---- no, I'll no *Anne Bullens* for him,----
There's more in't than fair viſage---- *Bullen!*-----
No, we'll no *Bullens*---- ſpeedily I wiſh
To hear from *Rome*---- the marchioneſs of *Pembrook!*----
Nor. He's diſcontented.
Suf. May be he hears the King
Does whet his anger to him.
Sur. Sharp enough,
Lord for thy juſtice!
Wol. [*Aſide.*] The late Queen's gentlewoman! a Knight's daughter!
To be her miſtreſs's miſtreſs! the Queen's Queen!----
This candle burns not clear, 'tis I muſt ſnuff it,
Then out it goes---- what though I know her virtuous
And well-deſerving? yet I know her for
A ſpleeny Lutheran, and not wholeſome to
Our cauſe!---- that ſhe ſhould lye i' th' boſom of
Our hard-rul'd King!---- again, there is ſprung up
An heretick, an arch one; *Cranmer*, one
Hath crawl'd into the favour of the King,
And is his oracle.
Nor. He's vex'd at ſomething.

SCENE

SCENE III.

Enter King, reading of a ſchedule.

Sur. I would 'twere ſomething that would fret the ſtring
The maſter-cord of's heart.

Suf. The King, the King.

King. What piles of wealth hath he accumulated
To his own portion! what expence by th' hour
Seems to flow from him! how i' th' name of thrift
Does he rake this together! Now, my lords,
Saw you the Cardinal?

Nor. My lord, we have
Stood here obſerving him. Some ſtrange commotion
Is in his brain; he bites his lips and ſtarts,
Stops on a ſudden, looks upon the ground,
Then lays his finger on his temple; ſtrait
Springs out into faſt gate, then ſtops again,
Strikes his breaſt hard, and then anon he caſts
His eye againſt the moon, in moſt ſtrange poſtures
We've ſeen him ſet himſelf.

King. It may well be,
There is a mutiny in's mind. This morning
Papers of ſtate he ſent me to peruſe,
As I requir'd; and wot you what I found
There, on my conſcience put unwittingly?
Forſooth an inventory, thus importing
The ſeveral parcels of his plate, his treaſure,
Rich ſtuffs and ornaments of houſhold, which
I find at ſuch a proud rate, it out-ſpeaks
Poſſeſſion of a ſubject.

Nor. It's heav'ns will,
Some ſpirit put this paper in the packet,

To bleſs your eye withal.

King. If we did think
His contemplations were above the earth,
And fix'd on ſpiritual objects, he ſhould ſtill
Dwell in his muſings; but I am afraid
His thinkings are below the moon, nor worth
His ſerious conſidering.

[*He takes his ſeat, whiſpers* Lovel, *who goes to* Wolſey.

Wol. Heav'n forgive me——
Ever God bleſs your Highneſs——

King. Good my lord,
You are full of heav'nly ſtuff, and bear the inventory
Of your beſt graces in your mind; the which
You were now running o'er; you have ſcarce time
To ſteal from ſpiritual leiſure a brief ſpan
To keep your earthly audit; ſure in that
I deem you an ill husband, and am glad
To have you therein my companion.

Wol. Sir,
For holy offices I have a time;
A time to think upon the part of buſineſs
I bear i'th' ſtate; and nature does require
Her times of preſervation, which perforce
I her frail ſon, amongſt my brethren mortal,
Muſt give my tendance to.

King. You have ſaid well.

Wol. And ever may your Highneſs yoke together,
As I will lend you cauſe, my doing well
With my well ſaying.

King. 'Tis well ſaid again,
And 'tis a kind of good deed to ſay well,
And yet words are no deeds. My father lov'd you,
He ſaid he did, and with this deed did crown

His

His word upon you. Since I had my office
I've kept you next my heart, have not alone
Imploy'd you where high profits might come home,
But par'd my preſent havings, to beſtow
My bounties upon you.
Wol. What ſhould this mean? [*Aſide.*
Sur. The lord increaſe this buſineſs. [*Aſide.*
King. Have I not made you
The prime man of the ſtate? I pray you tell me,
If what I now pronounce you have found true:
And if you may confeſs it, ſay withal
If you are bound to us, or no? what ſay you?
Wol. My Sovereign, I confeſs your royal graces
Showr'd on me daily have been more than could
My ſtudied purpoſes require, which went
Beyond all man's endeavours. My endeavours
Have ever come too ſhort of my deſires,
Yet fill'd with my abilities, mine own
Ends have been ſuch that evermore they pointed
To th' good of your moſt ſacred perſon, and
The profit of the ſtate: For your great graces
Heap'd upon me, poor undeſerver, I
Can nothing render but allegiant thanks,
My prayers to heav'n for you; my loyalty,
Which ever has, and ever ſhall be growing,
'Till death, that winter, kill it.
King. Fairly anſwer'd:
A loyal and obedient ſubject is
Therein illuſtrated; the honour of it
Does pay the act of it, i'th' contrary
The foulneſs is the puniſhment. I preſume
That as my hand has open'd bounty to you,
My heart dropp'd love, my pow'r rain'd honour, more

On you, than any; ſo your hand and heart,
Your brain, and every function of your power,
Should, notwithſtanding that your bond of duty,
As 'twere in love's particular, be more
To me, your friend, than any.

Wol. I profeſs,
That for your Highneſs' good I ever labour'd
More than mine own; that am I, have been, will be:
Though all the world ſhould crack their duty to you,
And throw it from their ſoul; though perils did
Abound, as thick as thought could make 'em, and
Appear in forms more horrid; yet, my duty,
As doth a rock againſt the chiding flood,
Should the approach of this wild river break,
And ſtand unſhaken yours.

King. 'Tis nobly ſpoken;
Take notice lords, he has a loyal breaſt,
For you have ſeen him open't. Read o'er this, [*Giving him papers.*
And after this; and then to breakfaſt, with
What appetite you may.

[*Exit King, frowning upon Cardinal* Wolſey, *the Nobles throng after him whiſpering and ſmiling.*

SCENE IV.

Wol. What ſhould this mean?
' What ſudden anger's this? how have I reap'd it?
' He parted frowning from me, as if ruin
' Leap'd from his eyes. So looks the chafed lion
' Upon the daring huntſman that has gall'd him,
' Then makes him nothing. I muſt read this paper:
I fear, the ſtory of his anger ----- 'tis ſo ----
This paper has undone me---- 'tis th' account

Of

Of all that world of wealth I've drawn together
For mine own ends, indeed to gain the Popedom,
And fee my friends in *Rome*. O negligence!
Fit for a fool to fall by. What croſs devil
Made me put this main ſecret in the packet
I ſent the King? is there no way to cure this?
No new device to beat this from his brains?
I know 'twill ſtir him ſtrongly; yet I know
A way, if it take right, in ſpight of fortune
Will bring me off again. What's this-----*To the Pope?*
The letter, as I live, with all the buſineſs
I writ to's holineſs. Nay, then farewel;
I've touch'd the higheſt point of all my greatneſs,
And from that full meridian of my glory,
I haſte now to my ſetting. 'I ſhall fall
'Like a bright exhalation in the evening,
'And no man ſee me more.

SCENE V.

Enter to Wolſey, *the Dukes of* Norfolk *and* Suffolk, *the Earl of* Surrey, *and the Lord Chamberlain.*

Nor. Hear the King's pleaſure, Cardinal, who commands you
To render up the great ſeal preſently
Into our hands, and to confine your ſelf
To *Aſher-houſe*, my lord of *Wincheſter*'s,
'Till you hear further from his Highneſs.
Wol. Stay:
Where's your commiſſion, lords? words cannot carry
Authority ſo mighty.
Suf. Who dare croſs 'em,

Bearing the King's will from his mouth expreſly?
Wol. 'Till I find more than will, or words to do it,
I mean your malice, know officious lords,
I dare, and muſt deny it. Now I feel
Of what coarſe metal ye are molded---- Envy:
How eagerly ye follow my diſgrace
As if it fed ye, and how ſleek and wanton
Y' appear in every thing may bring my ruin.
Follow your envious courſes, men of malice;
You have a chriſtian warrant for 'em, and
In time will find their fit rewards. That ſeal
You ask with ſuch a violence, the King
(Mine and your maſter) with his own hand gave me;
Bad me enjoy it, with the place and honours,
During my life; and to confirm his goodneſs,
Ty'd it by letters patents. Now, who'll take it?
Sur. The King that gave it.
Wol. It muſt be himſelf then.
Sur. Thou'rt a proud traitor, prieſt.
Wol. Proud lord, thou lieſt:
Within theſe forty hours *Surrey* durſt better
Have burnt that tongue, than ſaid ſo.
Sur. Thy ambition,
Thou ſcarlet ſin, robb'd this bewailing land
Of noble *Buckingham*, my father-in-law:
The heads of all thy brother Cardinals,
With thee and all thy beſt parts bound together,
Weigh'd not a hair of his. Plague of your policy,
You ſent me deputy for *Ireland*,
Far from his ſuccour; from the King, from all
That might have mercy on the fault thou gav'ſt him:
Whilſt your great goodneſs, out of holy pity,
Abſolv'd him with an axe.

Wol.

Wol. This, and all elſe
This talking lord can lay upon my credit,
I anſwer, is moſt falſe. The Duke by law
Found his deſerts. How innocent I was
From any private malice in his end,
His noble jury and foul cauſe can witneſs.
If I lov'd many words, lord, I ſhould tell you,
You have as little honeſty as honour;
That in the way of loyalty and truth
Toward the King, my ever royal maſter,
Dare mate a ſounder man than *Surrey* can be,
And all that love his follies.

Sur. By my ſoul,
Your long coat, prieſt, protects you, thou ſhould'ſt feel
My ſword i' th' life-blood of thee elſe. My lords,
Can ye endure to hear this arrogance?
And from this fellow? if we live thus tamely,
To be thus jaded by a piece of ſcarlet,
Farewel nobility, let his grace go forward,
And dare us with his cap, like larks.

Wol. All goodneſs
Is poiſon to thy ſtomach.

Sur. Yes, that goodneſs
Of gleaning all the lands-wealth into one,
Into your own hands, Card'nal, by extortion:
The goodneſs of your intercepted packets
You writ to th' Pope, againſt the King; your goodneſs,
Since you provoke me, ſhall be moſt notorious.
My lord of *Norfolk*, as you're truly noble,
As you reſpect the common good, the ſtate
Of our deſpis'd nobility, our iſſues,
Who, if he live, will ſcarce be gentlemen,
Produce the grand ſum of his ſins, the articles

Collected from his life. I'll ſtartle you
Worſe than the ſcaring bell, when the brown wench
Lay kiſſing in your arms, lord Cardinal.

Wol. How much methinks I could deſpiſe this man,
But that I'm bound in charity againſt it.

Nor. Thoſe articles, my lord, are in th' King's hand:
But thus much, they are foul ones.

Wol. So much fairer
And ſpotleſs ſhall mine innocence ariſe,
When the King knows my truth.

Sur. This cannot ſave you:
I thank my memory, I yet remember
Some of theſe articles, and out they ſhall.
Now, if you can, bluſh, and cry guilty, Cardinal,
You'll ſhew a little honeſty.

Wol. Speak on, Sir,
I dare your worſt objections: if I bluſh,
It is to ſee a nobleman want manners.

Sur. I'd rather want thoſe than my head; have at you.
Firſt, that without the King's aſſent or knowledge
You wrought to be a legat, by which power
You maim'd the juriſdiction of all biſhops.

Nor. Then, that in all you writ to *Rome*, or elſe
To foreign Princes, *Ego & Rex meus*
Was ſtill inſcrib'd; in which you brought the King
To be your ſervant.

Suf. That without the knowledge
Either of King or council, when you went
Ambaſſador to th' Emperor, you made bold
To carry into *Flanders* the great ſeal.

Sur. Item, You ſent a large commiſſion
To *Gregory de Caſſalis*, to conclude,
Without the King's will or the State's allowance,

A league between his Highneſs and *Ferrara*.

Suf. That out of meer ambition, you have made
Your holy-hat be ſtamp'd on the King's coin.

Sur. That you have ſent innumerable ſubſtance,
(By what means got I leave to your own conſcience)
To furniſh *Rome*, and to prepare the ways
You have for dignities, to th' meer undoing
Of all the kingdom. Many more there are,
Which ſince they are of you, and odious,
I will not taint my mouth with.

Cham. O my lord,
Preſs not a falling man too far; 'tis virtue:
His faults lye open to the laws; let them,
Not you, correct him. My heart weeps to ſee him
So little of his great ſelf.

Sur. I forgive him.

Suf. Lord Cardinal, the King's further pleaſure is,
(Becauſe all thoſe things you have done of late,
By your pow'r legatine within this kingdom,
Fall in the compaſs of a præmunire)
That therefore ſuch a writ be ſued againſt you,
To forfeit all your goods, lands, tenements,
Caſtles, and whatſoever, and to be
Out of the King's protection. This is my charge.

Nor. And ſo we'll leave you to your meditations
How to live better. For your ſtubborn anſwer
About the giving back the great ſeal to us,
The King ſhall know it, and no doubt ſhall thank you.
So fare you well, my little good lord Cardinal.

[*Exeunt all but* Wolſey.

SCENE

SCENE VI.

Wol. So farewel to the little good you bear me.
' Farewel, a long farewel to all my greatneſs!
' This is the ſtate of man; to-day he puts forth
' The tender leaves of hopes, to-morrow bloſſoms,
' And bears his bluſhing honours thick upon him:
' The third day comes a froſt, a killing froſt,
' And when he thinks, good eaſie man, full ſurely
' His greatneſs is a ripening, nips his root,
' And then he falls, as I do. I have ventur'd,
' Like little wanton boys that ſwim on bladders,
' Theſe many ſummers in a ſea of glory:
' But far beyond my depth: my high-blown pride
' At length broke under me, and now has left me
' Weary, and old with ſervice, to the mercy
' Of a rude ſtream, that muſt for ever hide me.
' Vain pomp and glory of the world! I hate ye,
' I feel my heart new open'd. Oh how wretched
' Is that poor man that hangs on Princes favours!
' There is, betwixt that ſmile we would aſpire to,
' That ſweet aſpect of Princes, and [2] our ruin,
' More pangs and fears than war or women have.
' And when he falls, he falls like *Lucifer*,
' Never to hope again.

Enter Cromwell *ſtanding amaz'd.*

Why how now *Cromwell?*
Crom. I have no pow'r to ſpeak, Sir.
Wol. What, amaz'd
At my misfortunes? can thy ſpirit wonder
A great man ſhould decline? nay, if You weep,
I'm

[2] *their.*

I'm fall'n indeed.

Crom. How does your Grace?

Wol. Why, well;

Never ſo truly happy, my good *Cromwell.*
I know my ſelf now, and I feel within me
A peace above all earthly dignities;
A ſtill and quiet conſcience. The King has cur'd me,
I humbly thank his Grace; and from theſe ſhoulders,
Theſe ruin'd pillars, out of pity taken
A load would ſink a navy, too much honour.
O 'tis a burden, *Cromwell*, 'tis a burden
Too heavy for a man that hopes for heav'n.

Crom. I'm glad your Grace has made that right uſe of it.

Wol. I hope I have: I'm able now methinks,
Out of a fortitude of ſoul I feel,
T' endure more miſeries, and greater far
Than my weak-hearted enemies dare offer.
What news abroad?

Crom. The heavieſt, and the worſt,
Is your diſpleaſure with the King.

Wol. God bleſs him.

Crom. The next is, that Sir *Thomas Moor* is choſen
Lord Chancellor in your place.

Wol. That's ſomewhat ſudden -----
But he's a learned man. May he continue
Long in his Highneſs' favour, and do juſtice
For truth's ſake and his conſcience; that his bones,
When he has run his courſe and ſleeps in bleſſings,
May have a tomb of orphans tears wept on him.
What more?

Crom. That *Cranmer* is return'd with welcome;
Inſtall'd lord Archbiſhop of *Canterbury.*

Wol. That's news indeed.

Crom. Laſt, that the lady *Anne*,
Whom the King hath in ſecrecy long married,
This day was view'd in open, as his Queen,
Going to chappel; and the voice is now
Only about her coronation.

Wol. There was the weight that pull'd me down. O *Cromwell*,
The King has gone beyond me: all my glories
In that one woman I have loſt for ever.
No ſun ſhall ever uſher forth mine honours,
Or gild again the noble troops that waited
Upon my ſmiles. Go get thee from me, *Cromwell*,
I am a poor fall'n man, unworthy now
To be thy lord and maſter. Seek the King,
(That ſun, I pray may never ſet) I've told him
What and how true thou art; he will advance thee:
Some little memory of me will ſtir him,
I know his noble nature, not to let
Thy hopeful ſervice periſh too. Good *Cromwell*,
Neglect him not; make uſe now, and provide
For thine own future ſafety.

Crom. O my lord,
Muſt I then leave you? muſt I needs forgo
So good, ſo noble, and ſo true a maſter?
Bear witneſs, all that have not hearts of iron,
With what a ſorrow *Cromwell* leaves his lord.
The King ſhall have my ſervice; but my prayers
For ever and for ever ſhall be yours.

Wol. *Cromwell*, I did not think to ſhed a tear
In all my miſeries; but thou haſt forc'd me,
Out of thy honeſt truth, to play the woman.
Let's dry our eyes: and thus far hear me, *Cromwell*,
'And when I am forgotten, as I ſhall be,
'And ſleep in dull cold marble, where no mention

Of

' Of me muſt more be heard: ſay then I taught thee;
' Say, *Wolſey*, that once trod the ways of glory,
' And ſounded all the depths and ſhoals of honour,
' Found thee a way out of his wrack to riſe in:
' A ſure and ſafe one, though thy maſter miſs'd it.
' Mark but my fall and that which ruin'd me:
' *Cromwell*, I charge thee, fling away Ambition,
' By that ſin fell the angels; how can man then
' (The image of his maker) hope to win it?
' Love thy ſelf laſt, cheriſh thoſe hearts that hate thee:
' Corruption wins not more than honeſty.
' Still in thy right hand carry gentle peace
' To ſilence envious tongues. Be juſt, and fear not.
' Let all the ends thou aim'ſt at be thy country's,
' Thy God's, and truth's; then if thou fall'ſt, O *Cromwell*,
' Thou fall'ſt a bleſſed martyr. Serve the King;
And pr'ythee lead me in -----
There take an inventory of all I have,
To the laſt penny, 'tis the King's. My robe,
And my integrity to heav'n, is all
I dare now call mine own. O *Cromwell*, *Cromwell*,
Had I but ſerv'd my God with half the zeal
I ſerv'd my King, he would not in mine age
Have left me naked to mine enemies.

Crom. Good Sir, have patience.

Wol. So I have. Farewel
The hopes of court! my hopes in heav'n do dwell. [*Exeunt.*

ACT IV. SCENE I.

Enter two Gentlemen, meeting one another.

1 GENTLEMAN.

YOU'RE well met once again.

2 *Gen.* And ſo are you.

1 *Gen.* You come to take your ſtand here, and behold
The lady *Anne* paſs from her coronation.

2 *Gen.* 'Tis all my buſineſs. At our laſt encounter,
The Duke of *Buckingham* came from his tryal.

1 *Gen.* 'Tis very true. But that time offer'd ſorrow,
This, general joy.

2 *Gen.* 'Tis well; the citizens
I'm ſure have ſhewn at full their loyal minds,
And let 'em have their rights, they're ever forward
In celebration of this day with ſhews,
Pageants, and ſights of honour.

1 *Gen.* Never greater,
Nor I'll aſſure you better taken, Sir.

2 *Gen.* May I be bold to ask what that contains,
The paper in your hands?

1 *Gen.* Yes, 'tis the liſt
Of thoſe that claim their offices this day,
By cuſtom of the coronation.
The Duke of *Suffolk* is the firſt, and claims
To be High Steward; next the Duke of *Norfolk*,
To be Earl Marſhal; you may read the reſt.

2 *Gen.* I thank you, Sir; had I not known thoſe cuſtoms,

I ſhould have been beholden to your paper.
But I beſeech you what's become of *Katharine*,
The Princeſs Dowager? how goes her buſineſs?

1 *Gen.* That I can tell you too; the Arch-biſhop
Of *Canterbury*, accompanied with other
Learned and rev'rend fathers of his order,
Held a late court at *Dunſtable*, ſix miles
From *Ampthil*, where the Princeſs lay; to which
She oft was cited by them, but appear'd not:
And to be ſhort, for not appearance and
The King's late ſcruple, by the main aſſent
Of all theſe learned men ſhe was divorc'd,
And the late marriage made of none effect:
Since which, ſhe was remov'd to *Kimbolton*,
Where ſhe remains now ſick.

2 *Gen.* Alas good lady!
The trumpets ſound; ſtand cloſe, the Queen is coming.
[*Hautboys.*

The Order of the Coronation.

1. *A lively flouriſh of trumpets.*
2. *Then two Judges.*
3. *Lord Chancellor, with the purſe and mace before him.*
4. *Choriſters ſinging.* [Muſick.
5. *Mayor of* London, *bearing the mace. Then* Garter *in his coat of arms, and on his head a gilt copper crown.*
6. *Marqueſs of* Dorſet, *bearing a ſcepter of gold, on his head a demi-coronal of gold. With him, the Earl of* Surrey, *bearing the rod of ſilver with the dove, crown'd with an Earl's coronet. Collars of SS.*
7. *Duke of* Suffolk, *in his robe of eſtate, his coronet on his head, bearing a long white wand, as High Steward. With him the*

Duke of Norfolk, *with the rod of marſhalſhip, a coronet on his head. Collars of SS.*

8. *A canopy born by four of the* Cinque-Ports, *under it the Queen in her robe; in her hair richly adorned with pearl, crowned. On each ſide her the biſhops of* London *and* Wincheſter.

9. *The old Dutcheſs of* Norfolk, *in a coronal of gold, wrought with flowers, bearing the Queen's train.*

10. *Certain ladies or Counteſſes, with plain circlets of gold without flowers.*

They paſs over the ſtage in order and ſtate, and then Exeunt, *with a great flouriſh of trumpets.*

2 *Gen.* A royal train believe me; theſe I know;
Who's that who bears the ſcepter?

1 *Gen.* Marqueſs *Dorſet.*
And that the Earl of *Surrey*, with the rod.

2 *Gen.* A bold brave gentleman. That ſhould be
The Duke of *Suffolk.*

1 *Gen.* 'Tis the ſame: high Steward.

2 *Gen.* And that my lord of *Norfolk?*

1 *Gen.* Yes.

2 *Gen.* Heav'n bleſs thee,
Thou haſt the ſweeteſt face I ever look'd on.
Sir, as I have a ſoul, ſhe is an angel;
Our King has all the *Indies* in his arms,
And more and richer, when he ſtrains that lady:
I cannot blame his conſcience.

1 *Gen.* They that bear
The cloth of ſtate above her, are four barons
Of the *Cinque-Ports.*

2 *Gen.* Thoſe men are happy, ſo are all are near her.
I take it, ſhe that carries up the train,

Is

Is that old noble lady, the Dutcheſs of *Norfolk*.

1 *Gen.* It is, and all the reſt are Counteſſes.

2 *Gen.* Their coronets ſay ſo. Theſe are ſtars indeed,
And ſometimes falling ones.

1 *Gen.* No more of that.

Enter a third Gentleman.

God ſave you Sir. Where have you been broiling?

3 *Gen.* Among the croud i' th' abby, where a finger
Could not be wedg'd in more; I am ſtifled,
With the meer rankneſs of their joy.

2 *Gen.* You ſaw the ceremony?

3 *Gen.* I did.

1 *Gen.* How was it?

3 *Gen.* Well worth the ſeeing.

2 *Gen.* Good Sir, ſpeak it to us.

3 *Gen.* As well as I am able. The rich ſtream
Of lords and ladies, having brought the Queen
To a prepar'd place in the choir, fell off
A diſtance from her; while her Grace ſate down
To reſt a while, ſome half an hour, or ſo,
In a rich chair of ſtate, oppoſing freely
The beauty of her perſon to the people.
Believe me, Sir, ſhe is the goodlieſt woman
That ever lay by man; which when the people
Had the full view of, ſuch a noiſe aroſe
As the ſhrowds make at ſea in a ſtiff tempeſt,
As loud, and to as many tunes. Hats, cloaks,
Doublets, I think, flew up; and had their faces
Been looſe, this day they had been loſt. Such joy
I never ſaw before. Great-belly'd women,
That had not half a week to go, like rams
In the old time of war, would ſhake the preſs

And make 'em reel before 'em. No man living
Could ſay, this is my wife there, all were woven
So ſtrangely in one piece.

2 *Gen.* But pray what follow'd?

3 *Gen.* At length her Grace roſe, and with modeſt paces
Came to the altar, where ſhe kneel'd, and ſaint-like
Caſt her fair eyes to heav'n, and pray'd devoutly.
Then roſe again, and bow'd her to the people:
When by the Arch-biſhop of *Canterbury*,
Sh' had all the royal makings of a Queen;
As holy oil, *Edward* confeſſor's crown,
The rod, and bird of peace, and all ſuch emblems
Laid nobly on her: which perform'd, the choir
With all the choiceſt muſick of the kingdom,
Together ſung *Te Deum*. So ſhe parted,
And with the ſame full ſtate pac'd back again
To *York-Place*, where the feaſt is held.

1 *Gen.* You muſt no more call it *York-Place*, that's paſt.
For ſince the Cardinal fell, that title's loſt,
'Tis now the King's, and call'd *Whitehall*.

3 *Gen.* I know it:
But 'tis ſo lately alter'd, the old name
Is freſh about me.

2 *Gen.* What two reverend biſhops
Were thoſe, that went on each ſide of the Queen?

3 *Gen.* *Stokeſly* and *Gardiner*, the one of *Wincheſter*,
Newly preferr'd from the King's Secretary:
The other, *London*.

2 *Gen.* He of *Wincheſter*
Is held no great good lover of th' Arch-biſhop,
The virtuous *Cranmer*.

3 *Gen.* All the land knows that:
However yet there's no great breach; when't comes,

Cranmer

Cranmer will find a friend will not ſhrink from him.

2 *Gen.* Who may that be, I pray you?

3 *Gen.* *Thomas Cromwell*,

A man in much eſteem with th' King, and truly
A worthy friend. The King has made him
Maſter o'th' jewel houſe,
And one already of the privy-council.

2 *Gen.* He will deſerve more.

3 *Gen.* Yes, without all doubt.
Come, gentlemen, you ſhall go my way,
Which is to th' court, and there ſhall be my gueſts:
Something I can command; as I walk thither
I'll tell ye more,

Both. You may command us, Sir. [*Exeunt.*

---

*SCENE II.

Enter Katherine *Dowager, ſick, led between* Griffith *her gentleman Uſher, and* Patience *her woman.*

Grif. HOW does your Grace?

Kath. O *Griffith*, ſick to death:
My legs like loaded branches bow to th' earth,
Willing to leave their burthen: reach a chair-----
So---- now methinks I feel a little eaſe. [*Sitting down.*
Didſt thou not tell me, *Griffith*, as thou led'ſt me,
That the great child of honour, Cardinal *Wolſey*,
Was dead?

Grif. Yes Madam; but I think your Grace,
Out of the pain you ſuffer'd, gave no ear to't.

Kath. Pr'ythee, good *Griffith*, tell me how he dy'd.
If well, he ſtept before me happily,
For my example.

Grif.

Grif. Well, the voice goes, Madam.
For after the ſtout Earl *Northumberland*
Arreſted him at *York*, and brought him forward
(As a man ſorely tainted) to his anſwer,
He fell ſick ſuddenly, and grew ſo ill
He could not ſit his mule.

Kath. Alas, poor man!

Grif. At laſt, with eaſie roads he came to *Leiceſter*,
Lodg'd in the abby; where the rev'rend abbot,
With all his convent, honourably receiv'd him;
To whom he gave theſe words. 'O father abbot,
'An old man broken with the ſtorms of ſtate,
'Is come to lay his weary bones among ye;
'Give him a little earth for charity!
So went to bed; where eagerly his ſickneſs
Purſu'd him ſtill, and three nights after this,
About the hour of eight, (which he himſelf
Foretold ſhould be his laſt) full of repentance,
Continual meditations, tears and ſorrows,
He gave his honours to the world again,
His bleſſed part to heav'n, and ſlept in peace.

Kath. So may he reſt, his faults lie bury'd with him!
Yet thus far, *Griffith*, give me leave to ſpeak him,
And yet with charity; he was a man
Of an unbounded ſtomach, ever ranking
Himſelf with Princes: one that by ſuggeſtion
Ty'd all the kingdom; ſimony was fair play:
His own opinion was his law. I'th' preſence
He would ſay untruths, and be ever double
Both in his words and meaning. He was never,
But where he meant to ruin, pitiful.
His promiſes were, as he then was, mighty;
But his performance, as he now is, nothing.

Of

Of his own body he was ill, and gave
The clergy ill example.
Grif. Noble madam,
Men's evil manners live in braſs, their virtues
We write in water. May it pleaſe your Highneſs
To hear me ſpeak his good now?
Kath. Yes, good *Griffith*,
I were malicious elſe.
Grif. This Cardinal,
Though from an humble ſtock, undoubtedly
Was faſhion'd to much honour. From his cradle
He was a ſcholar, and a ripe and good one;
Exceeding wiſe, fair ſpoken, and perſuading;
Lofty and ſour to them that lov'd him not,
But to thoſe men that ſought him ſweet as ſummer.
And though he were unſatisfy'd in getting,
(Which was a ſin) yet in beſtowing, Madam,
He was moſt princely; Ever witneſs for him
Thoſe twins of learning that he rais'd in you
Ipſwich and *Oxford!* one of which fell with him,
Unwilling to out-live the good he did it:
The other, though unfiniſh'd, yet ſo famous,
So excellent in art, and ſtill ſo riſing,
That Chriſtendom ſhall ever ſpeak his virtue.
His overthrow heap'd happineſs upon him;
For then, and not 'till then, he felt himſelf,
And found the bleſſedneſs of being little:
And to add greater honours to his age
Than man could give him, he dy'd, fearing God.
Kath. After my death I wiſh no other herald,
No other ſpeaker of my living actions,
To keep mine honour from corruption,
But ſuch an honeſt chronicler as *Griffith*.

Whom I moſt hated living, thou haſt made me
With thy religious truth and modeſty,
Now in his aſhes honour. Peace be with him!
Patience, be near me ſtill, and ſet me lower.
I have not long to trouble thee. Good *Griffith*,
Cauſe the muſicians play me that ſad note
I nam'd my knell; whilſt I ſit meditating
On that celeſtial harmony I go to.

Sad and ſolemn muſick.

Grif. She is aſleep: good wench let's ſit down quiet,
For fear we wake her. Softly, gentle *Patience.*

The Viſion. Enter ſolemnly one after another, ſix perſonages, clad in white robes, wearing on their heads garlands of bays, and golden vizards on their faces, branches of bays or palm in their hands. They firſt congee unto her, then dance; and at certain changes the firſt two hold a ſpare garland over her head, at which the other four make reverend curtſies. Then the two that held the garland deliver the ſame to the other next two, who obſerve the ſame order in their changes, and holding the garland over her head. Which done, they deliver the ſame garland to the laſt two, who likewiſe obſerve the ſame order. At which, as it were by inſpiration, ſhe makes in her ſleep ſigns of rejoycing, and holdeth up her hands to heaven. And ſo in their dancing vaniſh, carrying the garland with them. The muſick continues.

Kath. Spirits of peace, where are ye? are ye gone?
And leave me here in wretchedneſs behind ye?
Grif. Madam, we're here.
Kath. It is not you I call for,
Saw ye none enter ſince I ſlept?
Grif. None, madam.
Kath. No? ſaw you not ev'n now a bleſſed troop

Invite

Invite me to a banquet, whoſe bright faces
Caſt thouſand beams upon me, like the ſun?
They promis'd me eternal happineſs,
And brought me garlands, *Griffith*, which I feel
I am not worthy yet to wear: I ſhall aſſuredly.

Grif. I am moſt joyful, madam, ſuch good dreams
Poſſeſs your fancy.

Kath. Bid the muſick leave,
'Tis harſh and heavy to me. [*Muſick ceaſes.*

Pat. Do you note
How much her Grace is alter'd on the ſudden?
How long her face is drawn? how pale ſhe looks,
And of an earthly cold? obſerve her eyes.

Grif. She is going, wench. Pray, pray,-----

Pat. Heav'n comfort her.

Enter a Meſſenger.

Meſ. And't like your Grace-----

Kath. You are a ſawcy fellow,
Deſerve we no more rev'rence?

Grif. You're to blame,
Knowing ſhe will not loſe her wonted greatneſs,
To uſe ſo rude behaviour. Go to, kneel.

Meſ. I humbly do intreat your Highneſs' pardon:
My haſte made me unmannerly. There is ſtaying
A gentleman ſent from the King to ſee you.

Kath. Admit him entrance, *Griffith*. But this fellow
Let me ne'er ſee again. [*Exit Meſſenger.*

Enter Lord Capucius.

If my ſight fail not,
You ſhould be lord ambaſſador from the Emperor,
My royal nephew, and your name *Capucius*.

Cap. Madam, the ſame, your ſervant.
Kath. O my lord,
The times and titles now are alter'd ſtrangely
With me, ſince firſt you knew me. But I pray you,
What is your pleaſure with me?
Cap. Noble lady,
Firſt mine own ſervice to your Grace, the next
The King's requeſt that I would viſit you,
Who grieves much for your weakneſs, and by me
Sends you his Princely commendations,
And heartily intreats you take good comfort.
Kath. O my good lord, that comfort comes too late,
'Tis like a pardon after execution;
That gentle phyſick giv'n in time had cur'd me;
But now I'm paſt all comforts here but prayers.
How does his Highneſs?
Cap. Madam, in good health.
Kath. So may he ever do, and ever flouriſh,
When I ſhall dwell with worms, and my poor name
Baniſh'd the Kingdom. *Patience*, is that letter
I caus'd you write, yet ſent away?
Pat. No, madam.
Kath. Sir, I muſt humbly pray you to deliver
This to my lord the King.
Cap. Moſt willingly, madam.
Kath. In which I have commended to his goodneſs
The model of our chaſte loves, his young daughter,
(The dews of heav'n fall thick in bleſſings on her!)
Beſeeching him to give her virtuous breeding,
(She's young, and of a noble modeſt nature,
I hope ſhe will deſerve well) and a little
To love her for her mother's ſake, that lov'd him
Heav'n knows how dearly! my next poor petition

Is,

Is, that his noble Grace would have ſome pity
Upon my wretched women, that ſo long
Have follow'd both my fortunes faithfully;
Of which there is not one, I dare avow
(And now I ſhould not lye) but well deſerve,
For virtue and true beauty of the ſoul,
For honeſty and decent carriage,
A right good husband, let him be a noble:
And ſure thoſe men are happy that ſhall have 'em.
The laſt is for my men; they are the pooreſt,
But poverty could never draw 'em from me;
That they may have their wages duly paid 'em,
And ſomething over to remember me.
If heav'n had pleas'd to've giv'n me longer life
And able means, we had not parted thus.
Theſe are the whole contents. And good my lord,
By that you love the deareſt in this world,
As you wiſh chriſtian peace to ſouls departed,
Stand theſe poor peoples friend, and urge the King
To do me this laſt right.

Cap. By heav'n I will,
Or let me loſe the faſhion of a man.

Kath. I thank you, honeſt lord. Remember me
In all humility unto his Highneſs;
And tell him, his long trouble now is paſſing
Out of this world. Tell him, in death I bleſt him,
For ſo I will---mine eyes grow dim. Farewel,
My lord ----*Griffith* farewel ---- nay, *Patience*,
You muſt not leave me yet. I muſt to bed ----
Call in more women ---- When I'm dead, good wench,
Let me be us'd with honour, ſtrew me over
With maiden flow'rs, that all the world may know

I was a chaſt wife to my grave: embalm me,
Then lay me forth; although un-queen'd, yet like
A Queen and daughter to a King, inter me.
I can no more---- [*Exeunt, leading* Katharine.

ACT V. SCENE I.

Enter Gardiner *Biſhop of* Wincheſter, *a page with a torch before him, met by Sir* Thomas Lovel.

GARDINER.

IT'S one a clock, boy, is't not?
Boy. It hath ſtruck.
Gard. Theſe ſhould be hours for neceſſities,
Not for delights; times to repair our nature
With comforting repoſe, and not for us
To waſte theſe times. Good hour of night, Sir
Whither ſo late? [*Thomas,*
Lov. Came you from the King, my lord?
Gard. I did, Sir *Thomas*, left him at *Primero*
With the Duke of *Suffolk.*
Lov. I muſt to him too,
Before he go to bed. I'll take my leave.
Gard. Not yet, Sir *Thomas Lovel*; what's the matter?
It ſeems you are in haſte: And if there be
No great offence belongs to't, give your friend
Some touch of your late buſineſs. Affairs that walk
(As they ſay ſpirits do) at midnight, have
In them a wilder nature, than the buſineſs

That ſeeks diſpatch by day.

Lov. My lord, I love you:
And durſt commend a ſecret to your ear
Much weightier than this word. The Queen's in labour,
They ſay in great extremity, 'tis fear'd
She'll with the labour end.

Gard. The fruit ſhe goes with
I pray for heartily, that it may find
Good time, and live; but for the ſtock, Sir *Thomas*,
I wiſh it grubb'd up now.

Lov. Methinks I could
Cry the Amen, and yet my conſcience ſays
She's a good creature, and (ſweet lady) does
Deſerve our better wiſhes.

Gard. But Sir, Sir----
Hear me, Sir *Thomas*---- y'are a gentleman
Of mine own way, I know you wiſe, religious,
And let me tell you it will ne'er be well,
'Twill not, Sir *Thomas Lovel*, take't of me,
'Till *Cranmer*, *Cromwell*, her two hands, and ſhe,
Sleep in their graves.

Lov. Now, Sir, you ſpeak of two
The moſt remark'd i'th' kingdom; as for *Cromwell*,
Beſide that of the jewel-houſe, is made maſter
O'th' Rolls, and the King's Secretary. Further,
Stands in the gap and trade for more preferments,
With which the time will load him. Th' Arch-biſhop
Is the King's hand, or tongue, and who dare ſpeak
One ſyllable againſt him?

Gard. Yes, Sir *Thomas*,
There are that dare; and I my ſelf have ventur'd
To ſpeak my mind of him; indeed this day,
Sir I may tell it you, I think I have

Incens'd

Incens'd the lords o' th' council, that he is
(For ſo I know he is, they know he is)
A moſt arch-heretick, a peſtilence
That does infect the land; with which they mov'd
Have broken with the King, who hath ſo far
Giv'n ear to our complaint of his great Grace
And princely care, foreſeeing thoſe fell miſchiefs
Our reaſons laid before him, he hath commanded
To-morrow morning to the council board
He be convented. He's a rank weed, Sir *Thomas*,
And we muſt root him out. From your affairs
I hinder you too long: good night, Sir *Thomas*.

[*Exeunt* Gardiner *and page.*

Lov. Many good nights, my lord, I reſt your ſervant.

SCENE II.

Enter King and Suffolk.

King. Charles, I will play no more to-night,
My mind's not on't, you are too hard for me.

Suf. Sir, I did never win of you before.

King. But little, *Charles*,
Nor ſhall not when my fancy's on my play.
Now *Lovel*, from the Queen what is the news?

Lov. I could not perſonally deliver to her
What you commanded me, but by her woman
I ſent your meſſage, who return'd her thanks
In greateſt humbleneſs, and begg'd your Highneſs
Moſt heartily to pray for her.

King. What ſay'ſt thou! ha!
To pray for her! what! is ſhe crying out?

Lov. So ſaid her woman, and that her ſuff'rance made
Almoſt each pang a death.

King.

King. Alas, good lady!

Suf. God ſafely quit her of her burthen, and
With gentle travel, to the gladding of
Your Highneſs with an heir.

King. 'Tis midnight, *Charles*;
Pr'ythee to bed, and in thy prayers remember
Th' eſtate of my poor Queen. Leave me alone,
For I muſt think of that which company
Would not be friendly to.

Suf. I wiſh your Highneſs
A quiet night, and my good miſtreſs will
Remember in my prayers.

King. *Charles*, a good night: [*Exit* Suffolk.
Well, Sir, what follows?

Enter Sir Anthony Denny.

Denny. Sir, I have brought my lord the Arch-biſhop,
As you commanded me.

King. Ha! *Canterbury!* -----

Denny. Yea, my good lord.

King. 'Tis true---- where is he, *Denny?*

Denny. He attends your Highneſs' pleaſure.

King. Bring him to us. [*Exit* Denny.

Lov. This is about that which the biſhop ſpake,
I am happily come hither. [*Aſide.*

Enter Cranmer *and* Denny.

King. Avoid the gallery. [Lovel *ſeemeth to ſtay.*
Ha!---- I have ſaid---- be gone. [*Exeunt* Lovel *and* Denny.

SCENE III.

Cran. I am fearful: wherefore frowns he thus?
'Tis his aſpect of terror. All's not well.

King. How now, my lord? you do deſire to know

Wherefore I ſent for you.
Cran. It is my duty
T' attend your Highneſs' pleaſure.
King. Pray you riſe,
My good and gracious lord of *Canterbury:*
Come, you and I muſt walk a turn together:
I've news to tell you. Come, give me your hand.
Ah my good lord, I grieve at what I ſpeak,
And am right ſorry to repeat what follows.
I have, and moſt unwillingly, of late
Heard many grievous, I do ſay, my lord,
Grievous complaints of you; which being conſider'd,
Have mov'd us and our council, that you ſhall
This morning come before us, where I know
You cannot with ſuch freedom purge your ſelf,
But that 'till further tryal, in thoſe charges
Which will require your anſwer, you muſt take
Your patience to you, and be well contented
To make your houſe our *Tower*; you, a brother of us,
It fits we thus proceed, or elſe no witneſs
Would come againſt you.
Cran. I humbly thank your Highneſs,
And am right glad to catch this good occaſion
Moſt throughly to be winnow'd, where my chaff
And corn ſhall fly aſunder. For I know
There's none ſtands under more calumnious tongues
Than I my ſelf, poor man.
King. Stand up, good *Canterbury*;
Thy truth and thy integrity is rooted
In us, thy friend. Give me thy hand, ſtand up,
Pr'ythee let's walk. Now, by my holy dame,
What manner of man are you? my lord, I look'd
You would have giv'n me your petition, that

I ſhould have ta'en ſome pains to bring together
Your ſelf and your accuſers, and have heard you
Without indurance further.

Cran. Moſt dread Liege,
The good I ſtand on is my truth and honeſty:
If they ſhall fall, I with mine enemies
Will triumph o'er my perſon; which I weigh not,
Being of thoſe virtues vacant. I fear nothing
What can be ſaid againſt me.

King. Know you not
How your ſtate ſtands i' th' world, with the whole world?
Your foes are many, and not ſmall; their practices
Muſt bear the ſame proportion; and not ever
The juſtice and the truth o' th' queſtion carries
The due o' th' verdict with it. At what eaſe
Might corrupt minds procure knaves as corrupt
To ſwear againſt you? ſuch things have been done.
You're potently oppos'd; and with a malice
Of as great ſize. Ween you of better luck,
I mean in perjur'd witneſs, than your maſter,
Whoſe miniſter you are, while here he liv'd
Upon this naughty earth? go to, go to,
You take a precipice for no leap of danger,
And woo your own deſtruction.

Cran. God and your Majeſty
Protect mine innocence, or I fall into
The trap is laid for me.

King. Be of good cheer,
They ſhall no more prevail than we give way to:
Keep comfort to you, and this morning ſee
You do appear before them. If they chance,
In charging you with matters, to commit you;
The beſt perſuaſions to the contrary

Fail not to uſe; and with what vehemency
Th' occaſion ſhall inſtruct you. If intreaties
Will render you no remedy, this Ring
Deliver them, and your appeal to us
There make before them. Look, the good man weeps!
He's honeſt on mine honour. God's bleſt mother!
I ſwear he is true-hearted, and a ſoul
None better in my kingdom. Get you gone,
And do as I have bid you. [*Exit* Cranmer.
He'as ſtrangled all his language in his tears.

Enter an old Lady.

Gent. within. Come back; what mean you?

Lady. I'll not come back: the tidings that I bring
Will make my boldneſs manners. Now good angels
Fly o'er thy royal head, and ſhade thy perſon
Under their bleſſed wings!

King. Now by thy looks
I gueſs thy meſſage. Is the Queen deliver'd?
Say ay, and of a boy.

Lady. Ay, ay, my Liege;
And of a lovely boy; the God of heav'n
Both now and ever bleſs her!----'tis a girl,
Promiſes boys hereafter. Sir, your Queen
Deſires your viſitation, and to be
Acquainted with this ſtranger; 'tis as like you,
As cherry is to cherry.

King. Lovell.

Lov. Sir.

King. Give her an hundred marks. I'll to the Queen.
[*Exit King.*

Lady. An hundred marks! by this light I'll ha' more.
An ordinary groom is for ſuch payment.
I will have more, or ſcold it out of him.

Said

Said I for this, the girl was like him? I'll
Have more, or elſe unſay't: now, while 'tis hot,
I'll put it to the iſſue. [*Exit Lady.*

SCENE IV.

Enter Cranmer.

Cran. I Hope I'm not too late, and yet the gentleman
That was ſent to me from the council, pray'd me
To make great haſte. All faſt? what means this? hoa?
Who waits there? ſure you know me?

Enter Keeper.

Keep. Yes, my lord;
But yet I cannot help you.

Cran. Why?

Keep. Your Grace muſt wait 'till you be call'd for.

Enter Doctor Butts.

Cran. So.

Butts. This is a piece of malice: I am glad
I came this way ſo happily. The King
Shall underſtand it preſently. [*Exit* Butts.

Cran. 'Tis *Butts*,
The King's phyſician; as he paſt along,
How earneſtly he caſt his eyes upon me!
Pray heav'n he found not my diſgrace: for certain
This is of purpoſe laid by ſome that hate me,
(God turn their hearts, I never ſought their malice)
To quench mine honour! they would ſhame to make me
Wait elſe at door: a fellow-counſellor
'Mong boys and grooms and lackeys! but their pleaſures
Muſt be fulfill'd, and I attend with patience.

Enter

Enter the King and Butts *at a window above.*

Butts. I'll ſhew your grace the ſtrangeſt ſight----

King. What's that, *Butts?*

Butts. I think your Highneſs ſaw this many a day.

King. Body o' me: where is it?

Butts. There, my lord:
The high promotion of his Grace of *Canterbury*,
Who holds his ſtate at door 'mongſt purſevants,
Pages, and foot-boys.

King. Ha! 'tis he indeed.
Is this the honour they do one another?
'Tis well there's one above 'em yet. I thought
They'd parted ſo much honeſty among 'em,
At leaſt good manners, as not thus to ſuffer
A man of his place and ſo near our favour
To dance attendance on their lordſhips pleaſures,
And at the door too, like a poſt with packets.
By holy *Mary*, *Butts*, there's knavery;
Let 'em alone, and draw the curtain cloſe.
We ſhall hear more anon.----

SCENE V.

A council table brought in with chairs and ſtools, and placed under the ſtate. Enter Lord-chancellor, places himſelf at the upper end of the table, on the left hand. A ſeat being left void above him, as for the Arch-biſhop of Canterbury. *Duke of* Suffolk, *Duke of* Norfolk, Surrey, *Lord-Chamberlain, and* Gardiner, *ſeat themſelves in order on each ſide.* Cromwel *at the lower end, as Secretary.*

Chan. Speak to the buſineſs, Mr. Secretary:
Why are we met in council?

Crom. Pleaſe your honours,

The

The cauſe concerns his Grace of *Canterbury*.

Gard. Has he knowledge of it?

Crom. Yes.

Nor. Who waits there?

Keep. Without, my noble lords?

Gard. Yes.

Keep. My lord Arch-biſhop;
And has done half an hour, to know your pleaſures.

Chan. Let him come in.

Keep. Your Grace may enter now.

[Cranmer *approaches the council table.*

Chan. My good lord Arch-biſhop, I'm very ſorry
To ſit here at this preſent, and behold
That chair ſtand empty: but we all are men
In our own natures frail, and capable
Of frailty, few are angels; from which frailty
And want of wiſdom, you that beſt ſhould teach us,
Have miſdemean'd your ſelf, and not a little:
Tow'rd the King firſt, then his laws, in filling
The whole realm, by your teaching and your chaplains,
(For ſo we are inform'd) with new opinions
Divers and dang'rous, which are hereſies;
And not reform'd, may prove pernicious.

Gard. Which reformation muſt be ſudden too,
My noble lords; for thoſe that tame wild horſes
Pace 'em not in their hands to make 'em gentle,
But ſtop their mouths with ſtubborn bits, and ſpur 'em
'Till they obey the manage. If we ſuffer
(Out of our eaſineſs and childiſh pity
To one man's honour) this contagious ſickneſs,
Farewel all phyſick: and what follows then?
Commotions, uproars, with a gen'ral taint
Of the whole ſtate: as of late days our neighbours

The

The upper *Germany* can dearly witneſs,
Yet freſhly pitied in our memories.

Cran. My good lords, hitherto, in all the progreſs
Both of my life and office, I have labour'd
(And with no little ſtudy) that my teaching
And the ſtrong courſe of my authority,
Might go one way, and ſafely; and the end
Was ever to do well: nor is there living
(I ſpeak it with a ſingle heart, my lords)
A man that more deteſts, more ſtirs againſt
(Both in his private conſcience and his place)
Defacers of the publick peace, than I do.
Pray heav'n the King may never find a heart
With leſs allegiance in it! Men that make
Envy and crooked malice nouriſhment,
Dare bite the beſt. I do beſeech your lordſhips,
That in this caſe of juſtice, my accuſers,
Be what they will, may ſtand forth face to face,
And freely urge againſt me.

Suf. Nay, my lord,
That cannot be; you are a councellor,
And by that vertue no man dare accuſe you.

Gard. My lord, becauſe we've buſineſs of more moment,
We will be ſhort wi'you. 'Tis his Highneſs' pleaſure,
And our conſent, for better tryal of you,
From hence you be committed to the *Tower*;
Where being but a private man again,
You ſhall know many dare accuſe you boldly,
More than, I fear, you are provided for.

Cran. Ay, my good lord of *Wincheſter*, I thank you,
You're always my good friend; if your will paſs,
I ſhall both find your lordſhip judge and juror,
You are ſo merciful. I ſee your end,

'Tis my undoing. Love and meekneſs, lord,
Become a church-man better than ambition:
Win ſtraying ſouls with modeſty again,
Caſt none away. That I ſhall clear my ſelf,
(Lay all the weight ye can upon my patience)
I make as little doubt, as you do conſcience
In doing daily wrongs. I could ſay more,
But rev'rence to your calling makes me modeſt.
Gard. My lord, my lord, you are a ſectary,
That's the plain truth; your painted gloſs diſcovers,
To men that underſtand you, words and weakneſs.
Crom. My lord of *Wincheſter*, you are a little
By your good favour too ſharp; men ſo noble,
However faulty, yet ſhould find reſpect
For what they have been: 'tis a cruelty
To load a falling man.
Gard. Good Mr. Secretary
I cry your honour mercy; you may, worſt
Of all this table, ſay ſo.
Crom. Why, my lord?
Gard. Do not I know you for a favourer
Of this new ſect? ye are not ſound.
Crom. Not ſound?
Gard. Not ſound, I ſay.
Crom. Would you were half ſo honeſt!
Mens prayers then would ſeek you, not their fears
Gard. I ſhall remember this bold language.
Crom. Do.
Remember your bold life too.
Cham. This is too much;
Forbear for ſhame, my lords.
Gard. I've done.
Crom. And I.

Cham. Then thus for you, my lord: it ſtands agreed,
I take it, by all voices, that forthwith
You be convey'd to th' *Tower* a priſoner;
There to remain 'till the King's further pleaſure
Be known unto us. Are you all agreed, lords?

All. We are.

Cran. Is there no other way of mercy,
But I muſt needs to th' *Tower*, my lords?

Gard. What other
Would you expect? you're ſtrangely troubleſome:
Let ſome o'th' guard be ready there.

Enter the Guard.

Cran. For me?
Muſt I go like a traitor then?

Gard. Receive him,
And ſee him ſafe i'th' *Tower*.

Cran. Stay, good my lords,
I have a little yet to ſay. Look there, lords;
By vertue of that Ring, I take my cauſe
Out of the gripes of cruel men, and give it
To a moſt noble judge, the King my maſter.

Cham. This is the King's ring.

Sur. 'Tis no counterfeit.

Suf. 'Tis his right ring, by heav'n. I told ye all,
When we firſt put this dang'rous ſtone a rowling,
'Twould fall upon our ſelves.

Nor. D' you think, my lords,
The King will ſuffer but the little finger
Of this man to be vex'd?

Cham. 'Tis now too certain.
How much more is his life in value with him?
Would I were fairly out on't.

Crom.

Crom. My mind gave me,
In ſeeking tales and informations
Againſt this man, whoſe honeſty the devil
And his diſciples only envy at,
Ye blew the fire that burns ye; now have at ye.

SCENE VI.

Enter King frowning on them, takes his ſeat.

Gard. Dread Sov'reign, how much are we bound to heav'n
In daily thanks, that gave us ſuch a Prince;
Not only good and wiſe, but moſt religious:
One that in all obedience makes the church
The chief aim of his honour, and to ſtrengthen
That holy duty of our dear reſpect,
His royal ſelf in judgment comes to hear
The cauſe betwixt her and this great offender.

King. You're ever good at ſudden commendations,
Biſhop of *Wincheſter.* But know, I come not
To hear ſuch flatt'ries now; and in my preſence
They are too thin and baſe to hide offences.
To me you cannot reach; you play the ſpaniel,
And think with wagging of your tongue to win me.
But whatſoe'er thou tak'ſt me for, I'm ſure
Thou haſt a cruel nature, and a bloody.
Good man, ſit down: now let me ſee the proudeſt [*To* Cran.
He that dares moſt, but wag his finger at thee.
By all that's holy, he had better ſtarve,
Than but once think this place becomes thee not.

Sur. May't pleaſe your Grace-----

King. No, Sir, it does not pleaſe me.
I thought I had men of ſome underſtanding
And wiſdom, of my council; but I find none.

Was it diſcretion, lords, to let this man,
This good man, (few of you deſerve that title)
This honeſt man, wait like a lowſie foot-boy
At chamber-door, and one as great as you are?
Why what a ſhame was this? did my commiſſion
Bid ye ſo far forget your ſelves? I gave ye
Pow'r, as he was a counſellor, to try him,
Not as a groom. There's ſome of ye, I ſee,
More out of malice than integrity,
Would try him to the utmoſt, had ye means;
Which ye ſhall never have, while I do live.

Cham. My moſt dread Sovereign, may it like your Grace
To let my tongue excuſe all. What was purpos'd
Concerning his impriſonment, was rather,
If there be faith in men, meant for his tryal,
And fair purgation to the world, than malice;
I'm ſure in me.

King. Well, well, my lords reſpect him:
Take him, and uſe him well; he's worthy of it.
I will ſay thus much for him, if a Prince
May be beholden to a ſubject, I
Am, for his love and ſervice, ſo to him.
Make me no more ado, but all embrace him;
Be friends for ſhame, my lords. My lord of *Canterbury*,
I have a ſuit which you muſt not deny me.
There is a fair young maid that yet wants baptiſm,
You muſt be godfather, and anſwer for her.

Cran. The greateſt monarch now alive may glory
In ſuch an honour; how may I deſerve it,
That am a poor and humble ſubject to you? [have

King. Come, come, my lord, you'd ſpare your ſpoons: you ſhall
Two noble partners with you: the old Dutcheſs
Of *Norfolk*, and the lady Marqueſs *Dorſet*-----

Once

Once more, my lord of *Winchester*, I charge you
Embrace and love this man.
Gard. With a true heart
And brother's love I do it.
Cran. And let heav'n
Witness, how dear I hold this confirmation.
King. Good man, those joyful tears shew thy true heart;
The common voice I see is verify'd
Of thee, which says thus: do my lord of *Canterbury*
But one shrewd turn, and he's your friend for ever.
Come, lords, we trifle time away: I long
To have this young one made a christian.
As I have made ye one, lords, one remain:
So I grow stronger, you more honour gain. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VII.

Noise and tumult within: Enter Porter and his man.

Port. YOu'll leave your noise anon, ye rascals; do you take the court for *Paris Garden?* ye rude slaves, leave your gaping.

Within. Good Mr. Porter, I belong to th' larder.

Port. Belong to the gallows and be hang'd, ye rogue: is this a place to roar in? fetch me a dozen crab-tree staves, and strong ones; these are but switches to 'em: I'll scratch your heads; you must be seeing christnings? do you look for ale and cakes here, you rude rascals?

Man. Pray Sir, be patient; 'tis as much impossible
(Unless we swept them from the door with cannons)
To scatter 'em, as 'tis to make 'em sleep
On *May*-day morning, which will never be:
We may as well push against *Pauls*, as stir 'em.

Port.

Port. How got they in, and be hang'd?

Man. Alas, I know not; how gets the tide in? As much as one ſound cudgel of four foot (You ſee the poor remainder) could diſtribute I made no ſpare, Sir.

Port. You did nothing, Sir.

Man. I am not *Sampſon*, nor Sir *Guy*, nor *Colebrand*, to mow 'em down before me; but if I ſpar'd any that had a head to hit, either young or old, he or ſhe, cuckold or cuckold-maker, let me never hope to ſee a chine again; and that I would not for a cow, God ſave her.

Within. Do you hear, Mr. Porter?

Port. I ſhall be with you preſently, good Mr. Puppy. Keep the door cloſe, ſirrah.

Man. What would you have me do?

Port. What ſhould you do, but knock 'em down by the dozens? is this *Moreſields* to muſter in? or have we ſome ſtrange *Indian* with the great tool come to court, the women ſo beſiege us? bleſs me! what a fry of fornication is at the door? on my chriſtian conſcience, this one chriſtning will beget a thouſand, here will be father, god-father, and all together.

Man. The ſpoons will be the bigger, Sir. There is a fellow ſomewhat near the door, he ſhould be a braſier by his face, for o' my conſcience twenty of the dog-days now reign in's noſe; all that ſtand about him are under the line, they need no other penance; that fire-drake did I hit three times on the head, and three times was his noſe diſcharged againſt me; he ſtands there like a mortar-piece to blow us up. There was a haberdaſher's wife of ſmall wit near him, that rail'd upon me 'till her pink'd porringer fell off her head, for kindling ſuch a combuſtion in the ſtate. I miſt the meteor once, and hit that woman, who cry'd out Clubs, when I might ſee ſome forty truncheons draw to her ſuccour, which were the hope of the ſtrand, where

ſhe was quarter'd. They fell on; I made good my place; at length they came to th' broom-ſtaff with me, I defy'd 'em ſtill; when ſuddenly a file of boys behind 'em deliver'd ſuch a ſhower of pibbles, looſe ſhot, that I was fain to draw mine honour in, and let 'em win the work; the devil was amongſt 'em, I think ſurely.

Port. Theſe are the youths that thunder at a play-houſe, and fight for bitten apples; that no audience but the tribulation of *Tower-Hill* or the limbs of *Lime-houſe*, their dear brothers, are able to endure. I have ſome of 'em in *Limbo Patrum*, and there they are like to dance theſe three days; beſides the running banquet of two beadles that is to come.

Enter Lord Chamberlain.

Cham. Mercy o' me; what a multitude are here?
They grow ſtill too; from all parts they are coming,
As if we kept a fair. Where are theſe porters?
Theſe lazy knaves? ye've made a fine hand, fellows?
There's a trim rabble let in; are all theſe
Your faithful friends o' th' ſuburbs? we ſhall have
Great ſtore of room, no doubt, left for the ladies,
When they paſs back from th' chriſtning?

Port. Pleaſe your honour,
We are but men, and what ſo many may do,
Not being torn in pieces, we have done:
An army cannot rule 'em.

Cham. As I live,
If the King blame me for't, I'll lay ye all
By th' heels, and ſuddenly; and on your heads
Clap round fines for neglect: y'are lazy knaves,
And here ye lye baiting of bombards, when
Ye ſhould do ſervice. Hark, the trumpets ſound,

Th' are

Th' are come already from the chriſtening;
Go break among the preſs, and find a way out
To let the troop paſs fairly; or I'll find
A *Marſhalſea* ſhall hold ye play theſe two months.

Port. Make way there for the Princeſs.

Man. You great fellow, ſtand cloſe up, or I'll make your head ake.

Port. You i' th' camblet, get up o' th' rail, I'll peck you o'er the pales elſe. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VIII.

Enter trumpets ſounding; then two Aldermen, Lord Mayor, Garter, Cranmer, *Duke of* Norfolk *with his Marſhal's ſtaff, Duke of* Suffolk, *two noblemen bearing great ſtanding bowls for the chriſtning gifts; then four noblemen bearing a canopy, under which the Dutcheſs of* Norfolk, *god-mother, bearing the child richly habited in a mantle,* &c. *Train born by a lady: then follows the marchioneſs of* Dorſet, *the other god-mother, and ladies. The troop paſs once about the ſtage, and* Garter *ſpeaks.*

Gart. Heav'n, from thy endleſs goodneſs ſend long life,
And ever happy, to the high and mighty
Princeſs of *England,* fair *Elizabeth.*

Flouriſh. Enter King and Guard.

Cran. And to your royal Grace, and the good Queen,
My noble partners and my ſelf thus pray;
All comfort, joy, in this moſt gracious lady,
That heav'n e'er laid up to make parents happy,
May hourly fall upon ye!

King. Thank you, good lord Arch-biſhop:
What is her name?

Cran.

Cran. Elizabeth.

King. Stand up, lord.
With this kiſs take my bleſſing: God protect thee,
Into whoſe hand I give thy life.

Cran. Amen.

King. My noble goſſips, y'have been too prodigal,
I thank ye heartily: ſo ſhall this lady,
When ſhe has ſo much *Engliſh.*

Cran. Let me ſpeak, Sir,
(For heav'n now bids me) and the words I utter,
Let none think flatt'ry, for they'll find 'em truth.
This royal infant, (heav'n ſtill move about her)
Though in her cradle, yet now promiſes
Upon this land a thouſand thouſand bleſſings,
Which time ſhall bring to ripeneſs. She ſhall be
(But few now living can behold that goodneſs)
A pattern to all Princes living with her,
And all that ſhall ſucceed. *Sheba* was never
More covetous of wiſdom and fair virtue,
Than this bleſt ſoul ſhall be. All Princely graces
That mould up ſuch a mighty piece as this,
With all the virtues that attend the good,
Shall ſtill be doubled on her. Truth ſhall nurſe her:
Holy and heav'nly thoughts ſtill counſel her:
She ſhall be lov'd and fear'd. Her own ſhall bleſs her;
Her foes ſhake like a field of beaten corn,
And hang their heads with ſorrow. Good grows with her.
In her days ev'ry man ſhall eat in ſafety
Under his own vine, what he plants; and ſing
The merry ſongs of peace to all his neighbours.
God ſhall be truly known, and thoſe about her

From her ſhall read the perfect ways of honour,
And claim by thoſe their greatneſs, not by blood.
Nor ſhall this peace ſleep with her; but as when
The bird of wonder dies, the maiden Phœnix,
Her aſhes new create another heir,
As great in admiration as her ſelf;
So ſhall ſhe leave her bleſſedneſs to one,
(When heav'n ſhall call her from this cloud of darkneſs)
Who from the ſacred aſhes of her honour
Shall ſtar-like riſe, as great in fame as ſhe was,
And ſo ſtand fix'd. Peace, plenty, love, truth, terrour,
That were the ſervants to this choſen infant,
Shall then be his, and like a vine grow to him;
Where-ever the bright ſun of heav'n ſhall ſhine,
His honour and the greatneſs of his name
Shall be, and make new nations. He ſhall flouriſh,
And like a mountain cedar reach his branches
To all the plains about him: children's children
Shall ſee this, and bleſs heav'n.

King. Thou ſpeakeſt wonders.

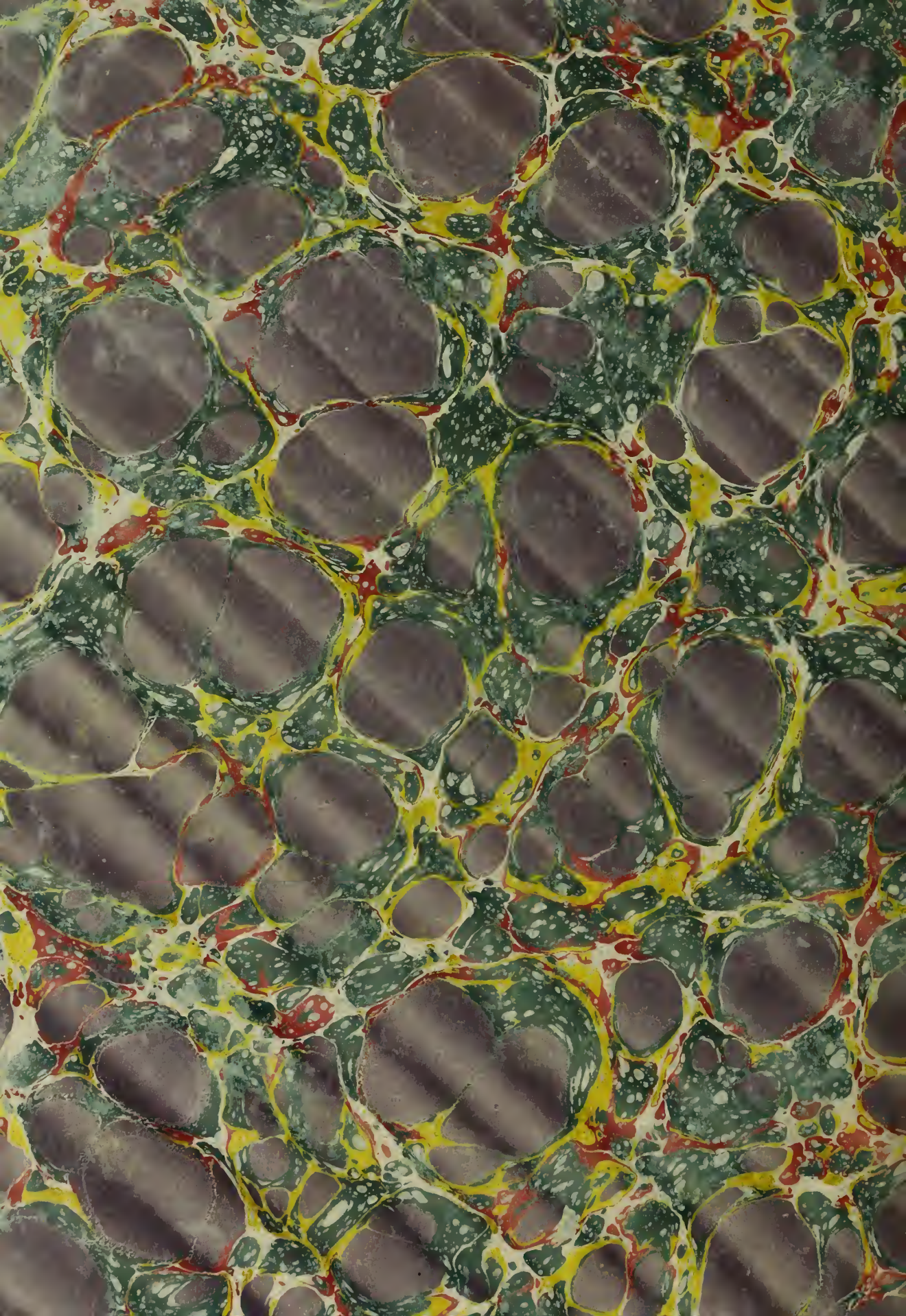
Cran. She ſhall be to the happineſs of *England*,
An aged Princeſs; many days ſhall ſee her,
And yet no day without a deed to crown it.
Would I had known no more: but ſhe muſt die,
She muſt, the ſaints muſt have her; yet a virgin,
A moſt unſpotted lilly ſhall ſhe paſs
To th' ground, and all the world ſhall mourn her.

King. O lord Arch-biſhop,
Thou'ſt made me now a man; never, before
This happy child, did I get any thing.
This oracle of comfort has ſo pleas'd me,

That

That when I am in heav'n, I ſhall deſire
To ſee what this child does, and praiſe my maker.
I thank ye all---- to you, my good Lord-mayor,
And you good brethren, I am much beholden:
I have receiv'd much honour by your preſence,
And ye ſhall find me thankful. Lead the way, lords,
Ye muſt all ſee the Queen, and ſhe muſt thank ye,
She will be ſick elſe. This day no man think
H'as buſineſs at his houſe, for all ſhall ſtay,
This little one ſhall make it holy-day. [*Exeunt.*

EPILOGUE.

'TIS ten to one this play can never pleaſe
All that are here: ſome come to take their eaſe,
And ſleep an act or two; but thoſe we fear
We've frighted with our trumpets: ſo 'tis clear
They'll ſay it's naught. Others, to hear the city
Abus'd extreamly, and to cry that's witty;
Which we have not done neither; that I fear
All the expected good w'are like to hear
For this play at this time, is only in
The merciful conſtruction of good women;
(For ſuch a one we ſhew'd 'em) If they ſmile,
And ſay 'twill do; I know within a while
All the beſt men are ours; for 'tis ill hap,
If they hold when their ladies bid 'em clap.

The End of the FOURTH VOLUME.